



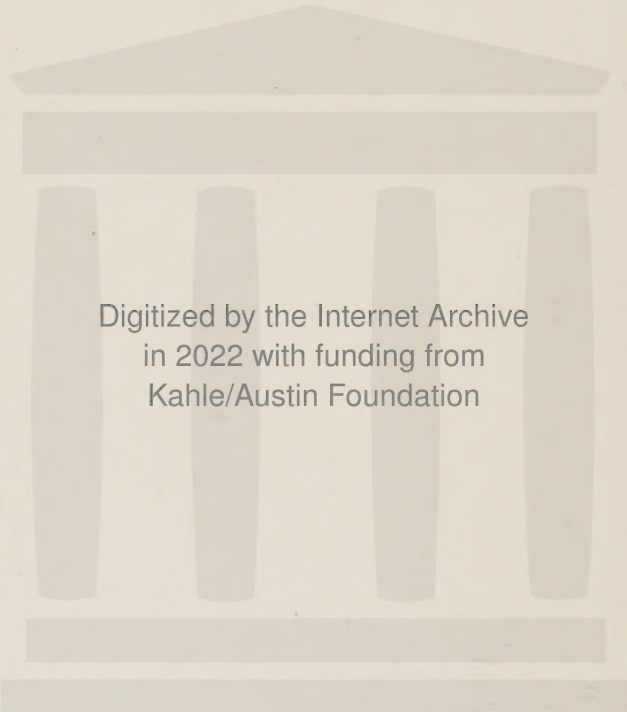












Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2022 with funding from  
Kahle/Austin Foundation

# The World's Story

IN

FOURTEEN VOLUMES

WITH ILLUSTRATIONS

VOLUME X









# ELIZABETH SIGNING THE DEATH WARRANT OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

BY JÜLIUS SCHRADER

(*German painter, 1815-1900*)

THIS scene has been described in the following words by James Anthony Froude, the English historian: —

“The long suspension of the sentence made it doubly difficult to enforce, but she [Elizabeth] desired Howard to tell Davison, who in Walsingham’s absence was acting as sole secretary, to come to her, and to bring the warrant with him. Davison, who was walking in the park, came hastily in, and, after a few words with Lord Howard, fetched the warrant from his room, placed it purposely among some other papers, and took it to his mistress. She talked of indifferent matters, and inquired what he had with him in his hand. He said he had documents for her signature, and among others one which Lord Howard had told him that she had sent for. She glanced over his portfolio, subscribed the sheets one after another, the warrant among them, and threw it with the rest upon the floor. It seemed as if she had meant to let it pass as if by accident; but if this was her purpose, she changed her mind. She spoke particularly of it; she said she had delayed so long, in order to show how unwillingly she had consented, and she asked Davison if he was not sorry to see such a paper signed. He replied that he was sorry the Queen of Scots had made it necessary, but it was better that the guilty should suffer than the innocent. She smiled, went through some other business, and then bade him take the warrant to the chancellor, get it sealed as quietly as he could, say nothing to any one, and then send it to the persons to whom it was addressed, who were to see execution done. For herself she desired to be troubled no further on the subject till all was over.”

ELIZABETH SIGNING THE DEATH WARRANT  
OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

# ENGLAND

## SCOTLAND IRELAND AND WALES

### *The World's Story*

A HISTORY OF THE WORLD  
IN STORY SONG AND ART

EDITED BY  
EVA MARCH TAPPAN

VOLUME X



BOSTON AND NEW YORK  
HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY  
*The Riverside Press Cambridge*

COPYRIGHT, 1914, BY HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

## NOTE

ALL rights in material used in this volume are reserved by the holders of the copyright. The publishers and others named in the subjoined list are the proprietors, either in their own right or as agents for the authors, of the selections taken by their permission from the works enumerated, of which the ownership is hereby acknowledged. The editor takes this opportunity to thank both authors and publishers for the ready generosity with which they have given permission to include these selections in "The World's Story."

"Memoirs of Extraordinary Popular Delusions," by Charles Mackay: published in the United States by E. P. Dutton & Company, New York; in Great Britain by George Routledge & Sons, Ltd., London.

"Life of St. Columba," by Abbot Adamnan: published by The Clarendon Press, Oxford.

"A Short History of Scotland," by P. Hume Brown: published by Oliver & Boyd, Edinburgh.

"The Young Pretender," by Charles Sanford Terry: published in the United States by E. P. Dutton & Company, New York; in Great Britain by Methuen & Company, Ltd., London.

"Myths and Folk-Lore of Ireland," by Jeremiah Curtin: published by Little, Brown & Company, Boston.

"Old Celtic Romances," by P. W. Joyce: published by George Routledge & Sons, Ltd., London.

## NOTE

- "Historic Boys," by E. S. Brooks: published by G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York.
- "An Outline of Irish History," by Justin H. McCarthy: published by Chatto & Windus, London.
- "Ethne," by Mrs. E. M. Field: published by Wells Gardner, Darton & Co., Ltd., London.
- "Peeps at Many Lands — Ireland," by Katherine Tynan: published in the United States by The Macmillan Company, New York; in Great Britain by Adam and Charles Black, London.
- "Pabo, the Priest," by Sabine Baring-Gould: published in the United States by Frederick A. Stokes Company, New York; in Great Britain by Methuen & Co., Ltd., London.
- "Gladstone's Fight for Home Rule," from the *Atlantic Monthly*, Boston, July, 1898.
- "The Latest English Revolution," from *The Outlook*, New York, Aug. 26, 1911.
- "The Coronation of George V," by Sydney Brooks: from the *Independent*, New York, July 13, 1911.

# CONTENTS

## ENGLAND

### I. THE STUART KINGS

|                                          |                                   |    |
|------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|----|
| KING JAMES I AND HIS GOLDSMITH . . . . . | <i>Sir Walter Scott</i>           | 3  |
| From "The Fortunes of Nigel."            |                                   |    |
| THE GUNPOWDER PLOT . . . . .             | <i>David Hume</i>                 | 19 |
| From "The History of England."           |                                   |    |
| A CHARGE WITH PRINCE RUPERT              | <i>Thomas Wentworth Higginson</i> | 24 |
| From "Studies in History and Letters."   |                                   |    |
| SIR NICHOLAS AT MARSTON MOOR             | <i>Winthrop Mackworth Praed</i>   | 38 |
| THE BATTLE OF NASEBY . . . . .           | <i>Thomas Babington Macaulay</i>  | 42 |

### II. THE RULE OF OLIVER CROMWELL

|                                           |                                         |    |
|-------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|----|
| THE TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF KING CHARLES I | <i>Jacob Abbott</i>                     | 49 |
| From "History of Charles the First."      |                                         |    |
| A ROYALIST DESCRIPTION OF CROMWELL'S MEN  | <i>Samuel Butler</i>                    | 62 |
| From "Hudibras."                          |                                         |    |
| HOW CROMWELL DISSOLVED PARLIAMENT         | <i>François Pierre Guillaume Guizot</i> | 64 |
| From "The Life of Oliver Cromwell."       |                                         |    |
| PRAISE-GOD BAREBONE'S PARLIAMENT          | <i>Edward, Earl of Clarendon</i>        | 70 |
| From "A History of the Great Rebellion."  |                                         |    |

### III. FROM THE RESTORATION TO THE HOUSE OF HANOVER

|                                      |                     |    |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------|----|
| IN THE DAYS OF THE PLAGUE . . . . .  | <i>Daniel Defoe</i> | 77 |
| From "A Journal of the Plague Year." |                     |    |



# CONTENTS

|                                       |                                    |     |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------------|-----|
| THE FALL OF "KING MONMOUTH" . . . . . | <i>Charles Dickens</i>             | 84  |
| From "A Child's History of England."  |                                    |     |
| THE SONG OF THE WESTERN MEN . . .     | <i>Robert Stephen Hawker</i>       | 91  |
| A CAMPAIGN UNDER MARLBOROUGH          |                                    |     |
|                                       | <i>William Makepeace Thackeray</i> | 93  |
| From "The History of Henry Esmond."   |                                    |     |
| THE GOVERNMENT IN QUEST OF A POET     |                                    |     |
|                                       | <i>William Makepeace Thackeray</i> | 103 |
| From "The History of Henry Esmond."   |                                    |     |
| SUNDAY WITH SIR ROGER . . . . .       | <i>Joseph Addison</i>              | 116 |
| From "The Spectator."                 |                                    |     |

## IV. ENGLAND UNDER THE FIRST THREE GEORGES

|                                                    |                                    |     |
|----------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------|-----|
| THE VICAR OF BRAY . . . . .                        | <i>Unknown</i>                     | 123 |
| THE "BUBBLES" OF THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE I        |                                    |     |
|                                                    | <i>Charles Mackay</i>              | 126 |
| From "Memoirs of Extraordinary Popular Delusions." |                                    |     |
| WHEN GEORGE II BECAME KING                         |                                    |     |
|                                                    | <i>William Makepeace Thackeray</i> | 132 |
| From "The History of Henry Esmond."                |                                    |     |
| THE FUNERAL OF GEORGE II . . . . .                 | <i>Horace Walpole</i>              | 134 |
| From "The Letters of Horace Walpole."              |                                    |     |
| WILLIAM PITT AND THE STAMP ACT . . . . .           | <i>George Bancroft</i>             | 137 |
| From "History of the United States."               |                                    |     |
| THE QUARREL OF SQUIRE BULL AND HIS SON             |                                    |     |
|                                                    | <i>James Kirke Paulding</i>        | 142 |
| From "History of John Bull and Brother Jonathan."  |                                    |     |
| A MAID OF HONOR AT THE COURT OF GEORGE III         |                                    |     |
|                                                    | <i>Madame D'Arblay</i>             | 146 |
| THE ROYAL VISIT TO OXFORD . . . . .                | <i>Madame D'Arblay</i>             | 152 |
| From "Diary and Letters of Madame D'Arblay."       |                                    |     |

## V. THE NAPOLEONIC WARS

|                                        |                                       |     |
|----------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|-----|
| THE BATTLE OF THE BALTIC . . . . .     | <i>Thomas Campbell</i>                | 165 |
| TRAFALGAR . . . . .                    | <i>William C. Bennett</i>             | 168 |
| THE BURIAL OF SIR JOHN MOORE . . . . . | <i>Charles Wolfe</i>                  | 173 |
| JUST BEFORE WATERLOO . . . . .         | <i>William Makepeace Thackeray</i>    | 175 |
| From "Vanity Fair."                    |                                       |     |
| WATERLOO . . . . .                     | <i>Douglas Brooke Wheelton Sladen</i> | 183 |

# CONTENTS

## VI. THE LAST HUNDRED YEARS IN ENGLAND

|                                           |                                   |     |
|-------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|-----|
| WHEN VICTORIA BECAME QUEEN . . . . .      | <i>Benjamin Disraeli</i>          | 189 |
| From "Sybil."                             |                                   |     |
| THE CHARGE OF THE LIGHT BRIGADE . . . . . | <i>Alfred, Lord Tennyson</i>      | 193 |
| SANTA FILOMENA . . . . .                  | <i>Henry Wadsworth Longfellow</i> | 196 |
| BENJAMIN DISRAELI . . . . .               | <i>L. F. Jennings</i>             | 199 |
| GLADSTONE'S FIGHT FOR HOME RULE . . . . . |                                   | 207 |
| From the "Atlantic Monthly."              |                                   |     |
| THE LATEST ENGLISH REVOLUTION . . . . .   |                                   | 213 |
| From "The Outlook."                       |                                   |     |
| THE CORONATION OF GEORGE V . . . . .      | <i>Sydney Brooks</i>              | 216 |

## SCOTLAND

### I. BALLADS AND LEGENDS OF EARLY SCOTLAND

|                                        |                            |     |
|----------------------------------------|----------------------------|-----|
| LEGENDS OF ST. COLUMBA . . . . .       | <i>Abbot Adamnan</i>       | 229 |
| From "Life of St. Columba."            |                            |     |
| THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN . . . . .    | <i>William Shakespeare</i> | 235 |
| From "Macbeth."                        |                            |     |
| THE INVASION OF THE NORSEMEN . . . . . | <i>Charles Mackay</i>      | 258 |
| From "Ballads and Lyrics."             |                            |     |
| SIR PATRICK SPENS . . . . .            | <i>An old ballad</i>       | 269 |

### II. TWO SCOTTISH HEROES

|                                          |                      |     |
|------------------------------------------|----------------------|-----|
| THE CAPTURE OF WILLIAM WALLACE . . . . . | <i>Jane Porter</i>   | 277 |
| From "The Scottish Chiefs."              |                      |     |
| THE CORONATION OF ROBERT BRUCE . . . . . | <i>Grace Aguilar</i> | 283 |
| From "The Days of Bruce."                |                      |     |
| BRUCE AT BANNOCKBURN . . . . .           | <i>P. Hume Brown</i> | 295 |
| From "A Short History of Scotland."      |                      |     |
| SCOTS WHA HAE . . . . .                  | <i>Robert Burns</i>  | 301 |

### III. TO THE DEATH OF MARY

|                                                      |                         |     |
|------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------|-----|
| THE BIER-RIGHT . . . . .                             | <i>Sir Walter Scott</i> | 305 |
| From "The Fair Maid of Perth."                       |                         |     |
| HOW THE SCOTS LIVED WHILE JAMES I WAS KING . . . . . | <i>P. Hume Brown</i>    | 313 |
| From "A Short History of Scotland."                  |                         |     |

## CONTENTS

|                                                |                          |     |
|------------------------------------------------|--------------------------|-----|
| ON THE FIELD OF FLODDEN . . . . .              | <i>Sir Walter Scott</i>  | 319 |
| EDINBURGH AFTER FLODDEN FIELD . . . .          | <i>William E. Aytoun</i> | 324 |
| "THE GOODMAN OF BALLANGIECH" . . . .           | <i>Sir Walter Scott</i>  | 330 |
| From "Tales of a Grandfather."                 |                          |     |
| THE FLIGHT OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS, TO ENGLAND | <i>Sir Walter Scott</i>  | 336 |
| From "The Abbot."                              |                          |     |
| THE FATE OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS . . .         | <i>Sir Walter Scott</i>  | 351 |
| From "Tales of a Grandfather."                 |                          |     |

### IV. A CENTURY OF UNREST

|                                              |                                               |     |
|----------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------|-----|
| WHY JENNY GEDDES THREW HER STOOL AT THE DEAN | <i>"Grace Greenwood" (Sara J. Lippincott)</i> | 363 |
| From "Bonnie Scotland."                      |                                               |     |
| GATHERING SONG OF DONALD THE BLACK . .       | <i>Sir Walter Scott</i>                       | 370 |
| THE EXECUTION OF MONTROSE . . . . .          | <i>William E. Aytoun</i>                      | 373 |
| From "Lays of the Scottish Cavaliers."       |                                               |     |
| THE BURIAL MARCH OF DUNDEE . . . . .         | <i>William E. Aytoun</i>                      | 375 |
| THE MASSACRE OF GLENCOE . . . . .            | <i>P. Hume Brown</i>                          | 379 |
| From "A Short History of Scotland."          |                                               |     |
| A RESCUE AT THE BATTLE OF PRESTONPANS        | <i>Sir Walter Scott</i>                       | 382 |
| From "Waverley."                             |                                               |     |
| HOW FLORA MACDONALD SAVED PRINCE CHARLIE     | <i>Charles Sanford Terry</i>                  | 389 |
| From "The Young Pretender."                  |                                               |     |

## IRELAND

### I. THE GOLDEN AGE OF ERIN

|                                                          |                                            |     |
|----------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------|-----|
| OISIN IN TIR NA N-OG . . . . .                           | <i>An Irish folk-story</i>                 | 399 |
| From "Myths and Folklore of Ireland," by Jeremiah Curtin |                                            |     |
| THE CHASE OF SLIEVE CULLINN . . . . .                    | <i>An old Irish legend</i>                 | 412 |
| From "Old Celtic Romances," translated by P. W. Joyce.   |                                            |     |
| THE STORY OF ST. PATRICK . . . . .                       | <i>Patrick Weston Joyce</i>                | 421 |
| THE "ISLAND OF SAINTS AND SCHOLARS"                      | <i>Patrick Weston Joyce</i>                | 430 |
| From "A Concise History of Ireland."                     |                                            |     |
| THE BOOK OF KELLS . . . . .                              | <i>Charles Johnston and Carita Spencer</i> | 435 |
| From "Ireland's Story."                                  |                                            |     |
| HOW BRIAN BORU HELD THE FORD OF TRIBUTE                  | <i>E. S. Brooks</i>                        | 437 |
| From "Historic Boys."                                    |                                            |     |

# CONTENTS

## II. SIX CENTURIES OF OPPRESSION

|                                                                            |                                  |     |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------|-----|
| THE HOUSE OF THE GERALDINES . . . . .                                      | <i>Justin H. McCarthy</i>        | 455 |
| From "An Outline of Irish History."                                        |                                  |     |
| THE GERALDINES . . . . .                                                   | <i>Thomas Davis</i>              | 459 |
| THE VENGEANCE OF CROMWELL . . . . .                                        | <i>Oliver Cromwell</i>           | 464 |
| From "Oliver Cromwell's Letters and Speeches," edited by<br>Thomas Carlyle |                                  |     |
| AFTER THE REBELLION OF 1641 . . . . .                                      | <i>Mrs. E. M. Field</i>          | 466 |
| From "Ethne."                                                              |                                  |     |
| THE SIEGE OF LONDONDERRY . . . . .                                         | <i>Thomas Babington Macaulay</i> | 481 |
| THE BATTLE OF THE BOYNE . . . . .                                          | <i>Thomas Babington Macaulay</i> | 494 |
| From "The History of England."                                             |                                  |     |
| THE WEARIN' O' THE GREEN . . . . .                                         | <i>An old ballad</i>             | 503 |
| EMMET'S GRAVE . . . . .                                                    | <i>Justin H. McCarthy</i>        | 505 |
| THE HARP THAT ONCE THROUGH TARA'S HALLS . . . . .                          | <i>Thomas Moore</i>              | 507 |

## III. IRELAND AND HER PEOPLE

|                                     |                        |                                                |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------|------------------------------------------------|
| THE "GRAND CANAL HOTEL" . . . . .   | <i>Charles Lever</i>   | 511                                            |
| AN IRISH SCHOOL . . . . .           | <i>Gerald Griffin</i>  | 525                                            |
| THE WINNING BACK OF THE LAND        |                        |                                                |
| From "Ireland's Story" . . . . .    |                        | <i>Charles Johnston and Carita Spencer</i> 534 |
| THE IRISH PEOPLE . . . . .          | <i>Katharine Tynan</i> | 545                                            |
| From "Peeps at Many Lands—Ireland." |                        |                                                |

## WALES

### I. LEGENDS OF WALES

|                                                                    |                               |     |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------|-----|
| KING ARTHUR . . . . .                                              | <i>Bessie Raynor Parkes</i>   | 553 |
| THE DREAM OF MAXEN WLEDIG . . . . .                                |                               | 555 |
| From the Mabinogion. Translated by Lady Charlotte Guest.           |                               |     |
| BETH GELERT; OR THE GRAVE OF THE GREYHOUND . . . . .               | <i>William Robert Spencer</i> | 563 |
| THE WEARING OF THE LEEK . . . . .                                  | <i>An old song</i>            | 568 |
| From "The Songs of Wales," by Ceiriog Hughes and Brinley Richards. |                               |     |

### II. STORIES OF THE WELSH REBELLIONS

|                                                    |                            |     |
|----------------------------------------------------|----------------------------|-----|
| HOW THE WELSH KEPT THE CHRISTMAS OF 1115 . . . . . | <i>Sabine Baring-Gould</i> | 573 |
| From "Pabo, the Priest."                           |                            |     |

## CONTENTS

|                                                                    |                        |     |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------|-----|
| "WHEN THE EIGHTEEN FELL" . . . . .                                 | <i>Owen Rhoscomyl</i>  | 581 |
| THE REBELLION OF OWEN GLYNDWR . . . .                              | <i>Owen Rhoscomyl</i>  | 586 |
| From "Flame-Bearers of Welsh History."                             |                        |     |
| THE MARCH OF THE MEN OF HARLECH . .                                | <i>An old war-song</i> | 589 |
| From "The Songs of Wales," by Ceiriog Hughes and Brinley Richards. |                        |     |
| HOW A WELSHMAN BECAME KING OF ENGLAND                              | <i>Owen Rhoscomyl</i>  | 591 |
| From "Flame-Bearers of Welsh History."                             |                        |     |

### III. SCENES OF WELSH LIFE

|                              |                        |     |
|------------------------------|------------------------|-----|
| THE EISTEDDFOD . . . . .     | <i>Jeannette Marks</i> | 601 |
| From "Gallant Little Wales." |                        |     |

# ILLUSTRATIONS

|                                                                                 |                                         |     |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|-----|
| ELIZABETH SIGNING THE DEATH WARRANT OF MARY, QUEEN OF<br>SCOTS . . . . .        | <i>Julius Schrader</i>                  |     |
|                                                                                 | Frontispiece                            |     |
| CHARLES I INSULTED BY SOLDIERS . . . . .                                        | <i>Paul Delaroche</i>                   | 46  |
| CROMWELL IN WHITEHALL . . . . .                                                 | <i>Julius Schrader</i>                  | 60  |
| CROMWELL VISITING MILTON . . . . .                                              | <i>David Neal</i>                       | 74  |
| JAMES II RECEIVING THE NEWS OF THE LANDING OF THE PRINCE<br>OF ORANGE . . . . . | <i>E. M. Ward</i>                       | 92  |
| DR. JOHNSON IN THE ANTEROOM OF LORD CHESTERFIELD                                | <i>E. M. Ward</i>                       | 136 |
| TRAFALGAR . . . . .                                                             | <i>W. C. Stanfield</i>                  | 168 |
| WELLINGTON'S MARCH FROM QUATRE-BRAS TO WATERLOO                                 | <i>Ernest Crofts</i>                    | 174 |
| "SCOTLAND FOREVER!" . . . . .                                                   | <i>Lady Butler (Elizabeth Thompson)</i> | 186 |
| BALACLAVA . . . . .                                                             | <i>Lady Butler (Elizabeth Thompson)</i> | 194 |
| JOHN KNOX PREACHING BEFORE THE LORDS OF THE CONGREGA-<br>TION . . . . .         | <i>Sir David Wilkie</i>                 | 334 |
| SACKING A CHURCH IN THE TIME OF JOHN KNOX                                       | <i>John Prescott Knight</i>             | 336 |
| THE ORDER OF RELEASE . . . . .                                                  | <i>Sir John Everett Millais</i>         | 388 |
| O'ROURKE'S TOWER AND GREAT CROSS, CLONMACNOISE                                  | <i>Photograph</i>                       | 434 |
| AN IRISH COTTAGE . . . . .                                                      | <i>Photograph</i>                       | 544 |



ENGLAND

VOLUME II

I

THE STUART KINGS



## HISTORICAL NOTE

ELIZABETH, the last of the Tudor monarchs, died in 1603, and was succeeded by James I, of the House of Stuart, the son of Mary, Queen of Scots. James was King of Scotland, and by his accession to the throne of England the two countries were united under one head.

The Stuart kings were firm believers in the "divine right of kings" to rule as they chose, but unfortunately this belief was united with an incapacity for ruling wisely. James was succeeded in 1625 by his son Charles I, who began his reign by quarreling with Parliament because it refused to grant him supplies to carry on an unpopular war with Spain. The result was that for the greater part of the first fifteen years of his reign he ruled without Parliament, raising money by various illegal taxes and forced loans. This in itself was enough to arouse the wrath of his subjects, but he made even more trouble for himself by introducing new ceremonies in the Church and by attempting to establish episcopacy in Presbyterian Scotland. The last measure resulted in an uprising in Scotland, and as the king was without money, he was forced to call what is known as the Long Parliament.

Under the leadership of Pym and Hampden this Parliament sternly set about the task of depriving the king of the opportunity for further abuse of his power. An ill-planned attempt of the king's to arrest the leaders of Parliament fanned to a flame the popular discontent and resulted, in 1642, in the outbreak of civil war. In this conflict, known as the "Great Rebellion," the king was supported by the greater part of the Episcopalian nobles and gentry and their retainers, "Cavaliers," as they were called; Parliament, by the middle classes, the merchants and yeomanry, nicknamed the "Roundheads," from the Puritan fashion of wearing the hair cut short.

## KING JAMES I AND HIS GOLDSMITH

[Between 1603 and 1624]

BY SIR WALTER SCOTT

THE goldsmith to the Royal Household, and who, if fame spoke true, oftentimes acted as their banker, — for these professions were not as yet separated from each other, — was a person of too much importance to receive the slightest interruption from sentinel or porter; and, leaving his mule and two of his followers in the outer court, he gently knocked at a postern gate of the building, and was presently admitted, while the most trusty of his attendants followed him closely, with the piece of plate under his arm. This man also he left behind him in an anteroom, — where three or four pages in the royal livery, but untrussed, unbuttoned, and dressed more carelessly than the place, and nearness to a king's person, seemed to admit, were playing at dice and draughts, or stretched upon benches, and slumbering with half-shut eyes. A corresponding gallery, which opened from the anteroom, was occupied by two gentlemen ushers of the chamber, who gave each a smile of recognition as the wealthy goldsmith entered.

No word was spoken on either side; but one of the ushers looked first to Heriot and then to a little door half-covered by the tapestry, which seemed to say, as plain as a look could, "Lies your business that way?" The citizen nodded; and the court attendant, moving on tiptoe, and with as much caution as if the floor had

been paved with eggs, advanced to the door, opened it gently, and spoke a few words in a low tone. The broad Scottish accent of King James was heard in reply, — “Admit him instanter, Maxwell. Have you hairboured sae lang at the court, and not learned that gold and silver are ever welcome?”

The usher signed to Heriot to advance, and the honest citizen was presently introduced into the cabinet of the sovereign.

The scene of confusion amid which he found the king seated was no bad picture of the state and quality of James’s own mind. There was much that was rich and costly in cabinet pictures and valuable ornaments; but they were arranged in a slovenly manner, covered with dust, and lost half their value, or at least their effect, from the manner in which they were presented to the eye. The table was loaded with huge folios, amongst which lay light books of jest and ribaldry; and, amongst notes of unmercifully long orations, and essays on king-craft, were mingled miserable roundels and ballads by the “Royal ’Prentice,” as he styled himself, in the art of poetry, and schemes for the general pacification of Europe, with a list of the names of the king’s hounds, and remedies against canine madness.

The king’s dress was of green velvet, quilted so full as to be dagger-proof — which gave him the appearance of clumsy and ungainly protuberance; while its being buttoned awry communicated to his figure an air of distortion. Over his green doublet he wore a sad-coloured nightgown, out of the pocket of which peeped his hunting-horn. His high-crowned grey hat lay on the floor, covered with dust, but encircled by a carcanet of large

## KING JAMES I AND HIS GOLDSMITH

balas rubies; and he wore a blue velvet nightcap, in the front of which was placed the plume of a heron, which had been struck down by a favourite hawk in some critical moment of the flight, in remembrance of which the king wore this highly honoured feather.

But such inconsistencies in dress and appointments were mere outward types of those which existed in the royal character; rendering it a subject of doubt amongst his contemporaries, and bequeathing it as a problem to future historians. He was deeply learned, without possessing useful knowledge; sagacious in many individual cases, without having real wisdom; fond of his power, and desirous to maintain and augment it, yet willing to resign the direction of that, and of himself, to the most unworthy favourites; a big and bold asserter of his rights in words, yet one who tamely saw them trampled on in deeds; a lover of negotiations, in which he was always outwitted; and one who feared war, where conquest might have been easy. He was fond of his dignity, while he was perpetually degrading it by undue familiarity; capable of much public labour, yet often neglecting it for the meanest amusement; a wit, though a pedant; and a scholar, though fond of the conversation of the ignorant and uneducated. Even his timidity of temper was not uniform; and there were moments of his life, and those critical, in which he showed the spirit of his ancestors. He was laborious in trifles, and a trifler where serious labour was required; devout in his sentiments, and yet too often profane in his language; just and beneficent by nature, he yet gave way to the iniquities and oppression of others. He was penurious respecting money which he had to give from his own hand, yet inconsider-

## ENGLAND

ately and unboundedly profuse of that which he did not see. In a word, those good qualities which displayed themselves in particular cases and occasions were not of a nature sufficiently firm and comprehensive to regulate his general conduct; and, showing themselves as they occasionally did, only entitled James to the character bestowed on him by Sully — that he was the wisest fool in Christendom.

That the fortunes of this monarch might be as little of a piece as his character, he, certainly the least able of the Stuarts, succeeded peaceably to that kingdom, against the power of which his predecessors had, with so much difficulty, defended his native throne; and, lastly, although his reign appeared calculated to ensure to Great Britain that lasting tranquillity and internal peace which so much suited the king's disposition, yet, during that very reign, were sown those seeds of dissension, which, like the teeth of the fabulous dragon, had their harvest in a bloody and universal civil war.

Such was the monarch, who, saluting Heriot by the name of "Jingling Geordie" (for it was his well-known custom to give nicknames to all those with whom he was on terms of familiarity), enquired what new clatter-traps he had brought with him to cheat his lawful and native prince out of his siller.

"God forbid, my liege," said the citizen, "that I should have any such disloyal purpose. I did but bring a piece of plate to show to your most gracious Majesty, which, both for the subject and for the workmanship, I were loath to put into the hands of any subject until I knew Your Majesty's pleasure anent it."

"Body o' me, man, let's see it, Heriot; though, by

## KING JAMES I AND HIS GOLDSMITH

my saul, Steenie's service o' plate was sae dear a bargain, I had 'maist pawned my word as a royal king, to keep my ain gold and silver in future, and let you, Geordie, keep yours."

"Respecting the Duke of Buckingham's plate," said the goldsmith, "Your Majesty was pleased to direct that no expense should be spared, and —"

"What signifies what I desired, man? When a wise man is with fules and bairns, he maun e'en play at the chucks. But you should have had mair sense and consideration than to gie Babie Charles and Steenie their own gait; they wad hae floored the very room wi' silver, and I wonder they didna."

George Heriot bowed, and said no more. He knew his master too well to vindicate himself otherwise than by a distant allusion to his order; and James, with whom economy was only a transient and momentary twinge of conscience, became immediately afterwards desirous to see the piece of plate which the goldsmith proposed to exhibit, and despatched Maxwell to bring it to his presence. In the mean time he demanded of the citizen whence he had procured it

"From Italy, may it please Your Majesty," replied Heriot.

"It has naething in it tending to papistrie?" said the king, looking graver than his wont.

"Surely not, please Your Majesty," said Heriot; "I were not wise to bring anything to your presence that had the mark of the Beast."

"You would be the mair beast yourself to do so," said the king; "it is well kend that I wrestled wi' Dagon in my youth, and smote him on the ground-sill of his



own temple; a gude evidence that I should be in time called, however unworthy, the Defender of the Faith. — But here comes Maxwell, bending under his burden, like the Golden Ass of Apuleius.”

Heriot hastened to relieve the usher, and to place the embossed silver, for such it was, and of extraordinary dimensions, in a light favourable for His Majesty’s viewing the sculpture.

“Saul of my body, man,” said the king, “it is a curious piece, and, as I think, fit for a king’s chamber; and the subject, as you say, Master George, vera adequate and beseeming — being, as I see, the judgment of Solomon — a prince in whose paths it weel becomes a’ leev-ing monarchs to walk with emulation.”

“But whose footsteps,” said Maxwell, “only one of them — if a subject may say so much — hath ever overtaken.”

“Haud your tongue for a fause fleeching loon!” said the king, but with a smile on his face that showed the flattery had done its part. “Look at the bonny piece of workmanship, and haud your clavering tongue. — And whose handiwork may it be, Geordie?”

“It was wrought, sir,” replied the goldsmith, “by the famous Florentine, Benvenuto Cellini, and designed for Francis the First of France; but I hope it will find a fitter master.”

“Francis of France!” said the king; “send Solomon, King of the Jews, to Francis of France! — Body of me, man, it would have kythed Cellini mad, had he never done onything else out of the gate. Francis! — why, he was a fighting fule, man, — a mere fighting fule, — got himself ta’en at Pavia, like our ain David at Durham

## KING JAMES I AND HIS GOLDSMITH

lang syne; — if they could hae sent him Solomon's wit, and love of peace, and godliness, they wad hae dune him a better turn. But Solomon should sit in other gate company than Francis of France."

"I trust that such will be his good fortune," said Heriot.

"It is a curious and vera artificial sculpture," said the king, in continuation; "but yet, methinks, the carnifex, or executioner there, is brandishing his gulley ower near the king's face, seeing he is within reach of his weapon. I think less wisdom than Solomon's wad have taught him that there was danger in edge-tools, and that he wad have bidden the smaik either sheath his shabble, or stand farther back."

George Heriot endeavoured to alleviate the objection, by assuring the king that the vicinity betwixt Solomon and the executioners was nearer in appearance than in reality, and that the perspective should be allowed for.

"Gang to the deil wi' your prospective, man," said the king; "there canna be a waur prospective for a law-fu' king, wha wishes to reign in luv and die in peace and honour, than to have naked swords flashing in his een. I am accounted as brave as maist folks; and yet I profess to ye I could never look on a bare blade without blinking and winking. But a'thegither it is a brave piece; — and what is the price of it, man?"

The goldsmith replied by observing that it was not his own property, but that of a distressed countryman.

"Whilk you mean to mak your excuse for asking the double of its worth, I warrant!" answered the king. "I ken the tricks of you burrows-town merchants, man."



“I have no hopes of baffling Your Majesty’s sagacity,” said Heriot; “the piece is really what I say, and the price a hundred and fifty pounds sterling, if it pleases Your Majesty to make present payment.”

“A hundred and fifty pounds, man! and as mony witches and warlocks to raise them!” said the irritated monarch. “My saul, Jingling Geordie, ye are minded that your purse shall jingle to a bonny tune! — How am I to tell you down a hundred and fifty pounds for what will not weigh as many merks? And ye ken that my very household servitors, and the officers of my mouth, are sax months in arrear!”

The goldsmith stood his ground against all this objurgation, being what he was well accustomed to, and only answered, that, if His Majesty liked the piece, and desired to possess it, the price could be easily settled. It was true that the party required the money, but he, George Heriot, would advance it on His Majesty’s account, if such were his pleasure, and wait his royal conveniency for payment, for that and other matters; the money, meanwhile, lying at the ordinary usage.

“By my honour,” said James, “and that is speaking like an honest and reasonable tradesman. We maun get another subsidy frae the Commons, and that will make ai compting of it. Awa wi’ it, Maxwell — awa wi’ it, and let it be set where Steenie and Babie Charles shall see it as they return from Richmond. — And now that we are secret, my good and auld friend Geordie, I do truly opine, that speaking of Solomon and ourselves, the haill wisdom in the country left Scotland, when we took our travels to the Southland here.”

George Heriot was courtier enough to say, that “the

## KING JAMES I AND HIS GOLDSMITH

wise naturally follow the wisest, as stags follow their leader."

"Troth, I think there is something in what thou sayest," said James, "for we ourselves, and those of our court and household, as thou thyself, for example, are allowed by the English, for as self-opinioned as they are, to pass for reasonable good wits; but the brains of those we have left behind are all astir, and run clean hirdie-girdie, like sae mony warlocks and witches on the Devil's Sabbath-e'en."

"I am sorry to hear this, my liege," said Heriot. "May it please Your Grace to say what our countrymen have done to deserve such a character?"

"They are become frantic, man, — clean brain-crazed," answered the king. "I cannot keep them out of the court by all the proclamations that the heralds roar themselves hoarse with. Yesterday, nae farther gane, just as we were mounted, and about to ride forth, in rushed a thorough Edinburgh gutterblood, — a ragged rascal, everydud upon whose back was bidding good-day to the other, with a coat and hat that would have served a pease-bogle, — and, without havings or reverence, thrusts into our hands, like a sturdy beggar, some supplication about debts owing by our gracious mother, and siclike trash; whereat the horse spangs on end, and, but for our admirable sitting, wherein we have been thought to excel maist sovereign princes, as well as subjects, in Europe, I promise you we would have been laid end-lang on the causeway."

"Your Majesty," said Heriot, "is their common father, and therefore they are the bolder to press into your gracious presence."

## ENGLAND

"I ken I am *pater patriæ* well enough," said James; "but one would think they had a mind to squeeze my puddings out, that they may divide the inheritance. Ud's death, Geordie, there is not a loon among them can deliver a supplication, as it suld be done in the face of Majesty."

"I would I knew the most fitting and beseeming mode to do so," said Heriot, "were it but to instruct our poor countrymen in better fashion."

"By my halidome," said the king, "ye are a ceevil-eezed fellow, Geordie, and I carena if I fling awa as much time as may teach ye. And, first, see you, sir, — ye shall approach the presence of Majesty thus, — shadowing your eyes with your hand, to testify that you are in the presence of the Vicegerent of Heaven. — Very weel, George, that is done in a comely manner. — Then, sir, ye sall kneel, and make as if ye would kiss the hem of our garment, the latch of our shoe, or such-like. Vera weel enacted — whilk we, as being willing to be debonair and pleasing towards our lieges, prevent thus, — and motion to you to rise; — whilk, having a boon to ask, as yet you obey not, but, gliding your hand into your pouch, bring forth your supplication, and place it reverentially in our open palm."

The goldsmith, who had complied with great accuracy with all the prescribed points of the ceremonial, here completed it, to James's no small astonishment, by placing in his hand the petition of the Lord of Glenvarloch.

"What means this, ye fause loon?" said he, reddening and sputtering; "hae I been teaching you the manual exercise, that ye suld present your piece at our ain royal body? — Now, by this light, I had as lief that ye had

## KING JAMES I AND HIS GOLDSMITH

bended a real pistolet against me, and yet this hae ye done in my very cabinet, where nought suld enter but at my ain pleasure."

"I trust Your Majesty," said Heriot, as he continued to kneel, "will forgive my exercising the lesson you condescended to give me in the behalf of a friend?"

"Of a friend!" said the king; "so much the waur, so much the waur, I tell you. If it had been something to do *yoursell* good, there would have been some sense in it, and some chance that you wad not have come back on me in a hurry; but a man may have a hundred friends, and petitions for every ane of them, ilk ane after other."

"Your Majesty, I trust," said Heriot, "will judge me by former experience, and wil not suspect me of such presumption."

"I kenna," said the placable monarch; "the world goes daft, I think, — *sed semel insanivimus omnes*;<sup>1</sup> — thou art my old and faithful servant, that is the truth; and, were't any thing for thy own behoof, man, thou shouldst not ask twice. But, troth, Steenie loves me so dearly that he cares not that any one should ask favours of me but himself. — Maxwell [for the usher had reëntered after having carried off the plate], get into the antechamber wi' your lang lugs. — In conscience, Geordie, I think as that thou hast been mine ain auld fiduciary, and wert my goldsmith when I might say with the Ethnic poet — *Non meâ renidet in domo lacunar*,<sup>2</sup> — for, faith, they had pillaged my mither's auld house sae, that

<sup>1</sup> But we are all crazy at some time.

<sup>2</sup> No [gilded] ceiling glitters in my house. (Horace has "*Non eburneque aureum mea renidet in domo lacunar*.")

beecheen bickers, and treen trenchers, and latten platters, were whiles the best at our board, and glad we were of something to put on them, without quarreling with the metal of the dishes. D'ye mind, for thou wert in maist of our complots, how we were fain to send sax of the Blue-banders to harry the Lady of Loganhouse's dower-cot and poultry-yard, and what an awfu' plaint the poor dame made against Jock of Milch, and the thieves of Annandale, wha were as sackless of the deed as I am of the sin of murder?"

"It was the better for Jock," said Heriot, "for if I remember weel, it saved him from a strapping up at Dumfries, which he had weel deserved for other misdeeds."

"Aye, man, mind ye that?" said the king; "but he had other virtues, for he was a tight huntsman, moreover, that Jock of Milch, and could hollow to a hound till all the woods rang again. But he came to an Annandale end at the last, for Lord Torthorwold ran his lance out through him. — Cocksails, man, when I think of these wild passages, in my conscience, I am not sure but we lived merrier in auld Holyrood in these shifting days, than now when we are dwelling at heck and manger. *Cantabit vacuus* — we had but little to care for."

"And if Your Majesty please to remember," said the goldsmith, "the awful task we had to gather silver-vessels and gold-work enough to make some show before the Spanish Ambassador."

"Vera true," said the king, now in a full tide of gossip, "and I mind not the name of the right leal lord that helped us with every unce he had in his house, that his

## KING JAMES I AND HIS GOLDSMITH

native prince might have some credit in the eyes of them that had the Indies at their beck."

"I think, if Your Majesty," said the citizen, "will cast your eye on the paper in your hand, you will recollect his name."

"Aye!" said the king, "say ye sae, man? — Lord Glenvarloch, that was his name, indeed — *Justus et tenax propositi* — a just man, but as obstinate as a baited bull. He stood whiles against us, that Lord Randal Olifaunt at Glenvarloch, but he was a loving and a leal subject in the main. But this supplicator man maun be his son — Randal has been long gone where king and lord must go, Geordie, as weel as the like of you; — and what does his son want with us?"

"The settlement," answered the citizen, "of a large debt due by Your Majesty's treasury, for money advances to Your Majesty in great state emergency, about the time of the Raid of Ruthven."

"I mind the thing weel," said King James. — "Od's death, man, I was just out of the clutches of the Master of Glamis and his complices, and there was never any siller mair welcome to a born prince, — the mair the shame and pity that crowned king should need sic a petty sum. But what need he dun us for it, man, like a baxter at the breaking! We aught him the siller, and will pay him wi' our convenience, or make it otherwise up to him, whilk is enow between prince and subject. — We are not *in meditatione fugæ*, man, to be arrested thus peremptorily."

"Alas! an it please Your Majesty," said the goldsmith, shaking his head, "it is the poor young nobleman's extreme necessity, and not his will, that makes him im-



## ENGLAND

portunate; for he must have money, and that briefly, to discharge a debt due to Peregrine Peterson, Conservator of the Privileges at Campvere, or his hail hereditary barony and estate of Glenvarloch will be evicted in virtue of an unredeemed wadset."

"How say ye, man — how say ye!" exclaimed the king impatiently; "the carle of a Conservator, the son of a Low-Dutch skipper, evict the auld estate and lordship of the house of Olifaunt? — God's bread, man, that maun not be — we maun suspend the diligence by writ of favour, or otherwise."

"I doubt that may hardly be," answered the citizen, "if it please Your Majesty; your learned counsel in the law of Scotland advise, that there is no remeid but in paying the money."

"Ud's fish," said the king, "let him keep haud by the strong hand against the carle, until we can take some order about his affairs."

"Alas!" insisted the goldsmith, "if it like Your Majesty, your own pacific government, and your doing of equal justice to all men, has made main force a kittle line to walk by, unless just within the bounds of the Highlands."

"Weel — weel — weel, man," said the perplexed monarch, whose ideas of justice, expedience, and convenience became on such occasions strangely embroiled; "just it is we should pay our debts, that the young man may pay his; and he must be paid, and *in verbo regis* he shall be paid — but how to come by the siller, man, is a difficult chapter — ye maun try the city, Geordie."

"To say the truth," answered Heriot, "please your gracious Majesty, what betwixt loans and benevolences and subsidies, the city is at this present —"

## KING JAMES I AND HIS GOLDSMITH

"Donna tell me of what the city is," said King James; "our exchequer is as dry as Dean Giles's discourses on the penitentiary psalms — *Ex nihilo nihil fit* — It's ill taking the breeks aff a wild Highlandman — they that come to me for siller, should tell me how to come by it — the city ye maun try, Heriot; and donna think to be called Jingling Geordie for nothing — and *in verbo regis* I will pay the lad if you get me the loan — I wonnot haggle on the terms; and, between you and me, Geordie, we will redeem the brave auld estate of Glenvarloch. — But wherefore comes not the young lord to court, Heriot, — is he comely — is he presentable in the presence?"

"No one can be more so," said George Heriot; "but—"

"Aye, I understand ye," said His Majesty — "I understand ye — *Res angusta domi* — puir lad! — and his father a right true leal Scots heart, though stiff in some opinions. Hark ye, Heriot, let the lad have twa hundred pounds to fit him out. And, here — here" — (taking the carcanet of rubies from his old hat) — "ye have had these in pledge before for a larger sum, ye auld Levite that ye are. Keep them in gage, till I gie ye back the siller out of the next subsidy."

"If it please Your Majesty to give me such directions in writing," said the cautious citizen.

"The deil is in your nicety, George," said the king; "ye are as preceese as a Puritan in form, and a mere Nullifidian in the marrow of the matter. May not a king's word serve you for advancing your pitiful twa hundred pounds?"

"But not for detaining the crown jewels," said George Heriot.

And the king, who from long experience was inured



## ENGLAND

to dealing with suspicious creditors, wrote an order upon George Heriot, his well-beloved goldsmith and jeweller, for the sum of two hundred pounds, to be paid presently to Nigel Olifaunt, Lord of Glenvarloch, to be imputed as so much debts due him by the crown; and authorizing the retention of a carcanet of balas rubies, with a great diamond, as described in a Catalogue of His Majesty's jewels, to remain in possession of the said George Heriot, advancer of the said sum, and so forth, until he was lawfully contented and paid thereof. By another rescript, His Majesty gave the said George Heriot directions to deal with some of the moneyed men, upon equitable terms, for a sum of money for His Majesty's present use, not to be under fifty thousand merks, but as much more as could conveniently be procured.

"And has he ony lair, this Lord Nigel of ours?" said the king.

George Heriot could not exactly answer this question; but believed "the young lord had studied abroad."

"He shall have our own advice," said the king, "how to carry on his studies to maist advantage; and it may be we will have him come to court, and study with Steenie and Babie Charles. And, now we think on't, away — away, George — for the bairns will be coming hame presently, and we would not as yet they kend of this matter we have been treating anent. *Propera pedem*, O Geordie. Clap your mule between your hough, and god-den with you."

Thus ended the conference betwixt the gentle King Jamie and his benevolent jeweller and goldsmith.

## THE GUNPOWDER PLOT

[1605]

BY DAVID HUME

[UNDER James I both Catholics and Puritans were fined and imprisoned and treated in all ways with the utmost unfairness and severity. Naturally, plots were made against the king. The most notorious was the Gunpowder Plot, a scheme for blowing up the Parliament House with gunpowder. This was to be done on the 5th of November. That day is still known as Guy Fawkes's Day, and the old rhymes are not yet forgotten: —

“Don't you remember  
The fifth of November,  
The gunpowder treason and plot?  
I see no reason  
Why gunpowder treason  
Should ever be forgot.”

*The Editor.]*

IN the spring and summer of the year 1604 the conspirators hired a house in Piercy's name, adjoining to that in which the Parliament was to assemble. Towards the end of that year, they began their operations. That they might be less interrupted, and give less suspicion to the neighborhood, they carried in store of provisions with them, and never desisted from their labors. Obstinate in their purpose, and confirmed by passion, by principle, and by mutual exhortation, they little feared death in comparison of a disappointment; and having provided arms, together with the instruments of their

## ENGLAND

labor, they resolved there to perish in case of a discovery. Their perseverance advanced the work; and they soon pierced the wall, though three yards in thickness; but on approaching the other side, they were somewhat startled at hearing a noise which they knew not how to account for. Upon inquiry, they found that it came from the vault below the House of Lords; that a magazine of coals had been kept there; and that, as the coals were selling off, the vault would be let to the highest bidder. The opportunity was immediately seized; the place hired by Piercy; thirty-six barrels of powder lodged in it; the whole covered up with fagots and billets; the doors of the cellar boldly flung open; and everybody admitted, as if it contained nothing dangerous.

Confident of success, they now began to look forward and to plan the remaining part of their project. The king, the queen, Prince Henry, were all expected to be present at the opening of Parliament. The duke, by reason of his tender age, would be absent; and it was resolved that Piercy should seize him or assassinate him. The Princess Elizabeth, a child likewise, was kept at Lord Harrington's house in Warwickshire; and Sir Everard Digby, Rookwood, Grant, being let into the conspiracy, engaged to assemble their friends on pretense of a hunting-match, and seizing that princess, immediately to proclaim her queen. So transported were they with rage against their adversaries, and so charmed with the prospect of revenge, that they forgot all care of their own safety; and trusting to the general confusion which must result from so unexpected a blow, they foresaw not that the fury of the people, now unrestrained by any authority, must have turned against

## THE GUNPOWDER PLOT

them, and would probably have satiated itself by a universal massacre of the Catholics.

The day so long wished for now approached, on which the Parliament was appointed to assemble. The dreadful secret, though communicated to about twenty persons, had been religiously kept during the space of near a year and a half. No remorse, no pity, no fear of punishment, no hope of reward, had as yet induced any one conspirator either to abandon the enterprise, or make a discovery of it. The holy fury had extinguished in their breast every other motive; and it was an indiscretion at last, proceeding chiefly from these very bigoted prejudices and partialities, which saved the nation.

Ten days before the meeting of Parliament, Lord Monteagle, a Catholic, son to Lord Morley, received the following letter, which had been delivered to his servant by an unknown hand: "My Lord, — Out of the love I bear to some of your friends, I have a care of your preservation. Therefore I would advise you, as you tender your life, to devise some excuse to shift off your attendance at this Parliament. For God and man have concurred to punish the wickedness of this time. And think not slightly of this advertisement; but retire yourself into your country, where you may expect the event in safety. For though there be no appearance of any stir, yet, I say, they will receive a terrible blow this Parliament, and yet they shall not see who hurts them. This counsel is not to be contemned, because it may do you good, and can do you no harm: for the danger is past as soon as you have burned the letter. And I hope God will give you the grace to make good use of it, unto whose holy protection I commend you."

## ENGLAND

Monteagle knew not what to make of this letter; and though inclined to think it a foolish attempt to frighten and ridicule him, he judged it safest to carry it to Lord Salisbury, Secretary of State. Though Salisbury, too, was inclined to pay little attention to it, he thought proper to lay it before the king, who came to town a few days after. To the king it appeared not so light a matter; and from the serious, earnest style of the letter, he conjectured that it implied something dangerous and important. A "terrible blow," and yet "the authors concealed"; a danger so "sudden," and yet so "great"; these circumstances seemed all to denote some contrivance by gunpowder; and it was thought advisable to inspect all the vaults below the houses of Parliament. This care belonged to the Earl of Suffolk, Lord Chamberlain, who purposely delayed the search till the day before the meeting of Parliament. He remarked those great piles of wood and fagots which lay in the vault under the upper house; and he cast his eye upon Fawkes, who stood in a dark corner, and passed himself for Piercy's servant. That daring and determined courage which so much distinguished this conspirator, even among those heroes in villainy, was fully painted in his countenance, and was not passed unnoticed by the chamberlain. Such a quantity also of fuel, for the use of one who lived so little in town as Piercy, appeared a little extraordinary; and upon comparing all circumstances, it was resolved that a more thorough inspection should be made. About midnight, Sir Thomas Knevet, a justice of peace, was sent with proper attendants; and before the door of the vault finding Fawkes, who had just finished all his preparations, he immediately seized him, and, turning over the

## THE GUNPOWDER PLOT

fagots, discovered the powder. The matches and everything proper for setting fire to the train, were taken in Fawkes's pocket; who, finding his guilt now apparent, and seeing no refuge but in boldness and despair, expressed the utmost regret that he had lost the opportunity of firing the powder at once, and of sweetening his own death by that of his enemies. Before the council he displayed the same intrepid firmness, mixed even with scorn and disdain; refusing to discover his accomplices, and showing no concern but for the failure of the enterprise. This obstinacy lasted for two or three days: but being confined to the Tower, left to reflect on his guilt and danger, and the rack being just shown to him, his courage, fatigued with so long an effort, and unsupported by hope or society, at last failed him; and he made a full discovery of all the conspirators.

## A CHARGE WITH PRINCE RUPERT

[1643]

BY THOMAS WENTWORTH HIGGINSON

[THE struggle between King Charles and his Parliament broke into open warfare in 1642. In the early part of the civil war, success lay with the Royalists, chiefly because their soldiers were better fitted for war and their generals were of much better training and quality. The most able cavalry leader was Prince Rupert, nephew of King Charles.

*The Editor.]*

PRINCE RUPERT, Prince Robert, or Prince Robber, — for by all these names was he known, — was the one formidable military leader on the royal side. He was not a statesman, for he was hardly yet a mature man; he was not, in the grandest sense, a hero, yet he had no quality that was not heroic. Chivalrous, brilliant, honest, generous, — not dissolute, nor bigoted, nor cruel, — he was still a Royalist for the love of royalty, and a soldier for the love of war, — and in civil strife there can hardly be a more dangerous character. Through all the blunt periods of his military or civil proclamations, we see the proud, careless boy, fighting for fighting's sake, and always finding his own side the right one. He could not have much charity for the most generous opponents; he certainly had none at all for those who (as he said) printed malicious and lying pamphlets against him “almost every morning,” in which he found himself saluted as a “nest of perfidious vipers,” “a night-flying dragon



## A CHARGE WITH PRINCE RUPERT

prince," "a flapdragon," "a caterpillar," "a spider," and "a butterbox."

He was the king's own nephew, — great-grandson of William the Silent, and son of that Elizabeth Stuart from whom all the modern royal family of England descends. His sister was the renowned Princess Palatine, the one favorite pupil of Descartes, and the chosen friend of Leibnitz, Malebranche, and William Penn. From early childhood he was trained to war; we find him at fourteen pronounced by his tutors fit to command an army, — at fifteen, bearing away the palm in one of the last of the tournaments, — at sixteen, fighting beside the young Turenne in the Low Countries, — at nineteen, heading the advanced guard in the army of the Prince of Orange, — and at twenty-three we find him appearing in England, the day before the royal standard was reared, and the day after the king lost Coventry. This training made him a general, — not, as many have supposed, a mere cavalry captain; — he was one of the few men who have shown great military powers on both land and sea; he was a man of energy unbounded, industry inexhaustible, and the most comprehensive and systematic forethought. It was not merely, that, as Warwick said, "he put that spirit into the king's army that all men seemed resolved," — not merely, that, always charging at the head of his troops, he was never wounded, and that, seeing more service than any of his compeers, he outlived them all. But even in these early years, before he was generalissimo, the Parliament deliberately declared the whole war to be "managed by his skill, labor, and industry," and his was the only name habitually printed in capitals in the Puritan newspapers. He



## ENGLAND

had to create soldiers by enthusiasm, and feed them by stratagem, — to toil for a king who feared him, and against a queen who hated him, — to take vast responsibilities alone, — accused of negligence, if he failed, reproached with license, if he succeeded. Against him he had the wealth of London, entrusted to men who were great diplomatists, though new to power, and great soldiers, though they had never seen a battle-field till middle life; on his side he had only unmanageable lords and penniless gentlemen, who gained victories by daring, and then wasted them by license. His troops had no tents, no wagons, no military stores; they used those of the enemy. Clarendon says that the king's cause labored under an incurable disease of want of money, and that the only cure for starvation was a victory. To say, therefore, that Rupert's men never starved, is to say that they always conquered, — which, at this early period, was true.

He was the best shot in the army, and the best tennis-player among the courtiers, and Pepys calls him "the boldest attacker in England for personal courage." Seemingly without reverence or religion, he yet ascribed his defeats to Satan, and, at the close of a letter about a marauding expedition, requested his friend Will Legge to pray for him. Versed in all the courtly society of the age, chosen interpreter for the wooing of young Prince Charles and La Grande Mademoiselle, and mourning in purple, with the royal family, for Marie de Médicis, he could yet mingle in any conceivable company and assume any part. He penetrated the opposing camp at Dunsmore Heath as an apple-seller, and the hostile town of Warwick as a dealer in cabbage-nets, and the pam-

## A CHARGE WITH PRINCE RUPERT

phleteers were never weary of describing his disguises. He was charged with all manner of offenses, even to slaying children with cannibal intent, and only very carelessly disavowed such soft impeachments. But no man could deny that he was perfectly true to his word; he never forgot one whom he had promised to protect, and, if he had promised to strip a man's goods, he did it to the uttermost farthing. And so must his pledge of vengeance be redeemed to-night; and so, riding eastward, with the dying sunlight behind him and the quiet Chiltern hills before, through air softened by the gathering coolness of these midsummer eves, beside clover-fields, and hedges of wild roses, and ponds white with closing water-lilies, and pastures sprinkled with meadow-sweet, like foam, — he muses only of the clash of sword and the sharp rattle of shot, and all the passionate joys of the coming charge.

The long and picturesque array winds onward, crossing Chiselhampton Bridge (not to be recrossed so easily), avoiding Thame with its church and abbey, where Lord General Essex himself is quartered, unconscious of their march; and the Cavaliers are soon riding beneath the bases of the wooded hills towards Postcombe. Near Tetsworth, the enemy's first outpost, they halt till evening; the horsemen dismount, the flagon and the foraging-bag are opened, the black-jack and the manchet go round, healths are drunk to successes past and glories future, to "Queen Mary's eyes," and to "Prince Rupert's dog." A few hours bring darkness; they move on eastward through the lanes, avoiding, when possible, the Roman highways; they are sometimes fired upon by a picket, but make no return, for they are hurrying past the main

## ENGLAND

quarters of the enemy. In the silence of the summer night, they stealthily ride miles and miles through a hostile country, the renegade Urry guiding them. At early dawn, they see, through the misty air, the low hamlet of Postcombe, where the "beating-up of the enemy's quarters" is to begin. A hurried word of command; the infantry halt; the cavalry close and sweep down like night-hawks upon the sleeping village, — safe enough, one would have supposed, with the whole Parliamentary army lying between it and Oxford, to protect it from danger. Yet the small party of Puritan troopers awake in their quarters with Rupert at the door; it is well for them that they happen to be picked men, and have promptness, if not vigilance; forming hastily, they secure a retreat westward through the narrow street, leaving but few prisoners behind them. As hastily the prisoners are swept away with the stealthy troop, who have other work before them; and before half the startled villagers have opened their lattices the skirmish is over. Long before they can send a messenger up, over the hills, to sound the alarm-bells of Stoken Church, the swift gallop of the Cavaliers has reached Chinnor, two miles away, and the goal of their foray. The compact, strongly built village is surrounded. They form a parallel line behind the houses, on each side, leaping fences and ditches to their posts. They break down the iron chains stretched nightly across each end of the street, and line it from end to end. Rupert, Will Legge, and the "forlorn hope," dismounting, rush in upon the quarters, sparing only those who surrender.

In five minutes the town is up. The awakened troopers fight as desperately as their assailants, some on foot,

## A CHARGE WITH PRINCE RUPERT

some on horseback. More and more of Rupert's men rush in; they fight through the straggling street of the village, from the sign of the Ram at one end to that of the Crown at the other, and then back again. The citizens join against the invaders, the 'prentices rush from their attics, hasty barricades of carts and harrows are formed in the streets, long musket-barrels are thrust from the windows, dark groups cluster on the roofs, and stones begin to rattle on the heads below, together with phrases more galling than stones, — hurled down by women, — "cursed dogs," "devilish Cavaliers," "Papist traitors." In return, the intruders shoot at the windows indiscriminately, storm the doors, fire the houses; they grow more furious, and spare nothing; some townspeople retreat within the church doors; the doors are beaten in; women barricade them with wool-packs, and fight over them with muskets, barrel to barrel. Outside, the troopers ride round and round the town, seizing or slaying all who escape; within, desperate men still aim from their windows, though the houses on each side are in flames. Melting lead pours down from the blazing roofs, while the drum still beats and the flag still advances. It is struck down presently; tied to a broken pikestaff, it rises again, while a chaos of armor and plumes, black and orange, blue and red, torn laces and tossing feathers, powder stains and blood-stains, fills the dewy morning with terror, and opens the June Sunday with sin.

Threescore and more of the townspeople are slain, sixscore are led away at the horses' sides, bound with ropes, to be handed over to the infantry for keeping. Some of these prisoners, even of the armed troopers, are

## ENGLAND

so ignorant and unwarlike as yet, that they know not the meaning of the word "quarter," refusing it when offered, and imploring "mercy" instead. Others are little children, for whom a heavy ransom shall yet be paid. Others, cheaper prisoners, are ransomed on the spot. Some plunder has also been taken, but the soldiers look longingly on the larger wealth that must be left behind, in the hurry of retreat, — treasures that otherwise no trooper of Rupert's would have spared: scarlet cloth, bedding, saddles, cutlery, ironware, hats, shoes, hops for beer, and books to sell to the Oxford scholars. But the daring which has given them victory now makes their danger; — they have been nearly twelve hours in the saddle and have fought two actions; they have twenty-five miles to ride, with the whole force of the enemy in their path; they came unseen in the darkness, they must return by daylight and with the alarm already given; Stoken church-bell has been pealing for hours, the troop from Postcombe has fallen back on Tetsworth, and everywhere in the distance videttes are hurrying from post to post.

The perilous retreat begins. Ranks are closed; they ride silently; many a man leads a second horse beside him, and one bears in triumph the great captured Puritan standard, with its five buff Bibles on a black ground. They choose their course more carefully than ever, seek the by-lanes, and swim the rivers with their swords between their teeth. At one point in their hushed progress, they hear the sound of rattling wagons. There is a treasure-train within their reach, worth twenty-one thousand pounds, and destined for the Parliamentary camp, but the thick woods of the Chilterns have sheltered it

## A CHARGE WITH PRINCE RUPERT

from pursuit, and they have not a moment to waste; they are riding for their lives. Already the gathering parties of Roundheads are closing upon them, nearer and nearer, as they approach the most perilous point of the wild expedition, — their only return-path across the Cherwell, — Chiselhampton Bridge. Percy and O'Neal with difficulty hold the assailants in check; the case grows desperate at last, and Rupert stands at bay on Chalgrove Field.

It is Sunday morning, June 18, 1643. The early church-bells are ringing over all Oxfordshire, — dying away in the soft air, among the sunny English hills, while Englishmen are drawing near one another with hatred in their hearts, — dying away, as on that other Sunday, eight months ago, when Baxter, preaching near Edgehill, heard the sounds of battle, and disturbed the rest of his saints by exclaiming, "To the fight!" But here are no warrior-preachers, no bishops praying in surplices on the one side, no dark-robed divines preaching on horseback on the other, no king in glittering armor, no Tutor Harvey in peaceful meditation beneath a hedge, pondering on the circulation of the blood, with hotter blood flowing so near him; all these were to be seen at Edgehill, but not here. This smaller skirmish rather turns our thoughts to Cisatlantic associations; its date suggests Bunker Hill, — and its circumstances, Lexington. For this, also, is a marauding party, with a Percy among its officers, brought to a stand by a half-armed and an angry peasantry.

Rupert sends his infantry forward, to secure the bridge, and a sufficient body of dragoons to line the mile and a half of road between, — the remainder of the troops



## ENGLAND

being drawn up at the entrance of a cornfield, several hundred acres in extent, and lying between the villages and the hills. The Puritans take a long circuit, endeavoring to get to windward of their formidable enemy, — a point judged as important, during the seventeenth century, in a land fight as in a naval engagement. They have with them some light field-pieces, artillery being the only point of superiority they yet claim; but these are not basilisks, nor falconets, not culverins (*colubri, couleuvres*), nor drakes (*dracones*), nor warning-pieces, — they are the leathern guns of Gustavus Adolphus, made of light cast-iron and bound with ropes and leather. The Round-head dragoons, dismounted, line a hedge near the Cavaliers, and plant their “swine-feathers”; under cover of their fire the horse advance in line, matches burning. As they advance, one or two dash forward, at risk of their lives, flinging off the orange scarfs which alone distinguish them, in token that they desert to the royal cause. Prince Rupert falls back into the lane a little, to lead the other forces into his ambush of dragoons. These tactics do not come naturally to him, however; nor does he like the practice of the time, that two bodies of cavalry should ride up within pistol-shot of each other, and exchange a volley before they charge. He rather anticipates, on his style of operations, the famous order of Frederick the Great: “The king hereby forbids all officers of cavalry, on pain of being broke with ignominy, ever to allow themselves to be attacked in any action by the enemy; but the Prussians must always attack them.” Accordingly he restrains himself for a little while, chafing beneath the delay, and then, a soldier or two being suddenly struck down by the fire, he exclaims, “Yea!



## A CHARGE WITH PRINCE RUPERT

this insolency is not to be endured." The moment is come.

"God and Queen Mary!" shouts Rupert; "Charge!" In one instant that motionless mass becomes a flood of lava; down in one terrible sweep it comes, silence behind it and despair before; no one notices the beauty of that brilliant chivalrous array, — all else is merged in the fury of the wild gallop; spurs are deep, reins free, blades grasped, heads bent; the excited horse feels the heel no more than he feels the hand; the uneven ground breaks their ranks, — no matter, they feel that they can ride down the world: Rupert first clears the hedge, — he is always first, — then comes the captain of his life-guard, then the whole troop "jumble after them," in a spectator's piquant phrase. The dismounted Puritan dragoons break from the hedges and scatter for their lives, but the cavalry "bear the charge better than they have done since Worcester," — that is, now they stand it an instant, then they did not stand it at all; the Prince takes them in flank and breaks them in pieces at the first encounter, — the very wind of the charge shatters them. Horse and foot, carbines and petronels, swords and pole-axes, are mingled in one struggling mass. Rupert and his men seem refreshed, not exhausted, by the weary night, — they seem incapable of fatigue; they spike the guns as they cut down the gunners, and, if any escape, it is because many in both armies wear the same red scarfs. One Puritan, surrounded by the enemy, shows such desperate daring that Rupert bids release him at last, and sends afterwards to Essex to ask his name. One Cavalier bends, with a wild oath, to search the pockets of a slain enemy; — it is his own brother.

## ENGLAND

O'Neal slays a standard-bearer, and thus restores to his company the right to bear a flag, — a right they had lost at Hopton Heath; Legge is taken prisoner and escapes; Urry proves himself no coward, though a renegade, and is trusted to bear to Oxford the news of the victory, being raised to knighthood in return.

For a victory, of course, it is. Nothing in England can yet resist these high-born, dissolute, reckless Cavaliers of Rupert's. "I have seen them running up walls twenty feet high," said the engineer consulted by the frightened citizens of Dorchester; "these defenses of yours may possibly keep them out half an hour." Darlings of triumphant aristocracy, they are destined to meet with no foe that can match them, until they recoil at last before the plebeian pikes of the London train-bands. Nor can even Rupert's men claim to monopolize the courage of the king's party. The brilliant "show-troop" of Lord Bernard Stuart, comprising the young nobles having no separate command, — a troop which could afford to indulge in all the gorgeousness of dress, since their united incomes, Clarendon declares, would have exceeded those of the whole Puritan Parliament, — led, by their own desire, the triumphant charge at Edgehill, and three-score of their bodies were found piled on the spot where the royal standard was captured and rescued. Not less faithful were the Marquis of Newcastle's "Lambs," who took their name from the white woolen clothing which they refused to have dyed, saying that their hearts' blood would dye it soon enough; and so it did; only thirty survived the battle of Marston Moor, and the bodies of the rest were found in the field, ranked regularly side by side, in death as in life.

## A CHARGE WITH PRINCE RUPERT

But here at Chalgrove Field no such fortitude of endurance is needed: the enemy are scattered, and, as Rupert's Cavaliers are dashing on, in their accustomed headlong pursuit, a small but fresh force of Puritan cavalry appears behind the hedges and charges on them from the right, — two troops, hastily gathered, and in various garb. They are headed by a man in middle life and of noble aspect: once seen, he cannot easily be forgotten; but seen he will never be again, and, for the last time, Rupert and Hampden meet face to face.

The foremost representative men of their respective parties, they scarcely remember, perhaps, that there are ties and coincidences in their lives. At the marriage of Rupert's mother, the student Hampden was chosen to write the Oxford epithalamium, exulting in the prediction of some noble offspring to follow such a union. Rupert is about to be made general-in-chief of the Cavaliers; Hampden is looked to by all as the future general-in-chief of the Puritans. Rupert is the nephew of the king, — Hampden the cousin of Cromwell; and as the former is believed to be aiming at the crown, so the latter is the only possible rival of Cromwell for the protectorate, — "the eyes of all being fixed upon him as their *pater patriæ*." But in all the greater qualities of manhood, how far must Hampden be placed above the magnificent and gifted Rupert! In a congress of natural noblemen — for such do the men of the Commonwealth appear — he must rank foremost. It is difficult to avoid exaggeration in speaking of these men, — men whose deeds vindicate their words, and whose words are unsurpassed by Greek or Roman fame, — men whom even Hume can only criticize for a "mysterious jargon"

## ENGLAND

which most of them did not use, and for a "vulgar hypocrisy" which few of them practiced. Let us not under-rate the self-forgetting loyalty of the Royalists, — the Duke of Newcastle laying at the king's feet seven hundred thousand pounds, and the Marquis of Worcester a million; but the sublimer poverty and abstinence of the Parliamentary party deserve a yet loftier meed, — Vane surrendering an office of thirty thousand pounds a year to promote public economy, — Hutchinson refusing a peerage and a fortune as a bribe to hold Nottingham Castle a little while for the king, — Eliot and Pym bequeathing their families to the nation's justice, having spent their all for the good cause. And rising to yet higher attributes, as they pass before us in the brilliant paragraphs of the courtly Clarendon, or the juster modern estimates of Forster, it seems like a procession of born sovereigns; while the more pungent epithets of contemporary wit only familiarize, but do not mar, the fame of Cromwell (Cleaveland's "Cæsar in a Clown"), — "William the Conqueror" Waller, — "young Harry" Vane, — "fiery Tom" Fairfax, — and "King" Pym. But among all these there is no peer of Hampden, of him who came not from courts or camps, but from the tranquil study of his Davila, — from that thoughtful retirement which was for him, as for his model, Coligny, the school of all noble virtues, — came to find himself at once a statesman and a soldier, receiving from his contemporary, Clarendon, no affectionate critic, the triple crown of historic praise, as being "the most able, resolute, and popular person in the kingdom." Who can tell how changed the destiny of England, had the Earl of Bedford's first compromise with the country party suc-

## A CHARGE WITH PRINCE RUPERT

ceeded, and Hampden become the tutor of Prince Charles, — or could this fight at Chalgrove Field issue differently, and Hampden survive to be general instead of Essex, and protector in place of Cromwell?

But that may not be. Had Hampden's earlier counsels prevailed, Rupert never would have ventured on his night foray; had his next suggestions been followed, Rupert never would have returned from it. Those failing, Hampden has come, gladly followed by Gunter and his dragoons, outstripping the tardy Essex, to dare all and die. In vain does Gunter perish beside his flag; in vain does Crosse, his horse being killed under him, spring in the midst of battle on another; in vain does "that great-spirited little Sir Samuel Luke" (the original of Hudibras) get thrice captured and thrice escape. For Hampden, the hope of the nation, is fatally shot through the shoulder with two carbine-balls in the first charge; the whole troop sees it with dismay; Essex comes up, as usual, too late, and the fight of Chalgrove Field is lost.

## SIR NICHOLAS AT MARSTON MOOR

[1644]

BY WINTHROP MACKWORTH PRAED

[It was not until Oliver Cromwell had reorganized the army, filling it with sober Puritans who fought for principle, that success deserted the Royalists. The first decisive victory of the Roundheads was at Marston Moor, where the gallant Cavaliers of Prince Rupert were swept away by the stern charge of Cromwell's Ironsides.

*The Editor.]*

To horse, to horse, Sir Nicholas! the clarion's note is  
high;

To horse, to horse, Sir Nicholas! the huge drum makes  
reply:

Ere this hath Lucas marched with his gallant cavaliers,  
And the bray of Rupert's trumpets grows fainter in our  
ears.

To horse, to horse, Sir Nicholas! White Guy is at the  
door,

And the vulture whets his beak o'er the field of Marston  
Moor.

Up rose the Lady Alice from her brief and broken prayer,  
And she brought a silken standard down the narrow  
turret stair.

Oh, many were the tears that those radiant eyes had  
shed

As she worked the bright word "Glory" in the gay and  
glancing thread;

## SIR NICHOLAS AT MARSTON MOOR

And mournful was the smile that o'er those beauteous  
features ran,

As she said, "It is your lady's gift, unfurl it in the van."

"It shall flutter, noble wench, where the best and bold-  
est ride,

Through the steel-clad files of Skippon and the black  
dragoons of Pride;

The recreant soul of Fairfax will feel a sicklier qualm,

And the rebel lips of Oliver give out a louder psalm,

When they see my lady's gew-gaw flaunt bravely on  
their wing,

And hear her loyal soldiers' shout, for God and for the  
King!"

'T is noon; the ranks are broken along the royal line;

They fly, the Braggarts of the court, the Bullies of the  
Rhine:

Stout Langley's cheer is heard no more, and Astley's  
helm is down,

And Rupert sheathes his rapier with a curse and with a  
frown;

And cold Newcastle mutters, as he follows in the flight,

"The German boar had better far have supped in York  
to-night."

The knight is all alone, his steel cap cleft in twain,  
His good buff jerkin crimsoned o'er with many a gory  
stain;

But still he waves the standard, and cries amid the rout,

"For Church and King, fair gentlemen, spur on and  
fight it out!"



## ENGLAND

And now he wards a Roundhead's pike, and now he hums  
a stave,  
And here he quotes a stage-play, and there he fells a  
knave.

Good speed to thee, Sir Nicholas! thou hast no thought  
of fear;  
Good speed to thee, Sir Nicholas! but fearful odds are  
here.  
The traitors ring thee round, and with every blow and  
thrust,  
"Down, down," they cry, "with Belial, down with him  
to the dust!"  
"I would," quoth grim old Oliver, "that Belial's trusty  
sword  
This day were doing battle for the Saints and for the  
Lord!"

The Lady Alice sits with her maidens in her bower;  
The gray-haired warden watches on the castle's highest  
tower.  
"What news, what news, old Anthony?" "The field  
is lost and won;  
The ranks of war are melting as the mists beneath the  
sun;  
And a wounded man speeds hither, — I am old and can-  
not see,  
Or sure I am that sturdy step my master's step should  
be."

"I bring thee back the standard from as rude and rough  
a fray,

## SIR NICHOLAS AT MARSTON MOOR

As e'er was proof of soldier's thews, or theme for minstrel's lay.

Bid Hubert fetch the silver bowl, and liquor *quantum suff.*;

I'll make a shift to drain it, ere I part with boot and buff;  
Though Guy through many a gaping wound is breathing  
out his life,

And I came to thee a landless man, my fond and faithful wife!

“Sweet, we will fill our money-bags, and freight a ship  
for France,

And mourn in merry Paris for this poor realm's mis-  
chance;

Or, if the worst betide me, why, better axe or rope,  
Than life with Lenthal for a king, and Peter's for a pope!  
Alas, alas, my gallant Guy! — out on the crop-eared  
boor,

That sent me with my standard on foot from Marston  
Moor!”

## THE BATTLE OF NASEBY

BY OBADIAH BIND-THEIR-KINGS-IN-CHAINS-AND-THEIR-  
NOBLES-WITH-LINKS-OF-IRON, SERGEANT IN  
IRETON'S REGIMENT

[1645]

BY THOMAS BABINGTON MACAULAY

[THE army of Cromwell was of remarkable caliber. High wages were given to the soldiers, and only those who were sober and God-fearing were permitted to join its ranks. Oaths, theft, gambling, and drunkenness were unknown. As Macaulay says, "The most rigid discipline was found in company with the wildest enthusiasm."

One peculiarity of the Puritan was his choice of given names for his children. He was not satisfied with simple Biblical names of one word, but frequently adopted a whole phrase, such as Zeal-of-the-Land, Praise-God, etc.

The battle of Naseby, between the forces of Charles I and those of Cromwell, resulted in the utter defeat of the king. The royal army was nearly annihilated. The "Man of Blood" was the name given by the Puritans to King Charles.

*The Editor.]*

OH! wherefore come ye forth, in triumph from the  
North,

With your hands and your feet and your raiment all  
red?

And wherefore doth your rout send forth a joyous  
shout?

And whence be the grapes of the wine-press which ye  
tread?

## THE BATTLE OF NASEBY

Oh, evil was the root, and bitter was the fruit,  
And crimson was the juice of the vintage that we trod;  
For we trampled on the throng of the haughty and the  
strong,  
Who sat in the high places, and slew the saints of God.

It was about the noon of a glorious day of June,  
That we saw their banners dance, and their cuirasses  
shine,  
And the Man of Blood was there with his long essenced  
hair,  
And Astley, and Sir Marmaduke, and Rupert of the  
Rhine.

Like a servant of the Lord, with his Bible and his sword,  
The general rode along us to form us to the fight,  
When a murmuring sound broke out, and swelled into  
a shout,  
Among the godless horsemen upon the tyrant's right.

And hark! like the roar of the billows on the shore,  
The cry of battle rises along their charging line!  
For God! for the Cause! for the Church! for the Laws!  
For Charles, King of England, and Rupert of the  
Rhine!

The furious German comes, with his clarions and his  
drums,  
His bravoës of Alsatia, and pages of Whitehall;  
They are bursting on our flanks. Grasp your pikes, close  
your ranks,  
For Rupert never comes but to conquer or to fall.

## ENGLAND

They are here! They rush on! We are broken! We are gone!

Our left is borne before them like stubble on the blast.  
O Lord, put forth Thy might! O Lord, defend the right!  
Stand back to back in God's name, and fight it to the last.

Stout Skippon hath a wound, the center hath given ground:

Hark! hark! — what means the trampling of horsemen on our rear?

Whose banner do I see, boys? 'T is he, thank God, 't is he, boys!

Bear up another minute: brave Oliver is here.

Their heads all stooping low, their points all in a row,

Like a whirlwind on the trees, like a deluge on the dikes,

Our cuirassiers have burst on the ranks of the accurst,  
And at a shock have scattered the forest of his pikes.

Fast, fast the gallants ride, in some safe nook to hide  
Their coward heads, predestined to rot on Temple Bar:

And he — he turns, he flies: shame on those cruel eyes  
That bore to look on torture, and dare not look on war!

Ho! comrades, scour the plain, and, ere ye strip the slain,

First give another stab to make your search secure,

## THE BATTLE OF NASEBY

Then shake from sleeves and pockets their broadpieces  
and locketts,

The tokens of the wanton, the plunder of the poor.

Fools! your doublets shone with gold, and your hearts  
were gay and bold,

When you kissed your lily hands to your lemans to-day;

And to-morrow shall the fox, from her chambers in the  
rocks,

Lead forth her tawny cubs to howl above the prey.

Where be your tongues that late mocked at heaven and  
hell and fate,

And the fingers that once were so busy with your  
blades;

Your perfumed satin clothes, your catches and your  
oaths,

Your stage-plays and your sonnets, your diamonds  
and your spades?

Down, down, forever down with the miter and the  
crown,

With the Belial of the court, and the Mammon of the  
Pope;

There is woe in Oxford halls: there is wail in Durham's  
stalls:

The Jesuit smites his bosom: the bishop rends his  
cope.

And she of the seven hills shall mourn her children's ills,  
And tremble when she thinks on the edge of England's  
sword;

## ENGLAND

And the kings of earth in fear shall shudder when they  
hear

What the hand of God hath wrought for the Houses  
and the Word.



CHARLES I INSULTED BY SOLDIERS

## CHARLES I INSULTED BY SOLDIERS

BY PAUL DELAROCHE

(*French painter, 1797-1856*)

It is said that when the king passed through the crowds of soldiers at the close of the trial, some reviled him, some blew whiffs of tobacco smoke in his face, and that even in his own bedroom soldiers were permitted to smoke and drink. Whatever the faults of Charles may have been, he certainly behaved during those last days of his life with a dignity and Christian composure that in the minds of many have gone far to win pardon for his serious offenses as a sovereign.

The effect produced by the execution of the king has been described by Macaulay as follows: —

“In no long time it became manifest that those political and religious zealots, to whom this deed is to be ascribed, had committed, not only a crime, but an error. They had given to a prince, hitherto known to his people chiefly by his faults, an opportunity of displaying, on a great theater, before the eyes of all nations and all ages, some qualities which irresistibly call forth the admiration and love of mankind, the high spirit of a gallant gentleman, the patience and meekness of a penitent Christian. Nay, they had so contrived their revenge that the very man whose life had been a series of attacks on the liberties of England now seemed to die a martyr in the cause of those liberties. No demagogue ever produced such an impression on the public mind as the captive king, who, retaining in that extremity all his regal dignity, and confronting death with dauntless courage, gave utterance to the feelings of his oppressed people, manfully refused to plead before a court unknown to the law, appealed from military violence to the principles of the constitution, asked by what right the House of Commons had been purged of its most respectable members and the House of Lords deprived of its legislative functions, and told his weeping hearers that he was defending, not only his own cause, but theirs. His long misgovernment, his innumerable perfidies, were forgotten. . . . From that day began a reaction in favor of monarchy and of the exiled house, a reaction which never ceased till the throne had again been set up in all its old dignity.”





## II

# THE RULE OF OLIVER CROMWELL

## HISTORICAL NOTE

At the beginning of the civil war the Parliamentary party was composed for the most part of men who were Presbyterians in religion and moderates in politics. As the struggle progressed, there arose a new and radical party that was destined to wrest control of the state from both Royalists and Presbyterians. This party or sect was known as the Independents. Its leader was Oliver Cromwell, a country gentleman who, at the outbreak of the civil war, had raised a company for Parliament, and soon attained a commanding position by the discipline and zeal of his soldiers (the Ironsides, as they were called), and by the uniform success of his operations.

Soon after the appointment of Cromwell as lieutenant-general in 1645 the first period of the civil war was ended by the overwhelming defeat of the Royalists at Naseby. In the following year the king surrendered to the Scots, and was by them delivered up to the English Parliament. Then followed three years of treaties and intrigues between the king and Parliament, until the army, weary of the fruitless negotiations, seized the king and drove the Presbyterian members from Parliament. By the remaining members, known as the Rump Parliament, the king was accused of treason, tried before a special court of justice, found guilty, and executed on the 30th of January, 1649.

All parties except the Independents were united by this act against Cromwell, who as commander of the army was held chiefly responsible. "Yet such was his genius and resolution that he was able to overpower and crush everything that crossed his path, to make himself more absolute master of his country than any of her legitimate kings had been, and to make his country more dreaded and respected than she had been during many generations under the rule of her legitimate kings."

For nine years Cromwell and his soldiers ruled England, and at his death in 1658, Richard Cromwell, his son, quietly succeeded to the title of Lord Protector.

# THE TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF KING CHARLES I

[1649]

BY JACOB ABBOTT

[AND now a design, to which, at the commencement of the civil war, no man would have dared to allude, and which was no less inconsistent with the Solemn League and Covenant than with the old law of England, began to take a distinct form. The austere warriors who ruled the nation had, during some months, meditated a fearful vengeance on the captive king. When and how the scheme originated; whether it spread from the general to the ranks, or from the ranks to the general; whether it is to be ascribed to policy using fanaticism as a tool, or to fanaticism bearing down policy with headlong impulse, are questions which, even at this day, cannot be answered with perfect confidence. It seems, however, on the whole, probable that he who seemed to lead was really forced to follow, and that . . . he sacrificed his own judgment and his own inclinations to the wishes of the army. For the power which he had called into existence was a power which even he could not always control; and, that he might ordinarily command, it was necessary that he should sometimes obey. . . .

Cromwell had to determine whether he would put to hazard the attachment of his party, the attachment of his army, his own greatness, nay, his own life, in an attempt which would probably have been vain, to save a prince whom no engagement could bind. With many struggles and misgivings, and probably not without many prayers, the decision was made. Charles was left to his fate. The military saints resolved that, in defiance of the old laws of the realm, and of the al-



## ENGLAND

most universal sentiment of the nation, the king should expiate his crimes with his blood.

*Thomas Babington Macaulay.]*

EVERYTHING connected with the trial was conducted with great state and parade. The number of commissioners constituting the court was one hundred and thirty-three, though only a little more than half that number attended the trial. The king had been removed from Hurst Castle to Windsor Castle, and he was now brought into the city, and lodged in a house near to Westminster Hall, so as to be at hand. On the appointed day the court assembled; the vast hall and all the avenues to it were thronged. The whole civilized world looked on, in fact, in astonishment at the almost unprecedented spectacle of a king tried for his life by an assembly of his subjects.

The first business after the opening of the court was to call the roll of the commissioners, that each one might answer to his name. The name of the general of the army, Fairfax, who was one of the number, was the second upon the list. When his name was called there was no answer. It was called again. A voice from one of the galleries replied, "He has too much wit to be here." This produced some disorder, and the officers called out to know who answered in that manner, but there was no reply. Afterwards, when the impeachment was read, the phrase occurred, "Of all the people of England," when the same voice rejoined, "No, not the half of them." The officers then ordered a soldier to fire into the seat from which these interruptions came. This command was not obeyed, but they found, on investigating the

## TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF CHARLES I

case, that the person who had answered thus was Fairfax's wife, and they immediately removed her from the hall.

When the court was fully organized, they commanded the sergeant-at-arms to bring in the prisoner. The king was accordingly brought in, and conducted to a chair covered with crimson velvet, which had been placed for him at the bar. The judges remained in their seats, with their heads covered, while he entered, and the king took his seat, keeping his head covered too. He took a calm and deliberate survey of the scene, looking around upon the judges, and upon the armed guards by which he was environed, with a stern and unchanging countenance. At length silence was proclaimed, and the president rose to introduce the proceedings.

He addressed the king. He said that the Commons of England, deeply sensible of the calamities which had been brought upon England by the civil war, and of the innocent blood which had been shed, and convinced that he, the king, had been the guilty cause of it, were now determined to make inquisition for this blood, and to bring him to trial and judgment; that they had, for this purpose, organized this court, and that he should now hear the charge brought against him, which they would proceed to try.

An officer then arose to read the charge. The king made a gesture for him to be silent. He, however, persisted in his reading, although the king once or twice attempted to interrupt him. The president, too, ordered him to proceed. The charge recited the evils and calamities which had resulted from the war, and concluded by saying that "the said Charles Stuart is and has been the

## ENGLAND

occasioner, author, and continuer of the said unnatural, cruel, and bloody wars, and is therein guilty of all the treasons, murders, rapines, burnings, spoils, desolations, damages, and mischiefs to this nation acted and committed in the said wars, or occasioned thereby."

The president then sharply rebuked the king for his interruptions to the proceedings, and asked him what answer he had to make to the impeachment. The king replied by demanding by what authority they pretended to call him to account for his conduct. He told them that he was their king, and they his subjects; that they were not even the Parliament, and that they had no authority from any true Parliament to sit as a court to try him; that he would not betray his own dignity and rights by making any answer at all to any charges they might bring against him, for that would be an acknowledgment of their authority; but he was convinced that there was not one of them who did not in his heart believe that he was wholly innocent of the charges which they had brought against him.

These proceedings occupied the first day. The king was then sent back to his place of confinement, and the court adjourned. The next day, when called upon to plead to the impeachment, the king only insisted the more strenuously in denying the authority of the court, and in stating his reasons for so denying it. The court was determined not to hear what he had to say on this point, and the president continually interrupted him; while he, in his turn, continually interrupted the president too. It was a struggle and a dispute, not a trial. At last, on the fourth day, something like testimony was produced to prove that the king had been in arms against

## TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF CHARLES I

the forces of the Parliament. On the fifth and sixth days, the judges sat in private to come to their decision; and on the day following, which was Saturday, January 27, they called the king again before them, and opened the doors to admit the great assembly of spectators, that the decision might be announced.

There followed another scene of mutual interruptions and disorder. The king insisted on longer delay. He had not said what he wished to say in his defense. The president told him it was now too late; that he had consumed the time allotted to him in making objections to the jurisdiction of the court, and now it was too late for his defense. The clerk then read the sentence, which ended thus: "For all which treasons and crimes this court doth adjudge that he, the said Charles Stuart, is a tyrant, traitor, murderer, and public enemy, and shall be put to death by the severing of his head from his body." When the clerk had finished the reading, the president rose, and said deliberately and solemnly: —

"The sentence now read and published is the act, sentence, judgment, and resolution of the whole court."

And the whole court rose to express their assent.

The king then said to the president, "Will you hear me a word, sir?"

*President.* "Sir, you are not to be heard after the sentence."

*King.* "Am I not, sir?"

*President.* "No, sir. Guards, withdraw the prisoner!"

*King.* "I may speak after sentence by your favor, sir. Hold — I say, sir — by your favor, sir — If I am not permitted to speak —" The other parts of his broken

## ENGLAND

attempts to speak were lost in the tumult and noise. He was taken out of the hall.

One would have supposed that all who witnessed these dreadful proceedings, and who now saw one who had been so lately the sovereign of a mighty empire standing friendless and alone on the brink of destruction, would have relented at last, and would have found their hearts yielding to emotions of pity. But it seems not to have been so. The animosities engendered by political strife are merciless, and the crowd through which the king had to pass as he went from the hall scoffed and derided him. They blew the smoke of their tobacco in his face, and threw their pipes at him. Some proceeded to worse indignities than these, but the king bore all with quietness and resignation.

The king was sentenced on Saturday. On the evening of that day he sent a request that the Bishop of London might be allowed to assist at his devotions, and that his children might be permitted to see him before he was to die. There were two of his children then in England, his youngest son and a daughter. The other two sons had escaped to the Continent. The Government granted both these requests. By asking for the services of an Episcopal clergyman, Charles signified his firm determination to adhere to the very last hour of his life to the religious principles which he had been struggling for so long. It is somewhat surprising that the Government were willing to comply with the request.

It was, however, complied with, and Charles was taken from the palace of Whitehall, which is in Westminster, to the palace of St. James, not very far distant. He was escorted by a guard through the streets. At St.

## TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF CHARLES I

James's there was a small chapel where the king attended divine service. The Bishop of London preached a sermon on the future judgment, in which he administered comfort to the mind of the unhappy prisoner, so far as the sad case allowed of any comfort, by the thought that all human judgments would be reviewed, and all wrongs made right at the great day. After the service the king spent the remainder of the day in retirement and private devotion.

During the afternoon of the day several of his most trusty friends among the nobility called to see him, but he declined to grant them admission. He said that his time was short and precious, and that he wished to improve it to the utmost in preparation for the great change which awaited him. He hoped, therefore, that his friends would not be displeased if he declined seeing any persons besides his children. It would do no good for them to be admitted. All that they could do for him now was to pray for him.

The next day the children were brought to him in the room where he was confined. The daughter, who was called the Lady Elizabeth, was the oldest. He directed her to tell her brother James, who was the second son, and now absent with Charles on the Continent, that he must now, from the time of his father's death, no longer look upon Charles as merely his older brother, but as his sovereign, and obey him as such; and he requested her to charge them both, from him, to love each other, and to forgive their father's enemies.

"You will not forget this, my dear child, will you?" added the king. The Lady Elizabeth was still very young.



## ENGLAND

"No," said she, "I will never forget it as long as I live."

He then charged her with a message to her mother, the queen, who was also on the Continent. "Tell her," said he, "that I have loved her faithfully all my life, and that my tender regard for her will not cease till I cease to breathe."

Poor Elizabeth was sadly grieved at this parting interview. The king tried to comfort her. "You must not be so afflicted for me," he said. "It will be a very glorious death that I shall die. I die for the laws and liberties of this land, and for maintaining the Protestant religion. I have forgiven all my enemies, and I hope that God will forgive them."

The little son was, by title, the Duke of Gloucester. He took him on his knees, and said in substance, "My dear boy, they are going to cut off your father's head." The child looked up into his father's face very earnestly, not comprehending so strange an assertion.

"They are going to cut off my head," repeated the king, "and perhaps they will want to make you a king; but you must not be king as long as your brothers Charles and James live; for if you do, very likely they will, sometime or other, cut off your head." The child said, with a very determined air, that then they should never make him king as long as he lived. The king then gave his children some other parting messages for several of his nearest relatives and friends, and they were taken away.

In cases of capital punishment, in England and America, there must be, after the sentence is pronounced, written authority to the sheriff, or other proper officer

## TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF CHARLES I

to proceed to the execution of it. This is called the warrant, and is usually to be signed by the chief magistrate of the state. In England the sovereign always signs the warrant of execution; but in the case of the execution of the sovereign himself, which was a case entirely unprecedented, the authorities were at first a little at a loss to know what to do. The commissioners who had judged the king concluded finally to sign it themselves. It was expressed substantially as follows: —

“At the High Court of Justice for the trying and judging of Charles Stuart, King of England, January 29, 1648: —

“Whereas Charles Stuart, King of England, has been convicted, attainted, and condemned of high treason, and sentence was pronounced against him by this court, to be put to death by the severance of his head from his body, of which sentence execution yet remaineth to be done; these are, therefore, now to will and require you to see the said sentence executed in the open street before Whitehall, upon the morrow, being the thirtieth day of this instant month of January, between the hours of ten in the morning and five in the afternoon of the said day, with full effect; and for so doing this shall be your sufficient warrant.”

Fifty-nine of the judges signed this warrant, and then it was sent to the persons appointed to carry the sentence into execution.

That night the king slept pretty well for about four hours, though during the evening before he could hear in his apartment the noise of the workmen building the



## ENGLAND

platform or scaffold as it was commonly called, on which the execution was to take place. He awoke, however, long before day. He called to an attendant who lay by his bedside, and requested him to get up. "I will rise myself," said he, "for I have a great work to do to-day." He then requested that they would furnish him with the best dress, and an extra supply of under clothing, because it was a cold morning. He particularly wished to be well guarded from the cold, lest it should cause him to shiver, and they would suppose that he was trembling from fear.

"I have no fear," said he. "Death is not terrible to me. I bless God that I am prepared."

The king had made arrangements for divine service in his room early in the morning, to be conducted by the Bishop of London. The bishop came in at the time appointed and read the prayers. He also read, in the course of the service, the twenty-ninth chapter of Matthew, which narrates the closing scenes of our Saviour's life. This was, in fact, the regular lesson for the day, according to the Episcopal ritual, which assigns certain portions of Scripture to every day of the year. The king supposed that the bishop had purposely selected this passage, and he thanked him for it, as he said it seemed to him very appropriate to the occasion. "May it please Your Majesty," said the bishop, "it is the proper lesson for the day." The king was much affected at learning this fact, as he considered it a special Providence, indicating that he was prepared to die, and that he should be sustained in the final agony.

About ten o'clock, Colonel Hacker, who was the first one named in the warrant of execution of the three

## TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF CHARLES I

persons to whom the warrant was addressed, knocked gently at the king's chamber door. No answer was returned. Presently he knocked again. The king asked his attendant to go to the door. He went, and asked Colonel Hacker why he knocked. He replied that he wished to see the king.

"Let him come in," said the king.

The officer entered, but with great embarrassment and trepidation. He felt that he had a most awful duty to perform. He informed the king that it was time to proceed to Whitehall, though he could have some time there for rest. "Very well," said the king; "go on; I will follow." The king then took the bishop's arm, and they went along together.

They found, as they issued from the palace of St. James into the park through which their way led to Whitehall, that lines of soldiers had been drawn up. The king, with the bishop on one side, and the attendant before referred to, whose name was Herbert, on the other, both uncovered, walked between these lines of guards. The king walked on very fast, so that the others scarcely kept pace with him. When he arrived at Whitehall he spent some further time in devotion with the bishop, and then, at noon, he ate a little bread and drank some light wine. Soon after this, Colonel Hacker, the officer, came to the door and let them know that the hour had arrived.

The bishop and Hacker melted into tears as they bade their master farewell. The king directed the door to be opened, and requested the officer to go on, saying that he would follow. They went through a large hall, called the banqueting hall, to a window in front, through which

a passage had been made for the king to his scaffold, which was built up in the street before the palace. As the king passed out through the window, he perceived that a vast throng of spectators had assembled in the streets to witness the spectacle. He had expected this, and had intended to address them. But he found that this was impossible, as the space all around the scaffold was occupied with troops of horses and bodies of soldiers, so as to keep the populace at so great a distance that they could not hear his voice. He, however, made his speech, addressing it particularly to one or two persons who were near, knowing that they would put the substance of it on record, and thus make it known to all mankind. There was then some further conversation about the preparations for the final blow, the adjustment of the dress, the hair, etc., in which the king took an active part with great composure. He then kneeled down and laid his head upon the block.

The executioner, who wore a mask that he might not be known, began to adjust the hair of the prisoner by putting it up under his cap, when the king, supposing that he was going to strike, hastily told him to wait for the sign. The executioner said that he would. The king spent a few minutes in prayer, and then stretched out his hands, which was the sign which he had arranged to give. The axe descended. The dissevered head, with the blood streaming from it, was held up by the assistant executioner, for the gratification of the vast crowd which was gazing on the scene. He said, as he raised it, "Behold the head of a traitor!"

The body was placed in a coffin covered with black velvet, and taken back through the window into the

CROMWELL IN WHITEHALL

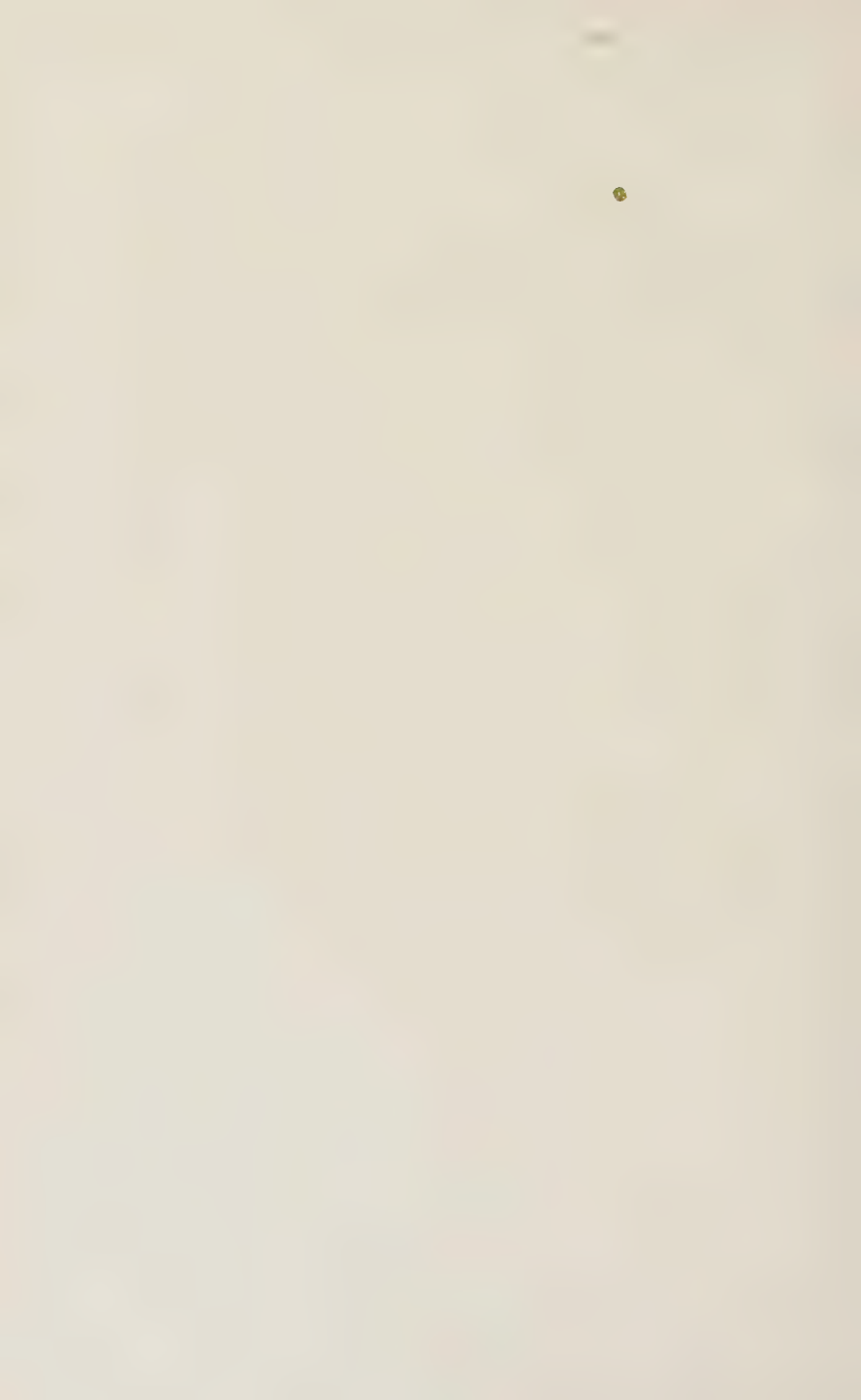
## CROMWELL IN WHITEHALL

BY JULIUS SCHRADER

(*Germany.* 1815-1900)

FROM the banqueting hall of this palace Charles I was led forth to die on the scaffold that had been erected under its windows. Cromwell, who, more than any other man in England, had been responsible for the execution of the king, is here represented as gazing sternly, but with no one knows what thoughts, at the portrait of Charles, before which rest the hat, gloves, and riding-whip of the monarch.







## TRIAL AND EXECUTION OF CHARLES I

room from which the monarch had walked out, in life and health, but a few moments before. A day or two afterward it was taken to Windsor Castle upon a hearse drawn by six horses, and covered with black velvet. It was there interred in a vault in the chapel, with an inscription upon lead over the coffin: —

KING CHARLES

1648

A ROYALIST DESCRIPTION OF  
CROMWELL'S MEN

BY SAMUEL BUTLER

THAT stubborn crew  
Of errant saints whom all men grant  
To be the true Church Militant.  
Such as do build their faith upon  
The holy text of pike and gun;  
Decide all controversies by  
Infallible artillery;  
And prove their doctrine orthodox  
With apostolic blows and knocks;  
Call fire and sword and desolation  
A godly, thorough Reformation,  
Which always must be going on,  
And still be doing, never done,  
As if Religion were intended  
For nothing else but to be mended:  
A sect whose chief devotion lies  
In odd, perverse antipathies,  
In falling out with that or this  
And finding somewhat still amiss;  
More peevish, cross, and splenetic  
Than dog distract or monkey sick:  
That with more care keep holyday  
The wrong, than others the right way;  
Compound for sins they are inclined to  
By damning those they have no mind to.

## A DESCRIPTION OF CROMWELL'S MEN

Still so perverse and opposite  
As if they worshiped God for spite,  
The selfsame thing they will abhor  
One way and long another for;  
Freewill they one way disavow,  
Another, nothing else allow;  
All piety consists therein  
In them, in other men all sin.  
Rather than fail they will defy  
That which they love most tenderly;  
Quarrel with mince-pies, and disparage  
Their best and dearest friend plum-porridge;  
Fat pig and goose itself oppose,  
And blaspheme custard through the nose.

## HOW CROMWELL DISSOLVED PARLIAMENT

[1653]

BY FRANÇOIS PIERRE GUILLAUME GUIZOT

[CROMWELL wished to summon a new Parliament, but the assembly then in session refused to adjourn, and, led by Sir Henry Vane, was about to pass a "Dissolution Bill," according to which the membership should remain unchanged, and none who might be elected to fill vacancies could be admitted unless the members approved.

*The Editor.]*

CROMWELL was informed that the Parliament was sitting, and that Vane, Martyn, and Sidney were pressing the immediate adoption of what they called the "Dissolution Bill." The members of the House who were with Cromwell at Whitehall went off immediately to Westminster; but Cromwell himself remained with his officers, determined still to wait, and not to act unless forced to do so by extreme necessity. Presently Colonel Ingoldsby arrived, exclaiming, "If you mean to do anything decisive, you have no time to lose." The House was on the point of coming to a vote; Vane had insisted with such warmth and earnestness on passing the bill, that Harrison had deemed it necessary "most sweetly and humbly" to conjure his colleagues to pause before they took so important a step.

Cromwell left Whitehall in haste, followed by Lambert and five or six officers; and commanded a detachment of soldiers to march round to the House of Commons.

## HOW CROMWELL DISSOLVED PARLIAMENT

On his arrival at Westminster, he stationed guards at the doors and in the lobby of the House, and led round another body to a position just outside the room in which the members were seated. He then entered alone, without noise, "clad in plain black clothes, with gray worsted stockings," as was his custom when he was not in uniform. Vane was speaking, and passionately descanting on the urgency of the bill. Cromwell sat down in his usual place, where he was instantly joined by St. John, to whom he said, "That he was come to do that which grieved him to the very soul, and that he had earnestly with tears prayed God against. Nay, that he had rather be torn in pieces than do it; but there was a necessity laid upon him therein, in order to the glory of God, and the good of the nation." St. John answered, "That he knew not what he meant; but did pray that what it was which must be done, might have a happy issue for the general good"; and so saying, he returned to his seat.

Vane was still speaking, and Cromwell listened to him with great attention. He was arguing the necessity of proceeding at once to the last stage of the bill, and with that view, adjured the House to dispense with the usual formalities which should precede its adoption. Cromwell, at this, beckoned to Harrison. "Now is the time," he said; "I must do it!" "Sir," replied Harrison anxiously, "the work is very great and dangerous." "You say well," answered Cromwell, and sat still for another quarter of an hour. Vane ceased speaking; the Speaker rose to put the question, when Cromwell stood up, took off his hat, and began to speak. At first, he expressed himself in terms of commendation of the Parlia-

ment and its members, praising their zeal and care for the public good; but gradually his tone changed, his accents and gestures became more violent; he reproached the members of the House with their delays, their covetousness, their self-interest, their disregard for justice. "You have no heart to do anything for the public good," he exclaimed; "your intention was to perpetuate yourselves in power. But your time is come! The Lord has done with you! He has chosen other instruments for the carrying on His work, that are more worthy. It is the Lord hath taken me by the hand, and set me on to do this thing."

Vane, Wentworth, and Martyn rose to reply to him, but he would not suffer them to speak. "You think, perhaps," he said, "that this is not Parliamentary language; I know it; but expect no other language from me." Wentworth at length made himself heard; he declared that this "was indeed the first time that he had ever heard such unbecoming language given to the Parliament; and that it was the more horrid, in that it came from their servant, and their servant whom they had so highly trusted and obliged, and whom, by their unprecedented bounty, they had made what he was." Cromwell thrust his hat upon his head, sprang from his seat into the center of the floor of the House, and shouted out, "Come, come, we have had enough of this: I'll put an end to your prating — Call them in!" he added briefly to Harrison; the door opened, and twenty or thirty musketeers entered, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Worsley.

"You are no Parliament," cried Cromwell; "I say, you are no Parliament! Begone! Give way to honest

## HOW CROMWELL DISSOLVED PARLIAMENT

men." He walked up and down the floor of the House, stamping his foot, and giving his orders. "Fetch him down," he said to Harrison, pointing to the Speaker, who still remained in his chair. Harrison told him to come down, but Lenthall refused. "Take him down," repeated Cromwell; Harrison laid his hand on the Speaker's gown, and he came down immediately. Algernon Sidney was sitting near the Speaker. "Put him out," said Cromwell to Harrison. Sidney did not move. "Put him out," reiterated Cromwell. Harrison and Worsley laid their hands on Sidney's shoulders, upon which he rose and walked out. "This is not honest," exclaimed Vane; "it is against morality and common honesty!" "Sir Harry Vane! Sir Harry Vane!" replied Cromwell, "you might have prevented this extraordinary course; but you are a juggler, and have not so much as common honesty. The Lord deliver me from Sir Harry Vane!" And, amidst the general confusion, as the members passed out before him, he flung nicknames in the face of each. "Some of you are drunkards!" he said, pointing to Mr. Challoner; "some of you are adulterers!" and he looked at Sir Peter Wentworth; "some of you are corrupt, unjust persons!" and he glanced at Whitelocke and others. He went up to the table on which the mace lay, which was carried before the Speaker, and called to the soldiers, "What shall we do with this bauble? Here, take it away." He frequently repeated, "It is you that have forced me to this, for I have sought the Lord night and day, that he would rather slay me than put me upon the doing of this work." Alderman Allen told him, "That it was not yet gone so far, but all things might be restored again; and that, if the soldiers were



## ENGLAND

commanded out of the House, and the mace returned, the public affairs might go on in their course." Cromwell rejected this advice, and called Allen to account for some hundred thousand pounds which, as treasurer of the army, he had embezzled. Allen replied, "That it was well known that it had not been his fault that his account was not made up long since; that he had often tendered it to the House, and that he asked no favor from any man in that matter." Cromwell ordered him to be arrested, and he was led off by the soldiers. The room was now empty; he seized all the papers, took the Dissolution Bill from the clerk, and put it under his cloak; after which he left the House, ordered the doors to be shut, and returned to Whitehall.

At Whitehall, he found several of his officers, who had remained there to await the event. He related to them what he had done at the House. "When I went there," he said, "I did not think to have done this. But perceiving the Spirit of God so strong upon me, I would not consult flesh and blood."

A few hours later, in the afternoon, he was informed that the Council of State had just assembled in its ordinary place of meeting, in Whitehall itself, under the presidency of Bradshaw. He went to them immediately, followed only by Harrison and Lambert. "Gentlemen," he said, "if you are met here as private persons, you shall not be disturbed; but if as a Council of State, this is no place for you; and since you can't but know what was done at the House this morning, so take notice that the Parliament is dissolved." "Sir," answered Bradshaw, "we have heard what you did at the House in the morning, and before many hours all England will hear it.

## HOW CROMWELL DISSOLVED PARLIAMENT

But, sir, you are mistaken to think that the Parliament is dissolved; for no power under heaven can dissolve them but themselves. Therefore take you notice of that." All then rose and left the room. On the following day, the 21st of April, this announcement appeared in the "Mercurius Politicus," which had become Cromwell's journal: "The Lord-General delivered yesterday in Parliament divers reasons wherefore a present period should be put to the sitting of this Parliament, and it was accordingly done, the Speaker and the members all departing. The grounds of which proceedings will, it is probable, be shortly made public." And, on the same day, a crowd collected at the door of the House to read a large placard which had probably been placed there during the night by some Cavalier who was overjoyed at finding his cause avenged on the Republicans by a regicide; it bore this inscription: —

"This House to be let, unfurnished."

## PRAISE-GOD BAREBONE'S PARLIAMENT

[1653]

BY EDWARD, EARL OF CLARENDON

[AFTER Cromwell's dissolution of the Long Parliament, or "Rump Parliament," as it was also called, he assumed executive authority, and sent a request to the Independent or Congregational churches of the land that they should name persons to form a new Parliament. Cromwell's council chose, chiefly from among the persons thus named, the "Little Parliament," which, from the name of one member, the Royalists called "the Barebone's Parliament."

*The Editor.]*

THERE were amongst them some few of the quality and degree of gentlemen, and who had estates, and such a proportion of credit and reputation, as could consist with the guilt they had contracted. But much the major part of them consisted of inferior persons, of no quality or name, artificers of the meanest trades, known only by their gifts in praying or preaching; which was now practiced by all degrees of men but scholars throughout the kingdom. In which number, that there may be a better judgment made of the rest, it will not be amiss to name one, from whom that Parliament itself was afterwards denominated, who was Praise-God (that was his Christian name) Barebone, a leatherseller in Fleet Street, from whom (he being an eminent speaker in it) it was afterwards called Praise-God Barebone's Parliament. In a word, they were a pack of weak, senseless fellows, fit only to bring the name and reputation of Parliament lower than it was yet.

## PRAISE-GOD BAREBONE'S PARLIAMENT

It was fit these new men should be brought together by some new way: and a very new way it was. For Cromwell, by his warrants, directed to every one of them, telling them "of the necessity of dissolving the late Parliament, and of an equal necessity, that the peace, safety, and good government of the commonwealth should be provided for, and therefore that he had, by the advice of his council of officers, nominated divers persons fearing God, and of approved fidelity and honesty, to whom the great charge and trust of so weighty affairs was to be committed, and that having good assurance of their love to, and courage for God, and the interest of his cause, and the good people of this commonwealth." He concluded in these words, "I, Oliver Cromwell, captain-general and commander-in-chief of all the forces raised, or to be raised, within this commonwealth, do hereby summon and require you personally to be and appear at the council-chamber at Whitehall, upon the fourth day of July next, then and there to take upon you the said trust. And you are hereby called and appointed to serve as a member for the county of," etc. Upon this wild summons, the persons so nominated appeared at the council-chamber upon the 4th of July, which was near three months after the dissolution of the former Parliament.

Cromwell, with his council of officers, was ready to receive them, and made them a long discourse of "the fear of God, and the honor due to his name," full of texts of Scripture; and remembered "the wonderful mercies of God to this nation, and the continued series of Providence, by which he had appeared in carrying on his cause, and bringing affairs into that present glorious condition,

## ENGLAND

wherein they now were." He put them in mind of "the noble actions of the army in the famous victory of Worcester, of the applications they had made to the Parliament, for a good settlement of all the affairs of the commonwealth, the neglect whereof made it absolutely necessary to dissolve it." He assured them by many arguments, some of which were urged out of Scripture, "that they had a very lawful call to take upon them the supreme authority of the nation"; and concluded with a very earnest desire, "that great tenderness might be used towards all conscientious persons, of what judgment soever they appeared to be."

When he had finished his discourse, he delivered to them an instrument, engrossed in parchment under his hand and seal, whereby, with the advice of his council of officers, he did devolve and entrust the supreme authority of this commonwealth into the hands of those persons therein mentioned; and declared, "that they, or any forty of them, were to be held and acknowledged the supreme authority of the nation, to which all persons within the same, and the territories thereunto belonging, were to yield obedience and subjection to the third day of the month of November, which should be in the year 1654," which was about a year and three months from the time that he spoke to them; and three months before the time prescribed should expire, they were to make choice of other persons to succeed them, whose power and authority should not exceed one year, and when they were likewise to provide and take care for a like succession in the government. Being thus invested with this authority, they repaired to the Parliament house, and made choice of one Rouse to be their

## PRAISE-GOD BAREBONE'S PARLIAMENT

Speaker, an old gentleman of Devonshire, who had been a member of the former Parliament, and in that time been preferred and made provost of the college of Eton, which office he then enjoyed, with an opinion of having some knowledge in the Latin and Greek tongues; of a very mean understanding, but thoroughly engaged in the guilt of the times.

At their first coming together, some of them had the modesty to doubt, that they were not in many respects so well qualified as to take upon them the style and title of a Parliament. But that modesty was quickly subdued, and they were easily persuaded to assume that title, and to consider themselves as the supreme authority in the nation. These men thus brought together continued in this capacity near six months, to the amazement and even mirth of the people; in which time they never entered upon any grave and serious debate, that might tend to any settlement, but generally expressed great sharpness and animosity against the clergy, and against all learning, out of which they thought the clergy had grown, and still would grow.

There were now no bishops for them to be angry with; they had already reduced all that order to the lowest beggary. But their quarrel was against all who had called themselves ministers, and who, by being called so, received tithes, and respect from their neighbors. They resolved the function itself to be antichristian, and the persons to be burdensome to the people, and the requiring and payment of tithes to be absolute Judaism, and they thought fit that they should be abolished altogether; and that there might not for the time to come be any race of people who might revive those pretenses,



## ENGLAND

they thought fit, "that all lands belonging to the universities, and colleges in those universities, might be sold, and the monies that should arise thereby, be disposed for the public service, and to ease the people from the payment of taxes and contributions."

When they had tired and perplexed themselves so long in such debates, as soon as they were met in the morning upon the 12th of December, and before many of them were come who were like to dissent from the motion, one of them stood up and declared, "that he did believe, they were not equal to the burden that was laid upon them, and therefore that they might dissolve themselves, and deliver back their authority into the hands from whom they had received it"; which being presently consented to, their Speaker, with those who were of that mind, went to Whitehall, and re-delivered to Cromwell the instrument they had received from him, acknowledged their own impotency, and besought him to take care of the commonwealth.

By this frank donation he and his council of officers were once more possessed of the supreme power of the nation. And in a few days after, his council were too modest to share with him in this royal authority, but declared, "that the government of the commonwealth should reside in a single person; that that person should be Oliver Cromwell, captain-general of all the forces in England, Scotland, and Ireland, and that his title should be Lord Protector of the commonwealths of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and of the dominions and territories thereunto belonging, and that he should have a council of one and twenty persons to be assistant to him in the government."



CROMWELL VISITING MILTON

## CROMWELL VISITING MILTON

BY DAVID NEAL

(*American artist*, 1837)

SEVERAL years before the breaking-out of the Civil War, Milton had already planned his "Paradise Lost"; but he gave this up for the time and devoted himself, heart and mind, to the cause of the Puritans. Save for an occasional sonnet, he wrote prose only; but prose which is often of rare eloquence and harmony. His best-known work of this period is the "Areopagitica," a plea for liberty of the press.

After the execution of Charles I, Milton stood boldly on the side of the Puritans. He was soon made Latin or Foreign Secretary to the Commonwealth. Three years later he had become entirely blind, because of the overwork which his devotion to the State had brought upon his eyes. Of them he writes: —

"What supports me, dost thou ask?  
The conscience, friend, to have lost them overplied  
In Liberty's defense, my noble task."

It was not until some years after the Restoration that he produced his wonderful epic, "Paradise Lost." This was followed by "Paradise Regained" and "Samson Agonistes." Three years after the publication of these latter works, Milton died.

In this picture Cromwell is seen in the house of his Latin Secretary whom he has come to consult, probably, on some business of State. The stern warrior has entered unannounced, but has paused in Milton's study to listen to the music of a spinet played by the great poet in an adjoining alcove.





### III

FROM THE RESTORATION TO  
THE HOUSE OF HANOVER

## HISTORICAL NOTE

CROMWELL died in 1658. His son succeeded him, but was not strong enough to fill his father's place, and resigned at the request of the army. England had wearied of the strict rule of the Puritans, and in 1660, Charles II, son of Charles I, was invited to return. Now came reaction, and at first the country could not do enough for this witty, good-humored sovereign; but it was soon evident that he cared for nothing but his own pleasure. His court was the home of dissoluteness and profligacy.

At the death of Charles II, in 1685, he was succeeded by his brother James. This new ruler had learned nothing from the fate of Charles I, but proceeded to rule as he chose, without regard to the wishes of his subjects. Moreover, he was a Roman Catholic, and was determined to reestablish that form of faith in England. The result was that he was forced to flee from the kingdom, and the throne was given by Parliament to Mary, daughter of James, together with her husband, William of Orange. Parliament took advantage of this bloodless revolution and increased its power at the expense of the throne by enacting a Bill of Rights. This provided that henceforth the cabinet should be responsible to Parliament instead of to the king.

On the death of William of Orange, in 1702, Anne, second daughter of James II, became queen. Her lack of brilliancy of intellect apparently had no effect upon the march of events; for her reign was marked both by brilliant military achievements and by the excellence of its literature. In her first year on the throne, England, Germany, and Holland united in a war against France, known as the War of the Spanish Succession, in which the Duke of Marlborough won victory after victory for his country; and, under Sir Cloudesley Shovel, Gibraltar was taken. By the treaty closing the war, England gained in America Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, and a vast area of land about Hudson's Bay. In 1707, Scotland and England were united under the name of Great Britain.

## IN THE DAYS OF THE PLAGUE

[1665]

BY DANIEL DEFOE

[IN 1665, a terrible plague swept over England. The most vivid of all the accounts of this awful visitation was written by Daniel Defoe. He was a boy of five at the time of the pestilence, but his descriptions are so realistic that his work has often been accepted for what it claims to be, namely, a diary of the times.

*The Editor.]*

It is incredible and scarcely to be imagined, how the posts and corners of streets were plastered over with doctors' bills, and papers of ignorant fellows quacking and tampering in physic, inviting the people to come to them for remedies; which [invitation] was generally set off with such flourishes as these, viz.:—INFALLIBLE PREVENTIVE PILLS against the Plague,—NEVER-FAILING PRESERVATIVES against the infection,—SOVEREIGN CORDIALS against the corruption of the air,—EXACT REGULATIONS for the conduct of the body in case of an infection,—ANTI-PESTILENTIAL PILLS,—INCOMPARABLE DRINK against the Plague, never found out before,—AN UNIVERSAL REMEDY for the Plague,—THE ONLY TRUE PLAGUE WATER,—THE ROYAL ANTIDOTE against all kinds of infection; and such a number more that I cannot reckon up: and if I could, it would fill a book of themselves to set them down.



## ENGLAND

Others set up bills to summon people to their lodgings for directions and advice in the case of infection: these had specious titles also, such as these: —

An eminent High-Dutch Physician, newly come over from Holland, where he resided during all the time of the great Plague, last year, in Amsterdam, and cured multitudes of people that actually had the Plague upon them.

An Italian Gentlewoman, just arrived from Naples, having a choice secret to prevent Infection, which she found out by her great experience, and did wonderful cures with it in the late Plague there, wherein there died 20,000 in one day.

An ancient Gentlewoman having practiced with great success in the late Plague in this city, Anno 1636, gives her advice only to the Female sex. To be spoken with, etc.

An experienced Physician, who has long studied the Doctrine of Antidotes against all sorts of poison and infection, has, after forty years' practice, arrived to such skill as may, with God's blessing, direct Persons how to prevent their being touched by any contagious distemper whatever. He directs the Poor *gratis*.

I take notice of these by way of specimen. I could give you two or three dozen of the like, and yet have abundance left behind. 'Tis sufficient from these to apprise any one of the humor of those times; and how a set of thieves and pick-pockets not only robbed and cheated the poor people of their money, but poisoned their bodies with odious and fatal preparations; some

## IN THE DAYS OF THE PLAGUE

with mercury, and some with other things as bad, perfectly remote from the thing pretended to; and rather hurtful than serviceable to the body, in case an infection followed.

I cannot omit a subtlety of one of those quack operators, with which he gulled the poor people to crowd about him, but did nothing for them without money. He had, it seems, added to his bills which he gave about the streets, this advertisement in capital letters, viz. — **HE GIVES ADVICE TO THE POOR FOR NOTHING.**

Abundance of poor people came to him accordingly, to whom he made a great many fine speeches, examined them of the state of their health, and of the constitution of their bodies, and told them many good things for them to do, which were of no great moment; but the issue and conclusion of all was that he had a preparation which, if they took such a quantity of, every morning, he would pawn his life they should never have the Plague, — no, though they lived in the house with people that were infected. This made the people all resolve to have it; but then the price of that was so much, I think 't was half a crown. “But, sir,” says one poor woman, “I am a poor alms-woman, and am kept by the parish, and your bills say, you give the poor your help for nothing.” “Ay, good woman,” says the doctor, “so I do, as I published there: I give my *advice* to the poor for nothing, but not my physic!” “Alas, sir,” says she, “that is a snare laid for the poor, then; for you give them your advice for nothing, that is to say, you advise them gratis, to buy your physic for their money, so does every shop-keeper with his wares.” Here the woman began to give him ill words, and stood at his door all that day, telling

her tale to all the people that came, till the doctor, finding she turned away his customers, was obliged to call her up stairs again, and give her his box of physic for nothing, — which, perhaps too, was *good for nothing when she had it*.

But to return to the people, whose confusion fitted them to be imposed upon by all sorts of pretenders, and by every mountebank. There is no doubt but these quacking sorts of fellows raised great gains out of the miserable people; for we daily found the crowds that ran after them were infinitely greater, and their doors were more thronged than those of *Dr. Brooks, Dr. Upton, Dr. Hodges, Dr. Berwick*, or any, though the most famous men of the times; and I was told that some of them got five pounds a day by their physic.

But there was still another madness beyond all this, which may serve to give an idea of the distracted humor of the poor people at that time; and this was their following a worse sort of deceivers than any of the above; for these petty thieves only deluded them to pick their pockets, and get their money, in which their wickedness, whatever it was, lay chiefly on the side of the deceiver's deceiving, not upon the deceived: — but in this part I am going to mention, it lay chiefly in the people deceived, or equally in both; and this was in wearing charms, philters, exorcisms, amulets, and I know not what preparations, to fortify the body with them against the Plague; as if the Plague was not the Hand of God, but a kind of possession of an Evil Spirit; and that it was to be kept off with crossings, signs of the zodiac, papers tied up with so many knots, and certain words or figures written on them, as particularly the word

## IN THE DAYS OF THE PLAGUE

ABRACADABRA, formed in triangle or pyramid, thus: —

```

A B R A C A D A B R A
A B R A C A D A B R
A B R A C A D A B
A B R A C A D A
A B R A C A D
A B R A C A
A B R A C
A B R A
A B R
A B
A

```

Others had the Jesuits' mark in a cross:

I H  
S

Others nothing but this mark, thus :



I might spend a great deal of time in my exclamations against the follies, and, indeed, the wickedness of those things, in a time of such danger, in a matter of such consequences as this of a National Infection. But my memorandums of these things relate rather to take notice only of the fact, and mention only that it was so. How the poor people found the insufficiency of those things, and how many of them were afterwards carried away in the dead-carts, and thrown into the common graves of every parish, with these hellish charms and trumpery hanging about their necks, remains to be spoken of as we go along.

All this was the effect of the hurry the people were in, after the first notion of the Plague being at hand was among them; and which may be said to be from about Michaelmas, 1664, but more particularly after the two men died in St. Giles's, in the beginning of December; and again, after another alarm, in February: for when the Plague evidently spread itself, they soon began to see the folly of trusting to those unperforming creatures

## ENGLAND

who had gulled them of their money; and then their fears worked another way, namely, to amazement and stupidity, not knowing what course to take, nor what to do, either to help or relieve themselves; but they ran about from one neighbor's house to another, and even in the streets from one door to another, with repeated cries of, "*Lord, have mercy upon us, what shall we do?*"

Indeed, the poor people were to be pitied in one particular thing, in which they had little or no relief, and which I desire to mention with a serious awe and reflection, which, perhaps, every one that reads this may not relish; namely, that whereas Death now began not, *as we may say*, to hover over every one's head only, but to look into their houses and chambers, and stare in their faces; though there might be some stupidity and dullness of the mind, and there was so, a great deal; yet there was a great deal of just alarm. sounded in the very inmost soul, *if I may so say*, of others. Many consciences were awakened; many hard hearts melted into tears; and many a penitent confession was made of crimes long concealed. It would have wounded the soul of any Christian to have heard the dying groans of many a despairing creature; and none durst come near to comfort them. Many a robbery, many a murder, was then confessed aloud, and nobody surviving to record the accounts of it. People might be heard, even in the streets as we passed along, calling upon God for mercy, through Jesus Christ, and saying, — "I have been a thief — I have been a murderer," — and the like; and none durst stop to make the least inquiry into such things, or to administer comfort to the poor creatures that in the anguish both of soul and body thus cried out. Some of

## IN THE DAYS OF THE PLAGUE

the ministers did visit the sick at first and for a little while, but it was not to be done; it would have been present Death to have gone into some houses. The very buriers of the dead, who were the most hardened creatures in town, were sometimes beaten back, and so terrified that they durst not go into the houses where whole families were swept away together, and where the circumstances were most particularly horrible, as some were; but this was, indeed, at the first heat of the distemper.

Time inured them to it all; and they ventured everywhere afterwards without hesitation, as I shall have occasion to mention at large hereafter.

I am supposing now the Plague to be begun, as I have said, and that the Magistrates began to take the condition of the people into their serious consideration. What they did as to the regulation of inhabitants and of infected families, I shall speak to by itself; but as to the affair of health, it is proper to mention it here; that having seen the foolish humor of the people in running after quacks and mountebanks, wizards, and fortune-tellers (which they did as above, even to madness) the Lord Mayor, a very sober and religious gentleman, appointed Physicians and Surgeons for the relief of the poor; I mean, the diseased poor; and in particular, ordered the College of Physicians to publish directions for cheap remedies for the poor, in all circumstances of the distemper. This, indeed, was one of the most charitable and judicious things that could be done at that time; for this drove the people from haunting the doors of every dispenser of bills; and from taking down blindly, and without consideration, Poison for Physic, and Death instead of Life.



## THE FALL OF "KING MONMOUTH"

[1685]

BY CHARLES DICKENS

[JAMES II was a Roman Catholic and the country preferred to have a Protestant ruler. Some were eager to give the crown to the Duke of Monmouth, an illegitimate son of Charles II, who was a Protestant. "King Monmouth," as he was called by his supporters, came over from Holland fully expecting to be made sovereign of England.

*The Editor.]*

HE immediately set up his standard in the market place, and proclaimed the king a tyrant, and a Popish usurper, and I know not what else; charging him, not only with what he had done, which was bad enough, but with what neither he nor anybody else had done, such as setting fire to London, and poisoning the late king. Raising some four thousand men by these means, he marched on to Taunton, where there were many Protestant dissenters who were strongly opposed to the Catholics. Here, both the rich and poor turned out to receive him, ladies waved a welcome to him from all the windows as he passed along the streets, flowers were strewn in his way, and every compliment and honor that could be devised was showered upon him. Among the rest, twenty young ladies came forward, in their best clothes, and in their brightest beauty, and gave him a Bible ornamented with their own fair hands, together with other presents.



## THE FALL OF KING MONMOUTH

Encouraged by this homage, he proclaimed himself king, and went on to Bridgewater. But, here the Government troops, under the Earl of Feversham, were close at hand; and he was so dispirited at finding that he made but few powerful friends after all, that it was a question whether he should disband his army and endeavor to escape. It was resolved, at the instance of that unlucky Lord Grey, to make a night attack on the king's army, as it lay encamped on the edge of a morass called Sedgemoor. The horsemen were commanded by the same unlucky lord, who was not a brave man. He gave up the battle almost at the first obstacle — which was a deep drain; and although the poor countrymen who had turned out for Monmouth fought bravely with scythes, poles, pitchforks, and such poor weapons as they had, they were soon dispersed by the trained soldiers, and fled in all directions. When the Duke of Monmouth himself fled was not known in the confusion; but the unlucky Lord Grey was taken early next day, and then another of the party was taken, who had confessed that he had parted from the duke only four hours before. Strict search being made, he was found disguised as a peasant, hidden in a ditch under fern and nettles, with a few peas in his pocket which he had gathered in the fields to eat. The only other articles he had upon him were a few papers and little books: one of the latter being a strange jumble, in his own writing, of charms, songs, recipes, and prayers. He was completely broken. He wrote a miserable letter to the king, beseeching and entreating to be allowed to see him. When he was taken to London, and conveyed bound into the king's presence, he crawled to him on his knees, and made a most

## ENGLAND

degrading exhibition. As James never forgave or relented towards anybody, he was not likely to soften towards the issuer of the Lyme Proclamation, so he told the suppliant to prepare for death.

On the 15th of July, 1685, this unfortunate favorite of the people was brought out to die on Tower Hill. The crowd was immense, and the tops of all the houses were covered with gazers. He had seen his wife, the daughter of the Duke of Buccleuch, in the Tower, and had talked much of a lady whom he loved far better — the Lady Harriet Wentworth — who was one of the last persons he remembered in this life. Before laying down his head upon the block he felt the edge of the axe, and told the executioner that he feared it was not sharp enough, and that the axe was not heavy enough. On the executioner replying that it was of the proper kind, the duke said, "I pray you have a care, and do not use me so awkwardly as you used my Lord Russell." The executioner, made nervous by this, and trembling, struck once, and merely gashed him in the neck. Upon this, the Duke of Monmouth raised his head and looked the man reproachfully in the face. Then he struck twice, and then thrice, and then threw down the axe, and cried out in a voice of horror that he could not finish that work. The sheriffs, however, threatening him with what should be done to himself if he did not, he took it up again and struck a fourth time and a fifth time. Then the wretched head at last fell off, and James, Duke of Monmouth, was dead, in the thirty-sixth year of his age. He was a showy, graceful man, with many proper qualities, and had found much favor in the open hearts of the English.

The atrocities committed by the Government, which

## THE FALL OF KING MONMOUTH

followed this Monmouth Rebellion, form the blackest and most lamentable page in English history. The poor peasants, having been dispersed with great loss, and their leaders having been taken, one would think that the implacable king might have been satisfied. But no; he let loose upon them, among other intolerable monsters, a Colonel Kirk, who had served against the Moors, and whose soldiers — called by the people “Kirk’s Lambs,” because they bore a lamb upon their flag, as the emblem of Christianity — were worthy of their leader. The atrocities committed by these demons in human shape are far too horrible to be related here. It is enough to say that besides most ruthlessly murdering and robbing them, and ruining them by making them buy their pardons at the price of all they possessed, it was one of Kirk’s favorite amusements, as he and his officers sat drinking after dinner, and toasting the king, to have batches of prisoners hanged outside the windows for the company’s diversion; and that when their feet quivered in the convulsions of death, he used to swear that they should have music to their dancing, and would order the drums to beat and the trumpets to play. The detestable king informed him, as an acknowledgment of these services, that he was “very well satisfied with his proceedings.” But the king’s great delight was in the proceedings of Jeffreys, now a peer, who went down into the west, with four other judges, to try persons accused of having had any share in the rebellion. The king pleasantly called this “Jeffreys’s campaign.” The people down in that part of the country remember it to this day as the “Bloody Assize.”

It began at Winchester, where a poor deaf old lady,

## ENGLAND

Mrs. Alicia Lisle, the widow of one of the judges of Charles I (who had been murdered abroad by some Royalist assassins), was charged with having given shelter in her house to two fugitives from Sedgemoor. Three times the jury refused to find her guilty, until Jeffreys bullied and frightened them into that false verdict. When he had extorted it from them, he said, "Gentlemen, if I had been one of you, and she had been my own mother, I would have found her guilty"; — as I dare say he would. He sentenced her to be burned alive, that very afternoon. The clergy of the cathedral and some others interfered in her favor, and she was beheaded within a week. As a high mark of his approbation, the king made Jeffreys Lord Chancellor; and he then went on to Dorchester, to Exeter, to Taunton, and to Wells. It is astonishing, when we read of the enormous injustice and barbarity of this beast, to know that no one struck him dead on the judgment-seat. It was enough for any man or woman to be accused by an enemy, before Jeffreys, to be found guilty of high treason. One man who pleaded not guilty, he ordered to be taken out of court upon the instant, and hanged; and this so terrified the prisoners in general that they mostly pleaded guilty at once. At Dorchester alone, in the course of a few days, Jeffreys hanged eighty people; besides whipping, transporting, imprisoning, and selling as slaves, great numbers. He executed, in all, two hundred and fifty, or three hundred.

These executions took place, among the neighbors and friends of the sentenced, in thirty-six towns and villages. Their bodies were mangled, steeped in caldrons of boiling pitch and tar, and hung up by the roadsides, in the streets, over the very churches. The sight and

## THE FALL OF KING MONMOUTH

smell of heads and limbs, the hissing and bubbling of the infernal caldrons, and the tears and terrors of the people, were dreadful beyond all description. One rustic, who was forced to steep the remains in the black pot, was ever afterwards called "Tom Boilman." The hangman has ever since been called "Jack Ketch," because a man of that name went hanging and hanging, all day long, in the train of Jeffreys. You will hear much of the horrors of the great French Revolution. Many and terrible they were, there is no doubt; but I know of nothing worse, done by the maddened people of France in that awful time, than was done by the highest judge in England, with the express approval of the King of England, in the "Bloody Assize."

Nor was even this all. Jeffreys was as fond of money for himself as of misery for others, and he sold pardons wholesale to fill his pockets. The king ordered, at one time, a thousand prisoners to be given to certain of his favorites, in order that they might bargain with them for their pardons. The young ladies of Taunton who had presented the Bible were bestowed upon the maids of honor at court; and those precious ladies made very hard bargains with them, indeed. When the "Bloody Assize" was at its most dismal height, the king was diverting himself with horse-races in the very place where Mrs. Lisle had been executed. When Jeffreys had done his worst, and came home again, he was particularly complimented in the Royal Gazette; and when the king heard that through drunkenness and raging he was very ill, his odious Majesty remarked that such another man could not easily be found in England. Besides all this, a former sheriff of London, named Cornish, was hanged

## ENGLAND

within sight of his own house, after an abominably conducted trial, for having had a share in the Rye House Plot, on evidence given by Rumsey, which that villain was obliged to confess was directly opposed to the evidence he had given on the trial of Lord Russell. And on the very same day, a worthy widow, named Elizabeth Gaunt, was burned alive at Tyburn, for having sheltered a wretch who himself gave evidence against her. She settled the fuel about herself with her own hands, so that the flames should reach her quickly: and nobly said, with her last breath, that she had obeyed the sacred command of God, to give refuge to the outcast, and not to betray the wanderer.

# THE SONG OF THE WESTERN MEN

[1688]

BY ROBERT STEPHEN HAWKER

[JAMES II, in his determination to restore the Roman Catholic Church in England, issued a declaration granting religious freedom to all, and ordered that it be read in every church in the land. Even those who would have rejoiced to have such a law, knew that laws must be made not by the king, but by Parliament. The Archbishop of Canterbury and six other bishops protested, and were thrown into prison. Among them was Trelawney, a popular Cornishman.

*The Editor.]*

A GOOD sword and a trusty hand!  
A merry heart and true!  
King James's men shall understand  
What Cornish lads can do.

And have they fixed the where and when?  
And shall Trelawney die?  
Here's twenty thousand Cornishmen  
Will know the reason why!

Out spake their captain brave and bold,  
A merry wight was he:  
"If London Tower were Michael's Hold,  
We'll set Trelawney free!

"We'll cross the Tamar, land to land,  
The Severn is no stay,



## ENGLAND

With 'one and all,' and hand in hand,  
And who shall bid us nay?

“And when we come to London Wall,  
A pleasant sight to view,  
Come forth! come forth! ye cowards all!  
Here's men as good as you!

“Trelawney he's in keep and hold,  
Trelawney he may die;  
But here's twenty thousand Cornish bold,  
Will know the reason why!”

JAMES II RECEIVING THE NEWS OF THE  
LANDING OF THE PRINCE OF ORANGE

## JAMES II RECEIVING THE NEWS OF THE LANDING OF THE PRINCE OF ORANGE

BY EDWARD MATTHEW WARD

(*English artist, 1816-1879*)

ENGLAND had borne with James II in the expectation that before many years he would be succeeded by his daughter; but at the announcement that a son had been born to him, the country was in despair, and invited William of Orange — husband of James's daughter Mary — to come and lead a rising against the king.

The illustration pictures the dismay of James on hearing of the welcome received by William on his arrival. The letter making the announcement is falling from his hand. Back of him is the execrable Judge Jeffreys. Beside him is the queen, who points to the baby prince, as if to arouse James to defend the future of his son. Behind the screen is the Lord in Waiting who has brought the letter. Apparently he surmises its contents, and is intently listening to observe their effect. The scene is laid in the royal apartment at Whitehall Palace.

William of Orange landed on November 5, 1688. On December 11, James, realizing that resistance was hopeless, fled without hazarding a blow. He was captured and brought back to London, but escaped to France, where he was given a home and a pension by King Louis XIV.





## A CAMPAIGN UNDER MARLBOROUGH

BY WILLIAM MAKEPEACE THACKERAY

[JOHN CHURCHILL, Duke of Marlborough, one of the greatest as well as one of the most unscrupulous figures of the period, was born in 1650 and educated as a soldier. He attained a high position under James II, but was one of the first to desert that monarch on the landing of William of Orange, by whom he was created earl. His wife, Sarah, was the favorite and virtual ruler of the Princess Anne, and on Anne's accession to the throne, Marlborough was given command of the united armies of England, Holland, and Germany in the War of the Spanish Succession against Louis XIV of France. He proved to be the most brilliant general of his age, winning every battle in which he commanded. But at home his wife's influence was slowly undermined by the duke's enemies. In 1711, the duchess was superseded by a new favorite; Marlborough, left at the mercy of his rivals, was accused of peculation and dismissed from all offices, and the war was ended by the Peace of Utrecht (1713).

*The Editor.]*

HIS GRACE, the captain-general, went to England after Bonn, and our army fell back into Holland, where, in April, 1704, His Grace again found the troops, embarking from Harwich and landing at Maesland Sluys: thence His Grace came immediately to The Hague, where he received the foreign ministers, general officers, and other people of quality. The greatest honors were paid to His Grace everywhere — at The Hague, Utrecht, Ruremonde, and Maestricht; the civil authorities coming to meet his coaches; salvos of cannon saluting him, cano-

## ENGLAND

pies of state being erected for him where he stopped, and feasts prepared for the numerous gentlemen following in his suite. His Grace reviewed the troops of the States-General between Liège and Maestricht, and afterwards the English forces, under the command of General Churchill, near Bois-le-Duc. Every preparation was made for a long march; and the army heard, with no small elation, that it was the commander-in-chief's intention to carry the war out of the Low Countries, and march on the Mozelle. Before leaving our camp at Maestricht we heard that the French, under the Marshal Villeroy, were also bound towards the Mozelle.

Towards the end of May, the army reached Coblenz; and next day, His Grace, and the generals accompanying him, went to visit the Elector of Trèves at his castle of Ehrenbreitstein, the horse and dragoons passing the Rhine whilst the duke was entertained at a grand feast by the elector. All as yet was novelty, festivity, and splendor — a brilliant march of a great and glorious army through a friendly country, and sure through some of the most beautiful scenes of nature which I ever witnessed.

The foot and artillery, following after the horse as quick as possible, crossed the Rhine under Ehrenbreitstein, and so to Castel, over against Mainz, in which city His Grace, his generals, and his retinue were received at the landing-place by the elector's coaches, carried to His Highness's palace amidst the thunder of cannon, and then once more magnificently entertained. Gidlingen, in Bavaria, was appointed as the general rendezvous of the army, and thither, by different routes, the whole forces of English, Dutch, Danes, and



## A CAMPAIGN UNDER MARLBOROUGH

German auxiliaries took their way. The foot and artillery under General Churchill passed the Neckar, at Heidelberg; and Esmond had an opportunity of seeing that city and palace, once so famous and beautiful (though shattered and battered by the French, under Turenne, in the late war), where his grandsire had served the beautiful and unfortunate Electress-Palatine, the first King Charles's sister.

At Mindelsheim, the famous Prince of Savoy came to visit our commander, all of us crowding eagerly to get a sight of that brilliant and intrepid warrior; and our troops were drawn up in battalia before the prince, who was pleased to express his admiration of this noble English army. At length we came in sight of the enemy between Dillingen and Lawinge, the Brentz lying between the two armies. The elector, judging that Donauwört would be the point of His Grace's attack, sent a strong detachment of his best troops to Count Darcos, who was posted at Schellenberg, near that place, where great intrenchments were thrown up, and thousands of pioneers employed to strengthen the position.

On the 2d of July His Grace stormed the post, with what success on our part need scarce be told. His Grace advanced with six thousand foot, English and Dutch, thirty squadrons, and three regiments of Imperial Cuirassiers, the duke crossing the river at the head of the cavalry. Although our troops made the attack with unparalleled courage and fury, — rushing up to the very guns of the enemy, and being slaughtered before their works, — we were driven back many times, and should not have carried them, but that the Imperialists came up under the Prince of Baden, when the enemy could

## ENGLAND

make no head against us: we pursued him into the trenches, making a terrible slaughter there, and into the very Danube, where a great part of his troops, following the example of their generals, Count Darcos and the elector himself, tried to save themselves by swimming. Our army entered Donauwort, which the Bavarians evacuated; and where 't was said the elector purposed to have given us a warm reception by burning us in our beds; the cellars of the houses, when we took possession of them, being found stuffed with straw. But though the links were there, the link-boys had run away. The townsmen saved their houses, and our general took possession of the enemy's ammunition in the arsenals, his stores, and magazines. Five days afterwards a great *Te Deum* was sung in Prince Lewis's army, and a solemn day of thanksgiving held in our own; the Prince of Savoy's compliments coming to His Grace, the captain-general, during the day's religious ceremony, and concluding, as it were, with an "Amen."

And now, having seen a great military march through a friendly country; the pomps and festivities of more than one German court; the severe struggle of a hotly contested battle, and the triumph of victory, Mr. Esmond beheld another part of military duty: our troops entering the enemy's territory, and putting all around them to fire and sword; burning farms, wasted fields, shrieking women, slaughtered sons and fathers, and drunken soldiery, cursing and carousing in the midst of tears, terror, and murder. Why does the stately Muse of History, that delights in describing the valor of heroes and the grandeur of conquest, leave out these scenes, so brutal, mean, and degrading, that yet form by far the greater

## A CAMPAIGN UNDER MARLBOROUGH

part of the drama of war? You, gentlemen of England, who live at home at ease, and compliment yourselves in the songs of triumph with which our chieftains are bepraised — you, pretty maidens, that come tumbling down the stairs when the fife and drum call you, and huzzah for the British Grenadiers — do you take account that these items go to make up the amount of the triumph you admire, and form part of the duties of the heroes you fondle? Our chief, whom England and all Europe, saving only the Frenchmen, worshiped almost, had this of the godlike in him, that he was impassible before victory, before danger, before defeat. Before the greatest obstacle or the most trivial ceremony; before a hundred thousand men drawn in battalia, or a peasant slaughtered at the door of his burning hovel; before a carouse of drunken German lords, or a monarch's court, or a cottage table where his plans were laid, or an enemy's battery, vomiting flame and death, and strewing corpses round about him; — he was always cold, calm, resolute, like fate. He performed a treason or a court-bow, he told a falsehood as black as Styx, as easily as he paid a compliment or spoke about the weather. He betrayed his benefactor, and supported him, or would have murdered him, with the same calmness always, and having no more remorse than Clotho when she weaves the thread, or Lachesis when she cuts it. In the hour of battle, I have heard the Prince of Savoy's officers say, the prince became possessed with a sort of warlike fury; his eyes lighted up; he rushed hither and thither, raging; he shrieked curses and encouragement, yelling and harking his bloody war-dogs on, and himself always at the first of the hunt. Our

## ENGLAND

duke was as calm at the mouth of the cannon as at the door of the drawing-room. Perhaps he could not have been the great man he was, had he had a heart either for love or hatred, or pity or fear, or regret or remorse. He achieved the highest deed of daring, or deepest calculation of thought, as he performed the very meanest action of which a man is capable; told a lie, or cheated a fond woman, or robbed a poor beggar of a halfpenny, with a like awful serenity and equal capacity of the highest and lowest acts of our nature.

His qualities were pretty well known in the army, where there were parties of all politics, and of plenty of shrewdness and wit; but there existed such a perfect confidence in him, as the first captain of the world, and such a faith and admiration in his prodigious genius and fortune, that the very men whom he notoriously cheated of their pay, the chiefs whom he used and injured, — for he used all men, great and small, that came near him, as his instruments alike, and took something of theirs, either some quality or some property, — the blood of a soldier, it might be, or a jeweled hat, or a hundred thousand crowns from a king, or a portion out of a starving sentinel's three farthings; or (when he was young) a kiss from a woman, and the gold chain off her neck, taking all he could from woman or man, and having, as I have said, this of the godlike in him, that he could see a hero perish or a sparrow fall, with the same amount of sympathy for either. Not that he had no tears: he could always order up this reserve at the proper moment to battle; he could draw upon tears or smiles alike, and whenever need was for using this cheap coin. He would cringe to a bootblack, as he would flatter a minister or a

## A CAMPAIGN UNDER MARLBOROUGH

monarch; be haughty, be humble, threaten, repent, weep, grasp your hand (or stab you whenever he saw occasion). But yet those of the army, who knew him best and had suffered most from him, admired him most of all: and as he rode along the lines to battle, or galloped up in the nick of time to a battalion reeling from before the enemy's charge or shot, the fainting men and officers got new courage as they saw the splendid calm of his face, and felt that his will made them irresistible.

After the great victory of Blenheim the enthusiasm of the army for the duke, even of his bitterest personal enemies in it, amounted to a sort of rage — nay, the very officers who cursed him in their hearts were among the most frantic to cheer him. Who could refuse his meed of admiration to such a victory and such a victor? Not he who writes: a man may profess to be ever so much a philosopher; but he who fought on that day must feel a thrill of pride as he recalls it.

The French right was posted near to the village of Blenheim, on the Danube, where the Marshal Tallard's quarters were; their line extending through, it may be a league and a half, before Lutzingen and up to a woody hill, round the base of which, and acting against the Prince of Savoy, were forty of his squadrons.

Here was a village which the Frenchmen had burned, the wood being, in fact, a better shelter and easier of guard than any village.

Before these two villages and the French lines ran a little stream, not more than two foot broad, through a marsh (that was mostly dried up from the heats of the weather), and this stream was the only separation between the two armies — ours coming up and ranging

## ENGLAND

themselves in line of battle before the French, at six o'clock in the morning; so that our line was quite visible to theirs; and the whole of this great plain was black and swarming with troops for hours before the cannonading began.

On one side and the other this cannonading lasted many hours; the French guns being in position in front of their line, and doing severe damage among our horse especially, and on our right wing of Imperialists under the Prince of Savoy, who could neither advance his artillery nor his lines, the ground before him being cut up by ditches, morasses, and very difficult of passage for the guns.

It was past midday when the attack began on our left, where Lord Cutts commanded, the bravest and most beloved officer in the English army. And now, as if to make his experience in war complete, our young aide-de-camp having seen two great armies facing each other in line of battle, and had the honor of riding with orders from one end to other of the line, came in for a not uncommon accompaniment of military glory, and was knocked on the head, along with many hundred of brave fellows, almost at the very commencement of this famous day of Blenheim.

A little after noon, the disposition for attack being completed with much delay and difficulty, and under a severe fire from the enemy's guns, that were better posted and more numerous than ours, a body of English and Hessians, with Major-General Wilkes commanding at the extreme left of our line, marched upon Blenheim, advancing with great gallantry, the Major-General on foot, with his officers, at the head of the column, and



## A CAMPAIGN UNDER MARLBOROUGH

marching, with his hat off, intrepidly in the face of the enemy, who was pouring in a tremendous fire from his guns and musketry, to which our people were instructed not to reply, except with pike and bayonet when they reached the French palisades. To these Wilkes walked intrepidly, and struck the woodwork with his sword before our people charged it. He was shot down at the instant, with his colonel, major, and several officers; and our troops, cheering and huzzaing, and coming on, as they did, with immense resolution and gallantry, were nevertheless stopped by the murderous fire from behind the enemy's defenses, and then attacked in flank by a furious charge of French horse which swept out of Blenheim, and cut down our men in great numbers. Three fierce and desperate assaults of our foot were made and repulsed by the enemy; so that our columns of foot were quite shattered, and fell back, scrambling over the little rivulet, which we had crossed so resolutely an hour before, and pursued by the French cavalry, slaughtering us and cutting us down.

And now the conquerors were met by a furious charge of English horse under Esmond's General, General Lumley, behind whose squadrons the flying foot found refuge, and formed again, whilst Lumley drove back the French horse, charging up to the village of Blenheim and the palisades where Wilkes, and many hundred more gallant Englishmen, lay in slaughtered heaps. Beyond this moment, and of this famous victory, Mr. Esmond knows nothing; for a shot brought down his horse and our young gentleman on it, who fell crushed and stunned under the animal, and came to his senses he knows not how long after, only to lose them again



## ENGLAND

from pain and loss of blood. A dim sense as of people groaning round about him, a wild incoherent thought or two for her who occupied so much of his heart now, and that here his career, and his hopes, and misfortunes were ended, he remembers in the course of these hours. When he woke up, it was with a pang of extreme pain, his breastplate was taken off, his servant was holding his head up, the good and faithful lad of Hampshire was blubbering over his master, whom he found and had thought dead, and a surgeon was probing a wound in his shoulder, which he must have got at the same moment when his horse was shot and fell over him. The battle was over at this end of the field, by this time; the village was in possession of the English, its brave defenders prisoners, or fled, or drowned, many of them, in the neighboring waters of Donau.

# THE GOVERNMENT IN QUEST OF A POET

BY WILLIAM MAKEPEACE THACKERAY

[IN 1704, the Government set out in quest of a poet to compose a poem on Marlborough's victory at Blenheim. Some one recommended a young man named Joseph Addison, and he was chosen. In the poem which he produced there were two lines that especially delighted the Government and the people. In these he compared Marlborough to an angel who,

“Pleased the Almighty's orders to perform,  
Rides on the whirlwind and directs the storm.”

Addison was given one office after another, and he won both political and literary glory. In the following extract he is pictured as in the act of composing this poem.

*The Editor.]*

QUITTING the Guard table one Sunday afternoon, when by chance Dick<sup>1</sup> had a sober fit upon him, he and his friend were making their way down Germain Street, and Dick all of a sudden left his companion's arm, and ran after a gentleman who was poring over a folio volume at the bookshop near St. James's Church. He was a fair, tall man, in a snuff-colored suit, with a plain sword, very sober and almost shabby in appearance — at least when compared to Captain Steele, who loved to adorn his jolly round person with the finest of clothes, and shone in scarlet and gold lace. The captain rushed up, then, to the student of the book-stall, took him in his arms, hugged him, and would have kissed him, — for Dick was always hugging and bussing his friends, — but the

<sup>1</sup> Richard Steele.

other stepped back with a flush on his pale face, seeming to decline this public manifestation of Steele's regard.

"My dearest Joe, where hast thou hidden thyself this age?" cries the captain, still holding his friend's hands; "I have been languishing for thee this fortnight."

"A fortnight is not an age, Dick," says the other, very good-humoredly. (He had light blue eyes, extraordinary bright, and a face perfectly regular and handsome, like a tinted statue.) "And I have been hiding myself — where do you think?"

"What! not across the water, my dear Joe?" says Steele, with a look of great alarm: "thou knowest I have always —"

"No," says his friend, interrupting him with a smile: "we are not come to such straits as that, Dick. I have been hiding, sir, at a place where people never think of finding you — at my own lodgings, whither I am going to smoke a pipe now and drink a glass of sack: will your honor come?"

"Harry Esmond, come hither," cries out Dick. "Thou hast heard me talk over and over again of my dearest Joe, my guardian angel?"

"Indeed," says Mr. Esmond, with a bow, "it is not from you only that I have learned to admire Mr. Addison. We loved good poetry at Cambridge as well as at Oxford; and I have some of yours by heart, though I have put on a red coat. . . . *O qui canoro blandius Orpheo vocale ducis carmen*; shall I go on, sir?" says Mr. Esmond, who, indeed, had read and loved the charming Latin poems of Mr. Addison, as every scholar of that time knew and admired them.

## THE GOVERNMENT IN QUEST OF A POET

"This is Captain Esmond who was at Blenheim," says Steele.

"Lieutenant Esmond," says the other, with a low bow, "at Mr. Addison's service."

"I have heard of you," says Mr. Addison with a smile; as, indeed, everybody about town had heard that unlucky story about Esmond's dowager aunt and the duchess.

"We were going to the 'George' to take a bottle before the play," says Steele: "wilt thou be one, Joe?"

Mr. Addison said his own lodgings were hard by, where he was still rich enough to give a good bottle of wine to his friends; and invited the two gentlemen to his apartment in the Haymarket, whither we accordingly went.

"I shall get credit with my landlady," says he with a smile, "when she sees two such fine gentlemen as you come up my stair." And he politely made his visitors welcome to his apartment, which was indeed but a shabby one, though no grandee of the land could receive his guests with a more perfect and courtly grace than this gentleman. A frugal dinner, consisting of a slice of meat and a penny loaf, was awaiting the owner of the lodgings. "My wine is better than my meat," says Mr. Addison; "my Lord Halifax sent me the burgundy." And he set a bottle and glasses before his friends, and ate his simple dinner in a very few minutes, after which the three fell to and began to drink. "You see," says Mr. Addison, pointing to his writing-table, whereon was a map of the action at Hochstedt, and several other gazettes and pamphlets relating to the battle, "that I, too, am busy about your affairs, captain. I am en-

## ENGLAND

gaged as a poetical gazetteer, to say truth, and am writing a poem on the campaign."

So Esmond, at the request of the host, told him what he knew about the famous battle, drew the river on the table *aliquo mero*,<sup>1</sup> and with the aid of some bits of tobacco-pipe showed the advance of the left wing, where he had been engaged.

A sheet or two of the verses lay already on the table beside our bottles and glasses, and Dick, having plentifully refreshed himself from the latter, took up the pages of manuscript, writ out with scarce a blot or correction, in the author's slim, neat handwriting, and began to read therefrom with great emphasis and volubility. At pauses of the verse, the enthusiastic reader stopped and fired off a great salvo of applause.

Esmond smiled at the enthusiasm of Addison's friend. "You are like the German burghers," says he, "and the princes on the Mozelle: when our army came to a halt, they always sent a deputation to compliment the chief, and fired a salute with all their artillery from their walls."

"And drunk the great chief's health afterward, did not they?" says Captain Steele, gayly filling up a bumper; — he never was tardy at that sort of acknowledgment of a friend's merit.

"And the duke, since you will have me act His Grace's part," says Mr. Addison, with a smile, and something of a blush, "pledged his friends in return. Most Serene Elector of Covent Garden, I drink to Your Highness's health," and he filled himself a glass. Joseph required scarce more pressing than Dick to that sort of amuse-

<sup>1</sup> With a little wine.

## THE GOVERNMENT IN QUEST OF A POET

ment; but the wine never seemed at all to fluster Mr. Addison's brains; it only unloosed his tongue: whereas Captain Steele's head and speech were quite overcome by a single bottle.

No matter what the verses were, and, to say truth, Mr. Esmond found some of them more than indifferent, Dick's enthusiasm for his chief never faltered, and in every line from Addison's pen Steele found a master-stroke. By the time Dick had come to that part of the poem wherein the bard describes as blandly as though he were recording a dance at the opera, or a harmless bout of bucolic cudgeling at a village fair, that bloody and ruthless part of our campaign, with the remembrance whereof every soldier who bore a part in it must sicken with shame — when we were ordered to ravage and lay waste the elector's country; and with fire and murder, slaughter and crime, a great part of his dominion was overrun; — when Dick came to the lines —

“In vengeance roused the soldier fills his hand  
With sword and fire, and ravages the land,  
In crackling flames a thousand harvests burn,  
A thousand villages to ashes turn.  
To the thick woods the woolly flocks retreat,  
And mixed with bellowing herds confusedly bleat.  
Their trembling lords the common shade partake,  
And cries of infants sound in every brake.  
The listening soldier fixed in sorrow stands,  
Loath to obey his leader's just commands.  
The leader grieves, by generous pity swayed,  
To see his just commands so well obeyed;” —

by this time wine and friendship had brought poor Dick to a perfectly maudlin state, and he hiccuped out the last line with a tenderness that set one of his auditors a-laughing.

## ENGLAND

"I admire the license of your poets," says Esmond to Mr. Addison. (Dick, after reading of the verses, was fain to go off, insisting on kissing his two dear friends before his departure, and reeling away with his periwig over his eyes.) "I admire your art: the murder of the campaign is done to military music, like a battle at the opera, and the virgins shriek in harmony as our victorious grenadiers march into their villages. Do you know what a scene it was?" — (by this time, perhaps, the wine had warmed Mr. Esmond's head too) — "what a triumph you are celebrating? What scenes of shame and horror were enacted, over which the commander's genius presided, as calm as though he did n't belong to our sphere? You talk of the 'listening soldier fixed in sorrow,' the 'leader's grief swayed by generous pity': to my belief the leader cared no more for bleating flocks than he did for infants' cries, and many of our ruffians butchered one or the other with equal alacrity. I was ashamed of my trade when I saw those horrors perpetrated which came under every man's eyes. You hew out of your polished verses a stately image of smiling victory: I tell you 't is an uncouth, distorted, savage idol; hideous, bloody, and barbarous. The rites performed before it are shocking to think of. You great poets should show it as it is — ugly and horrible, not beautiful and serene. O sir, had you made the campaign, believe me, you would never have sung it so."

During this little outbreak, Mr. Addison was listening, smoking out of his long pipe, and smiling very placidly. "What would you have?" says he. "In our polished days, and according to the rules of art, 't is impossible that the Muse should depict tortures or begrime



## THE GOVERNMENT IN QUEST OF A POET

her hands with the horrors of war. These are indicated rather than described; as in the Greek tragedies, that, I dare say, you have read (and sure there can be no more elegant specimens of composition), Agamemnon is slain, or Medea's children destroyed, away from the scene; — the chorus occupying the stage and singing of the action to pathetic music. Something of this I attempt, my dear sir, in my humble way: 't is a panegyric I mean to write, and not a satire. Were I to sing as you would have me, the town would tear the poet in pieces, and burn his book by the hands of the common hangman. Do you not use tobacco? Of all the weeds grown on earth, sure the nicotian is the most soothing and salutary. We must paint our great duke," Mr. Addison went on, "not as a man, which no doubt he is, with weaknesses like the rest of us, but as a hero. 'T is in a triumph, not a battle, that your humble servant is riding his sleek Pegasus. We college poets trot, you know, on very easy nags; it hath been, time out of mind, part of the poet's profession to celebrate the actions of heroes in verse, and to sing the deeds which you men of war perform. I must follow the rules of my art, and the composition of such a strain as this must be harmonious and majestic, not familiar, or too near the vulgar truth. *Si parva licet*:<sup>1</sup> if Virgil could invoke the divine Augustus, a humbler poet from the banks of the Isis may celebrate a victory and a conqueror of our own nation, in whose triumphs every Briton has a share, and whose glory and genius contributes to every citizen's individual honor. When hath there been, since our Henrys' and

<sup>1</sup> *Si parva licet componere magnis*: If it is allowable to compare small things with great.

## ENGLAND

Edwards' days, such a great feat of arms as that from which you yourself have brought away marks of distinction? If 't is in my power to sing that song worthily, I will do so, and be thankful to my Muse. If I fail as a poet, as a Briton at least I will show my loyalty, and fling up my cap and huzzah for the conqueror: —

“... Rheni pacator et Istri,  
Omnis in hoc uno variis discordia cessit  
Ordinibus; lætatur eques, plauditque senator,  
Votaque patricio certant plebeia favori.’”

“There were as brave men on that field,” says Mr. Esmond (who never could be made to love the Duke of Marlborough, nor to forget those stories which he used to hear in his youth regarding that great chief's selfishness and treachery) — “there were men at Blenheim as good as the leader, whom neither knights nor senators applauded, nor voices plebeian favored, and who lie there forgotten, under the clods. What poet is there to sing them?”

“To sing the gallant souls of heroes sent to Hades!” says Mr. Addison, with a smile. “Would you celebrate them all? If I may venture to question anything in such an admirable work, the catalogue of the ships in Homer hath always appeared to me as somewhat wearisome: what had the poem been, supposing the writer had chronicled the names of captains, lieutenants, rank and file? One of the greatest of a man's qualities is success; 't is the result of all the others; 't is a latent power in him which compels the favor of the gods and subjugates fortune. Of all his gifts, I admire that one in the great Marlborough. To be brave? Every man is brave. But in being victorious, as he is, I fancy there is some-

## THE GOVERNMENT IN QUEST OF A POET

thing divine. In presence of the occasion, the great soul of the leader shines out, and the god is confessed. Death itself respects him, and passes by him to lay others low. War and carnage flee before him to ravage other parts of the field, as Hector from before the divine Achilles. You say he hath no pity: no more have the gods, who are above it, and superhuman. The fainting battle gathers strength at his aspect; and, wherever he rides, victory charges with him."

A couple of days after, when Mr. Esmond revisited his poetic friend, he found this thought, struck out in the fervor of conversation, improved and shaped into those famous lines, which are in truth the noblest in the poem of the "Campaign." As the two gentlemen sat engaged in talk, Mr. Addison solacing himself with his customary pipe, the little maid-servant that waited on his lodging came up, preceding a gentleman in fine laced clothes, that had evidently been figuring at court or a great man's levée. The courtier coughed a little at the smoke of the pipe, and looked round the room curiously, which was shabby enough, as was the owner in his worn snuff-colored suit and plain tie-wig.

"How goes on the *magnum opus*, Mr. Addison?" says the court gentleman on looking down at the papers that were on the table.

"We were but now over it," says Addison (the greatest courtier in the land could not have had a more splendid politeness, or greater dignity of manner). "Here is the plan," says he, "on the table: *hâc ibat Simois*,<sup>1</sup> here ran the little river Nebel: *hic est Sigeia tellus*,<sup>2</sup> here are Tallard's quarters, at the bowl of this pipe, at the attack

<sup>1</sup> There flowed the Simois.

<sup>2</sup> Here is the Sigeian country.

## ENGLAND

of which Captain Esmond was present. I have the honor to introduce him to Mr. Boyle; and Mr. Esmond was but now depicting *aliquo prælia mixta mero*, when you came in." In truth the two gentlemen had been so engaged when the visitor arrived, and Addison in his smiling way, speaking of Mr. Webb, colonel of Esmond's regiment (who commanded a brigade in the action, and greatly distinguished himself there), was lamenting that he could find never a suitable rhyme for Webb, otherwise the brigade should have had a place in the poet's verses. "And for you, you are but a lieutenant," says Addison, "and the Muse can't occupy herself with any gentlemen under the rank of a field officer."

Mr. Boyle was all impatient to hear, saying that my Lord Treasurer and my Lord Halifax were equally anxious; and Addison, blushing, began reading of his verses, and, I suspect, knew their weak parts as well as the most critical hearer. When he came to the lines describing the angel, that

"Inspired repulsed battalions to engage,  
And taught the doubtful battle where to rage," —

he read with great animation, looking at Esmond, as much as to say, "You know where that simile came from — from our talk, and our bottle of burgundy, the other day."

The poet's two hearers were caught with enthusiasm, and applauded the verses with all their might. The gentleman of the court sprang up in great delight. "Not a word more, my dear sir," says he. "Trust me with the papers — I'll defend them with my life. Let me read them over to my Lord Treasurer, whom I am appointed

## THE GOVERNMENT IN QUEST OF A POET

to see in half an hour. I venture to promise, the verses shall lose nothing by my reading, and then, sir, we shall see whether Lord Halifax has a right to complain that his friend's pension is no longer paid." And without more ado, the courtier in lace seized the manuscript pages, placed them in his breast with his ruffled hand over his heart, executed a most gracious wave of the hat with the disengaged hand, and smiled and bowed out of the room, leaving an odor of pomander behind him.

"Does not the chamber look quite dark?" says Addison, surveying it, "after the glorious appearance and disappearance of that gracious messenger? Why, he illuminated the whole room. Your scarlet, Mr. Esmond, will bear any light; but this threadbare old coat of mine, how very worn it looked under the glare of that splendor! I wonder whether they will do anything for me," he continued. "When I came out of Oxford into the world, my patrons promised me great things; and you see where their promises have landed me, in a lodging up two pairs of stairs, with a sixpenny dinner from the cook's shop. Well, I suppose this promise will go after the others, and Fortune will jilt me, as the jade has been doing any time these seven years. 'I puff the prostitute away,' says he, smiling, and blowing a cloud out of his pipe. There is no hardship in poverty, Esmond, that is not bearable; no hardship even in honest dependence that an honest man may not put up with. I came out of the lap of Alma Mater, puffed up with her praises of me, and thinking to make a figure in the world with the parts and learning which had got me no small name in our college. The world is the ocean, and Isis and Charwell are but little drops, of which the sea takes no account.

## ENGLAND

My reputation ended a mile beyond Maudlin Tower; no one took note of me; and I learned this at least, to bear up against evil fortune with a cheerful heart. Friend Dick hath made a figure in the world, and has passed me in the race long ago. What matters a little name or a little fortune? There is no fortune that a philosopher cannot endure. I have been not unknown as a scholar, and yet forced to live by turning bear-leader, and teaching a boy to spell. What then? The life was not pleasant, but possible — the bear was bearable. Should this venture fail, I will go back to Oxford; and some day, when you are a general, you shall find me a curate in a cassock and bands, and I shall welcome your honor to my cottage in the country, and to a mug of penny ale. 'T is not poverty that's the hardest to bear, or the least happy lot in life," says Mr. Addison, shaking the ash out of his pipe. "See, my pipe is smoked out. Shall we have another bottle? I have still a couple in the cupboard, and of the right sort. No more? Let us go abroad and take a turn on the Mall, or look in at the theatre and see Dick's comedy. 'T is not a masterpiece of wit; but Dick is a good fellow, though he doth not set the Thames on fire."

Within a month after this day, Mr. Addison's ticket had come up a prodigious prize in the lottery of life. All the town was in an uproar of admiration of his poem, the "Campaign," which Dick Steele was spouting at every coffee-house in Whitehall and Covent Garden. The wits on the other side of Temple Bar saluted him at once as the greatest poet the world had seen for ages; the people huzzahed for Marlborough and for Addison, and, more than this, the party in power provided for the

## THE GOVERNMENT IN QUEST OF A POET

meritorious poet, and Mr. Addison got the appointment of Commissioner of Excise, which the famous Mr. Locke vacated, and rose from this place to other dignities and honors; his prosperity from henceforth to the end of his life being scarce even interrupted. But I doubt whether he was not happier in his garret in the Haymarket, than ever he was in his splendid palace at Kensington.



## SUNDAY WITH SIR ROGER

BY JOSEPH ADDISON

[THE reign of Anne is known as the Augustan age of English literature. Then for the first time authorship became a recognized calling, instead of an occasional occupation. This was due partly to the increase of wealth and leisure, and partly to governmental encouragement. Pope was the greatest of the poets; Addison, Swift, Steele, and Bolingbroke stood first among the writers of prose. The famous "Spectator" was the production of Addison and Steele. Its entertaining essays and sketches professed to be written by a club, of which "Sir Roger de Coverley" was the chief character.

*The Editor.]*

My friend, Sir Roger, being a good Churchman, has beautified the Inside of his Church with several Texts of his own choosing: He has likewise given a handsom Pulpit-Cloth, and railed in the Communion-Table at his own Expence. He has often told me, that at his coming to his Estate he found his Parishioners very irregular; and that in order to make them kneel and join in the Responses, he gave every one of them a Hassock and a Common-prayer-book; and at the same time employed an itinerant Singing Master, who goes about the Country for that purpose, to instruct them rightly in the Tunes of the Psalms; upon which they now very much value themselves, and indeed out-do most of the Country Churches that I have ever heard.

As Sir Roger is Landlord to the whole Congregation, he keeps them in very good Order, and will suffer no body

## SUNDAY WITH SIR ROGER

to sleep in it besides himself; for if by Chance he has been surprised into a short Nap at Sermon, upon recovering out of it he stands up and looks about him, and if he sees any Body else nodding, either wakes them himself, or sends his Servants to them. Several other of the Old Knight's Particularities break out upon these Occasions: Sometimes he will be lengthening out a Verse in the Singing-Psalms, half a Minute after the rest of the Congregation have done with it; sometimes when he is pleased with the Matter of his Devotion, he pronounces *Amen* three or four times to the same Prayer; and sometimes stands up when every Body else is upon their Knees, to count the Congregation, or see if any of his Tenants are missing.

I was yesterday very much surprised to hear my old Friend, in the midst of the Service, calling out to one *John Matthews* to mind what he was about, and not disturb the Congregation. This *John Matthews* it seems is remarkable for being an idle Fellow, and at that time was kicking his Heels for his Diversion. This Authority of the Knight, though exerted in that odd manner which accompanies him in all Circumstances of Life, has a very good Effect upon the Parish, who are not polite enough to see any thing ridiculous in his Behaviour; besides that the general good Sense and Worthiness of his Character make his Friends observe these little Singularities as Foils that rather set off than blemish his good Qualities.

As soon as the Sermon is finished, nobody presumes to stir till Sir Roger is gone out of the Church. The Knight walks down from his Seat in the Chancel between a double row of his Tenants, that stand bowing to him

## ENGLAND

on each side; and every now and then inquires how such an one's Wife, or Mother, or Son, or Father do, whom he does not see at Church; which is understood as a secret Reprimand to the Person that is absent.

The Chaplain has often told me, that upon a Catechising Day, when Sir Roger has been pleased with a Boy that answers well, he has ordered a Bible to be given him next Day for his Encouragement; and sometimes accompanies it with a Flitch of Bacon to his Mother. Sir Roger has likewise added five Pounds a Year to the Clerk's Place; and that he may encourage the young Fellows to make themselves perfect in the Church-Service, has promised upon the Death of the present Incumbent, who is very old, to bestow it according to Merit.

The fair Understanding between Sir Roger and his Chaplain, and their mutual Concurrence in doing Good, is the more remarkable, because the very next Village is famous for the Differences and Contentions that rise between the Parson and the 'Squire, who live in a perpetual State of War. The Parson is always preaching at the 'Squire, and the 'Squire to be revenged on the Parson never comes to Church. The 'Squire has made all his Tenants Atheists and Tithe-Stealers; while the Parson instructs them every Sunday in the Dignity of his Order, and insinuates to them in almost every Sermon, that he is a better Man than his Patron. In short, Matters are come to such an Extremity, that the 'Squire has not said his Prayers either in publick or private this half Year; and that the Parson threatens him, if he does not mend his Manners, to pray for him in the Face of the whole Congregation.

## SUNDAY WITH SIR ROGER

Feuds of this Nature, though too frequent in the Country, are very fatal to the ordinary People; who are so used to be dazzled with Riches, that they pay as much Deference to the Understanding of a Man of an Estate, as of a Man of Learning; and are very hardly brought to regard any Truth, how important soever it may be, that is preached to them, when they know there are several Men of five hundred a Year who do not believe it.



IV  
ENGLAND UNDER THE FIRST  
THREE GEORGES

## HISTORICAL NOTE

QUEEN ANNE died in 1713, having outlived all of her seventeen children, and was succeeded by George I, Elector of Hanover, great-grandson of James I. As King George was more interested in his German principality than in his newly acquired kingdom, he gave his cabinet practically a free hand in England, a policy that led to a gradual shifting of executive power from the king to the prime minister. In 1720 a mania for stock speculation swept over England, leaving ruin in its wake, but under the long and peaceful administration of Sir Robert Walpole the country recovered its prosperity.

During the reign of George II (1727-1760), England was drawn into two wars with France, the War of the Austrian Succession and the Seven Years' War. In the latter, under the vigorous leadership of William Pitt, England completely humbled her ancient rival, and, by seizing French possessions in Canada and India, laid the foundations of her vast colonial empire.

George III (1760-1820) was determined to destroy the party system and restore royal authority. The oppressive measures directed by his favorite minister, Lord North, against the American colonies, resulted in the American Revolution whereby England lost her most important over-sea territory.



## THE VICAR OF BRAY

AUTHOR UNKNOWN

[It is said that a certain Vicar of Bray, named Simon Symonds, changed his theology with each change of sovereign; and that, when reproached for inconsistency, he declared that he was perfectly consistent, for he had ever been true to a single aim, and that was to remain Vicar of Bray.

*The Editor.]*

IN good King Charles's golden days  
When loyalty no harm was meant,  
A zealous high-churchman was I,  
And so I got preferment.  
To teach my flock I never miss'd  
Kings were by God appointed,  
And lost are those that dare resist  
Or touch the Lord's anointed.  
And this is law that I'll maintain  
Until my dying day, sir,  
That whatsoever king shall reign,  
Still I'll be the Vicar of Bray, sir.

When royal James possess'd the crown,  
And popery grew in fashion,  
The penal laws I hooted down,  
And read the Declaration:  
The Church of Rome I found would fit  
Full well my constitution;  
And I had been a Jesuit,  
But for the Revolution.  
And this is law, etc.

## ENGLAND

When William was our king declar'd  
To ease the nation's grievance;  
With this new wind about I steer'd,  
And swore to him allegiance:  
Old principles I did revoke,  
Set conscience at a distance;  
Passive obedience was a joke,  
A jest was non-resistance.  
And this is law, etc.

When royal Anne became our queen,  
The Church of England's glory,  
Another face of things was seen,  
And I became a Tory;  
Occasional conformists base,  
I blam'd their moderation;  
And thought the Church in danger was,  
By such prevarication.  
And this is law, etc.

When George in pudding-time came o'er,  
And moderated men look'd big, sir,  
My principles I chang'd once more,  
And so became a Whig, sir;  
And thus preferment I procur'd  
From our new Faith's-Defender;  
And almost every day abjur'd  
The Pope and the Pretender.  
And this is law, etc.

Th' illustrious House of Hanover,  
And Protestant succession,

## THE VICAR OF BRAY

To these I do allegiance swear —

While they can keep possession;

For in my faith and loyalty,

I never more will falter,

And George my lawful king shall be —

Until the times do alter.

And this is law, etc.

# THE "BUBBLES" OF THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE I

[1720]

BY CHARLES MACKAY

[THE greatest and most calamitous of the "Bubbles" was the South Sea Company, with its scheme for paying off the national debt by trading in the South Sea. The company set wild stories afloat of the enormous fortunes that might be made by this trade, and at the office in Exchange Alley people strove with one another for an opportunity to purchase its stock. A ballad of the day declares: —

"Then stars and garters did appear  
Among the meaner rabble;  
To buy and sell, to see and hear  
The Jews and Gentiles squabble.

The greatest ladies hither come,  
And plied in chariots daily,  
Or pawned their jewels for a sum  
To venture in the Alley."

When the speculative mania was at its height, the chairman and some of the chief directors sold out their interests at an enormous profit. Then came the crash, and thousands of families were made beggars. Parliament investigated, and eventually the stockholders received nearly one third of the money which they had so foolishly invested.

*The Editor.]*

INNUMERABLE joint-stock companies started up everywhere. They soon received the name of "Bubbles," the most appropriate that imagination could devise. The

## THE BUBBLES OF THE REIGN OF GEORGE I

populace are often most happy in the nicknames they employ. None could be more apt than that of "Bubbles." Some of them last for a week or a fortnight, and were no more heard of, while others could not even live out that short span of existence. Every evening produced new schemes, and every morning new projects. The highest of the aristocracy were as eager in this hot pursuit of gain as the most plodding jobber in Cornhill. The Prince of Wales became governor of one company, and is said to have cleared £40,000 by his speculations. The Duke of Bridgewater started a scheme for the improvement of London and Westminster, and the Duke of Chandos another. There were nearly a hundred different projects, each more extravagant and deceptive than the other. To use the words of the "Political State," they were "set on foot and promoted by crafty knaves, then pursued by multitudes of covetous fools, and at last appeared to be, in effect, what their vulgar appellation denoted them to be — bubbles and mere cheats." It was computed that near one million and a half sterling was won and lost by these unwarrantable practices, to the impoverishment of many a fool, and the enriching of many a rogue.

Some of these schemes were plausible enough, and, had they been undertaken at a time when the public mind was unexcited, might have been pursued with advantage to all concerned. But they were established merely with the view of raising the shares in the market. The projectors took the first opportunity of a rise to sell out, and next morning the scheme was at an end. Maitland, in his "History of London," gravely informs us, that one of the projects which received great encourage-

## ENGLAND

ment, was for the establishment of a company "to make deal boards out of sawdust." This is no doubt intended as a joke; but there is abundance of evidence to show that dozens of schemes, hardly a whit more reasonable, lived their little day, ruining hundreds ere they fell. One of them was for a wheel for perpetual motion — capital, one million; another was "for encouraging the breed of horses in England, and improving of glebe and church lands, and repairing and rebuilding parsonage and vicarage houses." Why the clergy, who were so mainly interested in the latter clause, should have taken so much interest in the first, is only to be explained on the supposition that the scheme was projected by a knot of the fox-hunting parsons, once so common in England. The shares of this company were rapidly subscribed for. But the most absurd and preposterous of all, and which showed, more completely than any other, the utter madness of the people, was one started by an unknown adventurer, entitled "A company for carrying on an undertaking of great advantage, but nobody to know what it is." Were not the fact stated by scores of witnesses, it would be impossible to believe that any person could have been duped by such a project. The man of genius who essayed this bold and successful inroad upon public credulity merely stated in his prospectus that the required capital was half a million, in five thousand shares of one hundred pounds each; deposit, 2 pounds per share. Each subscriber, paying his deposit, would be entitled to one hundred pounds per annum per share. How this immense profit was to be obtained, he did not condescend to inform them at that time, but promised that in a month full particulars should be duly an-

## THE BUBBLES OF THE REIGN OF GEORGE I

nounced, and a call made for the remaining ninety-eight pounds of the subscription. Next morning, at nine o'clock, this great man opened an office in Cornhill. Crowds of people beset his door, and when he shut up at three o'clock, he found that no less than one thousand shares had been subscribed for, and the deposits paid. He was thus, in five hours, the winner of two thousand pounds. He was philosopher enough to be contented with his venture, and set off the same evening for the Continent. He was never heard of again.

Well might Swift exclaim, comparing Exchange Alley to a gulf in the South Sea: —

“Subscribers here by thousands float,  
And jostle one another down,  
Each paddling in his leaky boat,  
And here they fish for gold and drown.

Now buried in the depths below,  
Now mounted up to heaven again,  
They reel and stagger to and fro,  
At their wits' end, like drunken men.

Meantime, secure on Garraway cliffs,  
A savage race, by shipwrecks fed,  
Lie waiting for the foundered skiffs,  
And strip the bodies of the dead.”

Another fraud that was very successful was that of the “Globe *Permits*,” as they were called. They were nothing more than square pieces of playing-cards, on which was the impression of a seal, in wax, bearing the sign of the Globe Tavern, in the neighborhood of Exchange Alley, with the inscription of “Sail-Cloth *Permits*.” The possessors enjoyed no other advantage from them than permission to subscribe at some future time



to a new sail-cloth manufactory, projected by one who was then known to be a man of fortune, but who was afterwards involved in the speculation and punishment of the South-Sea directors. These permits sold for as much as sixty guineas in the Alley.

Persons of distinction, of both sexes, were deeply engaged in all these bubbles; those of the male sex going to taverns and coffee-houses to meet their brokers, and the ladies resorting for the same purpose to the shops of milliners and haberdashers. But it did not follow that all these people believed in the feasibility of the schemes to which they subscribed; it was enough for their purpose that their shares would, by stock-jobbing arts, be soon raised to a premium, when they got rid of them with all expedition to the really credulous. So great was the confusion of the crowd in the Alley that shares in the same bubble were known to have been sold at the same instant ten per cent higher at one end of the Alley than at the other.

Sensible men beheld the extraordinary infatuation of the people with sorrow and alarm. There were some both in and out of Parliament who foresaw clearly the ruin that was impending. Mr. Walpole did not cease his gloomy forebodings. His fears were shared by all the thinking few, and impressed most forcibly upon the Government. On the 11th of June, the day the Parliament rose, the king published a proclamation, declaring that all these unlawful projects should be deemed public nuisances, and prosecuted accordingly, and forbidding any broker, under a penalty of five hundred pounds, from buying or selling any shares in them. Notwithstanding this proclamation, roguish speculators still

## THE BUBBLES OF THE REIGN OF GEORGE I

carried them on, and the deluded people still encouraged them. On the 12th of July, an order of the Lords Justices assembled in Privy Council was published, dismissing all the petitions that had been presented for patents and charters, and dissolving all the bubble companies.

## WHEN GEORGE II BECAME KING

BY WILLIAM MAKEPEACE THACKERAY

ON the afternoon of the 14th of June, 1727, two horsemen might have been perceived galloping along the road from Chelsea to Richmond. The foremost, cased in the jackboots of the period, was a broad-faced, jolly-looking, and very corpulent cavalier; but, by the manner in which he urged his horse, you might see that he was a bold as well as a skillful rider. Indeed, no man loved sport better; and in the hunting-fields of Norfolk, no squire rode more boldly after the fox, or cheered Ringwood or Sweetlips more lustily, than he who now thundered over the Richmond road.

He speedily reached Richmond Lodge, and asked to see the owner of the mansion. The mistress of the house and her ladies, to whom our friend was admitted, said he could not be introduced to the master, however pressing the business might be. The master was asleep after his dinner; he always slept after his dinner: and woe be to the person who interrupted him! Nevertheless, our stout friend of the jackboots put the affrighted ladies aside, opened the forbidden door of the bedroom, wherein upon the bed lay a little gentleman; and here the eager messenger knelt down in his jackboots.

He on the bed started up, and with many oaths and a strong German accent asked who was there, and who dared to disturb him?

"I am Sir Robert Walpole," said the messenger. The

## WHEN GEORGE II BECAME KING

wakened sleeper hated Sir Robert Walpole. "I have the honor to announce to Your Majesty that your royal father, King George I, died at Osnaburg, on Saturday last, the 10th instant."

"*Dat is one big lie!*" roared out His Sacred Majesty King George II: but Sir Robert Walpole stated the fact, and from that day until three-and-thirty years after, George, the second of the name, ruled England.

How the king made way with his father's will under the astonished nose of the Archbishop of Canterbury; how he was a choleric little sovereign; how he shook his fist in the face of his father's courtiers; how he kicked his coat and wig about in his rages, and called everybody thief, liar, rascal, with whom he differed, — you will read in all the history books; and how he speedily and shrewdly reconciled himself with the bold minister, whom he had hated during his father's life, and by whom he was served during fifteen years of his own with admirable prudence, fidelity, and success.

## THE FUNERAL OF GEORGE II

[1760]

BY HORACE WALPOLE, EARL OF ORFORD

[HORACE WALPOLE, son of the famous statesman, Sir Robert Walpole, was the author of a number of literary works. Best known of all these are his "Letters," fascinating pictures of the fashionable life of his day; not always to be trusted, indeed, in matters of bare fact, but captivating, nevertheless, and vivid and delightful.

*The Editor.]*

Do you know, I had the curiosity to go to the burying t'other night; I had never seen a royal funeral; nay, I walked as a rag of quality, which I found would be, and so it was, the easiest way of seeing it. It is absolutely a noble sight. The prince's chamber, hung with purple, and a quantity of silver lamps, the coffin under a canopy of purple velvet, and six vast chandeliers of silver on high stands, had a very good effect. The ambassador from Tripoli and his son were carried in to see that chamber. The procession through a line of footguards, every seventh man bearing a torch, the horse-guards lining the outside, their officers with drawn sabers and crape sashes on horseback, the drums muffled, the bells tolling, and minute guns, — all this was very solemn. But the charm was the entrance of the abbey, where we were received by the dean and chapter in rich robes, the choir and almsmen bearing torches; the whole abbey so illuminated that one saw it to greater advantage than

## THE FUNERAL OF GEORGE II

by day; the tombs, long aisles, and fretted roof, all appearing distinctly, and with the happiest *chiaroscuro*. There wanted nothing but incense, and little chapels here and there, with priests saying mass for the repose of the defunct; yet one could not complain of its not being Catholic enough. I had been in dread of being coupled with some boy of ten years old; but the heralds were not very accurate, and I walked with George Grenville, taller and older, to keep me in countenance. When we came to the chapel of Henry the Seventh, all solemnity and decorum ceased; no order was observed, people sat or stood where they could or would; the yeomen of the guard were crying out for help, oppressed by the immense weight of the coffin; the bishop read sadly, and blundered in the prayers; the fine chapter, "Man that is born of a woman," was chanted, not read; and the anthem, besides being immeasurably tedious, would have served as well for a nuptial. The real serious part was the figure of the Duke of Cumberland, heightened by a thousand melancholy circumstances. He had a dark brown adonis, and a cloak of black cloth, with a train of five yards. Attending the funeral of a father could not be pleasant: his leg extremely bad, yet forced to stand upon it nearly two hours; his face bloated and distorted with his late paralytic stroke, which has affected, too, one of his eyes, and placed over the mouth of the vault, into which, in all probability, he must himself so soon descend; think how unpleasant a situation! He bore it all with a firm and unaffected countenance. This grave scene was fully contrasted by the burlesque Duke of Newcastle. He fell into a fit of crying the moment he came into the chapel, and flung himself back

## ENGLAND

in a stall, the archbishop hovering over him with a smelling-bottle; but in two minutes his curiosity got the better of his hypocrisy, and he ran about the chapel with his glass to spy who was or was not there, spying with one hand, and mopping his eyes with the other. Then returned the fear of catching cold; and the Duke of Cumberland, who was sinking with heat, felt himself weighed down, and turning round, found it was the Duke of Newcastle standing upon his train, to avoid the chill of the marble. It was very theatrical to look down into the vault, where the coffin lay, attended by mourners with lights. Clavering, the groom of the bedchamber, refused to sit up with the body, and was dismissed by the king's order.



DR. JOHNSON IN THE ANTEROOM OF  
LORD CHESTERFIELD

# DR. JOHNSON IN THE ANTEROOM OF LORD CHESTERFIELD

BY E. M. WARD

(*English artist, 1816-1879*)

DR. JOHNSON was one of the greatest English essayists and critics of the eighteenth century, and the author of a monumental dictionary of the English language. His early life was passed in dire poverty, and his greatest work, "Rasselas," was written in the evenings of one week to pay the expenses of his mother's funeral. In 1762, he received a pension of three hundred pounds a year from the Government, and from that time until his death, he was the foremost figure in English literature. Dr. Johnson was even more celebrated as a talker than as a writer, and many of his conversations with Oliver Goldsmith, Edmund Burke, Sir Joshua Reynolds, and other members of the brilliant Literary Club of which he was the leading member, have been preserved in Boswell's famous biography.

One of the Doctor's most prominent contemporaries was Lord Chesterfield. He had held several positions of state, and he was known as a man of wealth and of fine literary taste. In those times it was desirable to dedicate a new literary work to some well-known man, who was expected, in return for the compliment, to take an interest, generally financial, in the book. When Dr. Johnson set to work on his Dictionary, he addressed the prospectus to Lord Chesterfield, was thanked for the courtesy — and that was all. According to the custom, Johnson continued to call upon the earl until it was too plain to be disregarded that his lordship did not care to receive the awkward, clumsy scholar among his fashionable guests. The scene of the illustration is the earl's anteroom. Dr. Johnson sits cane in hand, a sturdy, indignant figure, and casts a glance of scorn at a lady of fashion who has been admitted to the august presence of Chesterfield, while he himself is refused an audience.

Chesterfield realized too late what an honor the dedication of the Dictionary would be to him, and warmly praised the forthcoming book. But the Dictionary came out without a dedication, and its author sent to his recreant patron a letter scornfully refusing his belated offer of help.





## WILLIAM PITT AND THE STAMP ACT

[1766]

BY GEORGE BANCROFT

[WILLIAM PITT, the first Earl of Chatham, was a famous English statesman and orator. In 1756, he entered the cabinet, and from that time until his death in 1778 he was the greatest figure in English politics. He was a strong friend to the American colonies, in that he opposed their taxation by England; but in 1778, he opposed with equal strength the acknowledgment of their independence.

*The Editor.]*

ON the 20th of February, — while the newspapers of New York were that very morning reiterating the resolves of the Sons of Liberty, that they would venture their lives and fortunes to prevent the Stamp Act from taking place, that the safety of the colonies depended on a firm union of the whole, — the ministers, at a private meeting of their supporters, settled the resolutions of repeal which even Charles Townshend was present to accept, and which, as Burke believed, he intended to support by a speech.

Early the next day, every seat in the House of Commons had been taken; between four and five hundred members attended. Pitt was ill, but his zeal was above disease. "I must get up to the House as I can," said he; "when in my place, I feel I am tolerably able to remain through the debate, and cry aye to the repeal with no sickly voice"; and he hobbled into the House on crutches,

## ENGLAND

swathed in flannels; huzzaed, as he passed through the lobby, by almost all the persons there.

Conway moved for leave to bring in a bill for the repeal of the American Stamp Act. It had interrupted British commerce; jeoparded debts to British merchants; stopped one third of the manufactures of Manchester; increased the rates on land, by throwing thousands of poor out of employment. The act, too, breathed oppression. It annihilated juries; and gave vast power to the admiralty courts. The lawyers might decide in favor of the right to tax; but the conflict would ruin both countries. In three thousand miles of territory, the English had but five thousand troops, the Americans one hundred and fifty thousand fighting men. If they did not repeal the act, France and Spain would declare war, and protect the Americans. The colonies, too, would set up manufactures of their own. Why, then, risk the whole, for so trifling an object as this act modified?

Jenkinson, on the other side, moved, instead of the repeal, a modification of the Stamp Act; insisting that the total repeal, demanded as it was with menaces of resistance, would be the overthrow of British authority in America. In reply to Jenkinson, Edmund Burke spoke in a manner unusual in the House; fresh, as from a full mind, connecting the argument for repeal with a new kind of political philosophy.

About eleven, Pitt rose. With suavity of manner he conciliated the wavering by allowing good ground for their apprehensions; but calmly, and with consummate and persuasive address, he argued for the repeal, with eloquence which expressed conviction, and which yet could not have offended even the sensitive self-love of

## WILLIAM PITT AND THE STAMP ACT

the warmest friends of the act. He acknowledged his own perplexity in making an option between two ineligible alternatives; pronounced, however, for repeal, as due to the liberty of unrepresented subjects, and in gratitude to their having supported England through three wars.

“The total repeal,” replied Grenville, “will persuade the colonies that Great Britain confessed itself without the right to impose taxes on them, and is reduced to make this confession by their menaces. Do the merchants insist that debts to the amount of three millions will be lost, and all fresh orders countermanded? Do not injure yourselves from fear of injury; do not die from the fear of dying; the merchants may sustain a temporary loss, but they and all England would suffer much more from the weakness of Parliament, and the impunity of the Americans. With a little firmness, it will be easy to compel the colonists to obedience. The last advices announce that a spirit of submission is taking the place of the spirit of revolt. Americans must learn that prayers are not to be brought to Cæsar through riot and sedition.”

Between one and two o'clock on the morning of the 22d of February, the division took place. Only a few days before, Bedford had confidently predicted the defeat of the ministry. The king, the queen, the princess dowager, the Duke of York, Lord Bute, desired it. The scanty remains of the old Tories; all the followers of Bedford and Grenville; the king's friends; every Scottish member, except Sir Alexander Gilmore and George Dempster; Lord George Sackville, whom this ministry had restored, and brought into office; Oswald, Sackville's colleague as vice-treasurer for Ireland; Barrington, the



## ENGLAND

paymaster of the navy, were all known to be in the opposition.

The lobbies were crammed with upwards of three hundred men, representing the trading interests of the nation, trembling and anxious, and waiting almost till the winter morning's return of light, to learn their fate from the resolution of the House. Presently it was announced that 275 had voted for the repeal of the act, against 167 for softening and enforcing it. The roof of St. Stephen's rang with the loud shouts and long cheering of the victorious majority.

When the doors were thrown open, and Conway went forth, there was an involuntary burst of gratitude from the grave multitude which beset the avenues; they stopped him; they gathered round him as children round a parent, as captives round a deliverer. The pure-minded man enjoyed the triumph, and while they thanked him, Edmund Burke, who stood near him, declares, that "his face was as if it had been the face of an angel." As Grenville moved along, swelling with rage and mortification, they pressed on him with hisses. But when Pitt appeared, the whole crowd reverently pulled off their hats; and the applauding joy uttered around him, touched him with tender and lively delight. Many followed his chair home with benedictions.

He felt no illness after his immense fatigue. It seemed as if what he saw and what he heard, the gratitude of a rescued people, and the gladness of thousands, now become his own, had restored him to health. But his heart-felt and solid delight was not perfect till he found himself in his own house, with the wife whom he loved, and the children, for whom his fondness knew no restraint

## WILLIAM PITT AND THE STAMP ACT

or bounds, and who all partook of the overflowing pride of their mother. This was the first great political lesson received by his second son, then not quite seven years old, the eager and impetuous William, who, flushed with patriotic feeling, rejoiced that he was not the eldest-born, but could serve his country in the House of Commons, like his father.

# THE QUARREL OF SQUIRE BULL AND HIS SON

[1775 to 1783]

BY JAMES KIRKE PAULDING

JOHN BULL was a choleric old fellow, who held a good manor in the middle of a great mill-pond, and which, by reason of its being quite surrounded by water, was generally called Bullock Island. Bull was an ingenious man, an exceedingly good blacksmith, a dexterous cutter, and a notable weaver and pot-baker besides. He also brewed capital porter, ale, and small beer, and was in fact a sort of jack of all trades, and good at each. In addition to these he was a hearty fellow, an excellent bottle-companion, and passably honest, as times go.

But what tarnished all these qualities was a quarrelsome, overbearing disposition, which was always getting him into some scrape or other. The truth is, he never heard of a quarrel going on among his neighbors but his fingers itched to be in the thickest of them; so that he hardly ever was seen without a broken head, a black eye, or a bloody nose. Such was Squire Bull, as he was commonly called by the country people his neighbors — one of those odd, testy, grumbling, boasting old codgers, that never get credit for what they are, because they are always pretending to be what they are not.

The squire was as tight a hand to deal with indoors as out; sometimes treating his family as if they were not the same flesh and blood when they happened to differ

## SQUIRE BULL AND HIS SON

with him in certain matters. One day he got into a dispute with his youngest son Jonathan, who was familiarly called Brother Jonathan, about whether churches ought to be called churches or meeting-houses, and whether steeples were not an abomination. The squire, either having the worst of the argument, or being naturally impatient of contradiction (I can't tell which), fell into a great passion, and swore he would physic such notions out of the boy's noddle. So he went to some of his doctors and got them to draw up a prescription, made up of thirty-nine different articles, many of them bitter enough to some palates. This he tried to make Jonathan swallow; and finding he made villainous wry faces, and would not do it, fell upon him, and beat him like fury. After this, he made the house so disagreeable to him, that Jonathan, though as hard as a pine knot and as tough as leather, could bear it no longer. Taking his gun and his axe, he put himself in a boat and paddled over the mill-pond to some new land to which the squire pretended some sort of claim, intending to settle there, and build a meeting-house without a steeple as soon as he grew rich enough.

When he got over, Jonathan found that the land was quite in a state of nature, covered with wood, and inhabited by nobody but wild beasts. But, being a lad of mettle, he took his axe on one shoulder and his gun on the other, marched into the thickest of the wood, and, clearing a place, built a log hut. Pursuing his labors, and handling his axe like a notable woodman, he in a few years cleared the land, which he laid out into thirteen good farms, and building himself a fine farmhouse, about half finished, began to be quite snug and comfortable.

But Squire Bull, who was getting old and stingy, and,

besides, was in great want of money on account of his having lately to pay swingeing damages for assaulting his neighbors and breaking their heads, — the squire, I say, finding Jonathan was getting well-to-do in the world, began to be very much troubled about his welfare; so he demanded that Jonathan should pay him a good rent for the land which he had cleared and made good for something. He trumped up I know not what claim against him, and under different pretenses managed to pocket all Jonathan's honest gains. In fact, the poor lad had not a shilling left for holiday occasions; and, had it not been for the filial respect he felt for the old man, he would certainly have refused to submit to such impositions.

But for all this, in a little time, Jonathan grew up to be very large of his age, and became a tall, stout, double-jointed, broad-footed cub of a fellow, awkward in his gait and simple in his appearance; but showing a lively, shrewd look, and having the promise of great strength when he should get his full growth. He was rather an odd-looking chap, in truth, and had many queer ways; but everybody that had seen John Bull saw a great likeness between them, and swore he was John's own boy, and a true chip of the old block. Like the old squire, he was apt to be blustering and saucy, but in the main was a peaceable sort of careless fellow, that would quarrel with nobody if you would only let him alone. He always wore a linsey-wolsey coat, the sleeves of which were so short that his hand and wrist came out beyond them, looking like a shoulder of mutton, all of which was in consequence of his growing so fast that he outgrew his clothes.

## SQUIRE BULL AND HIS SON

While Jonathan was outgrowing his strength in this way, Bull kept on picking his pockets of every penny he could scrape together; till at last one day when the squire was even more than usually pressing in his demands, which he accompanied with threats, Jonathan started up in a furious passion, and threw the tea-kettle at the old man's head. The choleric Bull was hereupon exceedingly enraged, and, after calling the poor lad an undutiful, ungrateful, rebellious rascal, seized him by the collar, and forthwith a furious scuffle ensued. This lasted a long time; for the squire, though in years, was a capital boxer, and of most excellent bottom. At last, however, Jonathan got him under, and before he would let him up made him sign a paper giving up all claim to the farms and acknowledging the fee-simple to be in Jonathan forever.

# A MAID OF HONOR AT THE COURT OF GEORGE III

[1786]

BY MADAME D'ARBLAY

[MADAME D'ARBLAY, or Frances Burney, was the author of "Evelina," the "best seller" of the day. She became maid of honor to the queen, and the following extract is from the journal that she kept.

*The Editor.]*

I RISE at six o'clock, dress in a morning gown and cap, and wait my first summons, which is at all times from seven to near eight, but commonly in the exact half-hour between them.

The queen never sends for me till her hair is dressed. This, in a morning, is always done by her wardrobe-woman, Mrs. Thielky, a German, but who speaks English perfectly well.

Mrs. Schwellenberg, since the first week, has never come down in the morning at all. The queen's dress is finished by Mrs. Thielky and myself. No maid ever enters the room while the queen is in it. Mrs. Thielky hands the things to me, and I put them on. 'T is fortunate for me I have not the handing them! I should never know which to take first, embarrassed as I am, and should run a prodigious risk of giving the gown before the hoop, and the fan before the neckerchief.

By eight o'clock, or a little after, for she is extremely expeditious, she is dressed. She then goes out to join the



## THE COURT OF GEORGE III

king, and be joined by the princesses, and they all proceed to the king's chapel in the castle, to prayers, attended by the governesses of the princesses, and the king's equerry. Various others at times attend; but only these indispensably.

I then return to my own room to breakfast. I make this meal the most pleasant part of the day; I have a book for my companion, and I allow myself an hour for it. My present book is Gilpin's description of the Lakes of Cumberland and Westmoreland. Mrs. Delany has lent it me. It is the most picturesque reading I ever met with: it shows me landscapes of every sort, with tints so bright and lively, I forget I am but reading, and fancy I see them before me, colored by the hand of Nature.

At nine o'clock I send off my breakfast things, and relinquish my book, to make a serious and steady examination of everything I have upon my hands in the way of business — in which preparations for dress are always included, not for the present day alone, but for the court days, which require a particular dress; for the next arriving birthday of any of the royal family, every one of which requires new apparel; for Kew, where the dress is plainest; and for going on here, where the dress is very pleasant to me, requiring no show nor finery, but merely to be neat, not inelegant, and moderately fashionable.

That over, I have my time at my own disposal till a quarter before twelve, except on Wednesdays and Saturdays, when I have it only to a quarter before eleven.

My rummages and business sometimes occupy me uninterruptedly to those hours. When they do not, I give till ten to necessary letters of duty, ceremony, or

## ENGLAND

long arrears; — and now, from ten to the times I have mentioned, I devote to walking.

These times mentioned call me to the irksome and quick-returning labors of the toilet. The hour, advanced on the Wednesdays and Saturdays, is for curling and craping the hair, which it now requires twice a week.

A quarter before one is the usual time for the queen to begin dressing for the day. Mrs. Schwellenberg then constantly attends; so do I: Mrs. Thielky, of course, at all times. We help her off with her gown, and on with her powdering things, and then the hairdresser is admitted. She generally reads the newspapers during that operation.

When she observes that I have run to her but half-dressed, she constantly gives me leave to return and finish as soon as she is seated. If she is grave, and reads steadily on, she dismisses me, whether I am dressed or not; but at all times she never forgets to send me away while she is powdering, with a consideration not to spoil my clothes, that one would not expect belonged to her high station. Neither does she ever detain me without making a point of reading here and there some little paragraph aloud.

When I return, I finish, if anything is undone, my dress, and then take Baretti's "Dialogues," my dearest Fredy's "Tablet of Memory," or some such disjointed matter, for the few minutes that elapse ere I am again summoned.

I find her then always removed to her state dressing-room, if any room in this private mansion can have the epithet of "state." There, in a very short time, her

## THE COURT OF GEORGE III

dress is finished. She then says she won't detain me, and I hear and see no more of her till bedtime.

It is commonly three o'clock when I am thus set at large. And I have then two hours quite at my own disposal: but, in the natural course of things, not a moment after! Those dear and quiet two hours, my only quite sure and undisturbed time in the whole day, after breakfast is over, I shall henceforth devote to thus talking with my beloved Susan, my Fredy, my other sister, my dear father, or Miss Cambridge; with my brothers, cousins, Mrs. Ord, and other friends, in such terms as these two hours will occasionally allow me. Henceforward, I say; for hitherto dejection of spirits, with uncertainty how long my time might last, have made me waste moment after moment as sadly as unprofitably.

At five we have dinner. Mrs. Schwellenberg and I meet in the eating-room. We are commonly tête-à-tête: when there is anybody added, it is from her invitation only. Whatever right my place might afford me of also inviting my friends to the table I have now totally lost, by want of courage and spirits to claim it originally.

When we have dined, we go upstairs to her apartment, which is directly over mine. Here we have coffee till the *terracing* is over: this is at about eight o'clock. Our tête-à-tête then finishes, and we come down again to the eating-room. There the equerry, whoever he is, comes to tea constantly, and with him any gentleman that the king or queen may have invited for the evening; and when tea is over, he conducts them, and goes himself, to the concert-room.

This is commonly about nine o'clock.

From this time, if Mrs. Schwellenberg is alone, I never

## ENGLAND

quit her for a minute, till I come to my little supper at near eleven.

Between eleven and twelve my last summons usually takes place, earlier and later occasionally. Twenty minutes is the customary time then spent with the queen: half an hour, I believe, is seldom exceeded.

I then come back, and after doing whatever I can to forward my dress for the next morning, I go to bed — and to sleep, too, believe me: the early rising, and a long day's attention to new affairs and occupations, cause a fatigue so bodily, that nothing mental stands against it, and to sleep I fall the moment I have put out my candle and laid down my head.

Such is the day to your F. B. in her new situation at Windsor; such, I mean, is its usual destination, and its intended course. I make it take now and then another channel, but never stray far enough not to return to the original stream after a little meandering around and about it.

I think now you will be able to see and to follow me pretty closely.

With regard to those summonses I speak of, I will explain myself. My summons, upon all regular occasions — that is, morning, noon, and night toilets — is neither more nor less than a bell. Upon extra occasions a page is commonly sent.

At first, I felt inexpressibly discomfited by this mode of call. A bell! — it seemed so mortifying a mark of servitude, I always felt myself blush, though alone, with conscious shame at my own strange degradation. But I have philosophized myself now into some reconciliation with this manner of summons, by reflecting that

## THE COURT OF GEORGE III

to have some person always sent would be often very inconvenient, and that this method is certainly less an interruption to any occupation I may be employed in than the entrance of messengers so many times a day. It is, besides, less liable to mistakes. So I have made up my mind to it as well as I can; and now I only feel that proud blush when somebody is by to revive my original dislike of it.

## THE ROYAL VISIT TO OXFORD

[1786]

BY MADAME D'ARBLAY

[THE success of Madame D'Arblay's novels had been so pronounced that, as Macaulay says, she was "on the highest pinnacle of fame." But when she became an attendant upon the queen, the pleasures and rewards of literary work were no longer for her. Macaulay pictures the honors which would have been bestowed upon her at Oxford if she had come as Frances Burney; but now she was merely an adjunct to the royal train, and, as he says, "She had the honor of entering Oxford in the last of a long train of carriages which formed the royal procession, of walking after the queen all day through refectories and chapels, and of standing half-dead with fatigue and hunger, while her august mistress was seated at an excellent cold collation." The following is Frances Burney's own account of the closing hours of the visit.

*The Editor.]*

AT Christ Church College, where we arrived at about three o'clock, in a large hall there was a cold collation prepared for Their Majesties and the princesses. It was at the upper end of the hall. I could not see of what it consisted, though it would have been very agreeable, after so much standing and sauntering, to have given my opinion of it in an experimental way.

Their Majesties and the princesses sat down to this table; as well satisfied, I believe, as any of their subjects, so to do. The Duchess of Ancaster and Lady Harcourt stood behind the chairs of the queen and the princess royal. There were no other ladies of sufficient rank to

## THE ROYAL VISIT TO OXFORD

officiate for Princess Augusta and Elizabeth. Lord Harcourt stood behind the king's chair; and the vice-chancellor, and the head master of Christ Church, with salvers in their hands, stood near the table, and ready to hand to the three noble waiters whatever was wanted: while the other reverend doctors and learned professors stood aloof, equally ready to present to the chancellor and the master whatever they were to forward.

We, meanwhile, untitled attendants, stood at the other end of the room, forming a semicircle, and all strictly facing the royal collationers. We consisted of the Miss Vernons (thrown out here as much as their humble guests) Colonel Fairly, Major Price, General Harcourt, and (though I know not why) Lady Charlotte Bertie, — with all the inferior professors, in their gowns, and some, too much frightened to advance, of the upper degrees. These, with Miss Planta, Mr. Hagget, and myself, formed this attendant semicircle.

The time of this collation was spent very pleasantly — to me, at least, to whom the novelty of the scene rendered it entertaining. It was agreed that we must all be absolutely famished unless we could partake of some refreshment, as we had breakfasted early, and had no chance of dining before six or seven o'clock. A whisper was soon buzzed through the semicircle of the deplorable state of our appetite apprehensions; and presently it reached the ears of some of the worthy doctors. Immediately a new whisper was circulated, which made its progress with great vivacity, to offer us whatever we would wish, and to beg us to name what we chose.

Tea, coffee, and chocolate were whispered back.

The method of producing, and the means of swallow-



## ENGLAND

ing them, were much more difficult to settle than the choice of what was acceptable. Major Price and Colonel Fairly, however, seeing a very large table close to the wainscot behind us, desired our refreshments might be privately conveyed there, behind the semicircle, and that, while all the group backed very near it, one at a time might feed, screened by all the rest from observation. I suppose I need not inform you, my dear Susan, that to eat in presence of any of the royal family is as much *hors d'usage* as to be seated.

This plan had speedy success, and the very good doctors soon, by sly degrees and with watchful caution, covered the whole table with tea, coffee, chocolate, cakes, and bread and butter.

The further plan, however, of one at a time feasting, and the rest fasting and standing sentinels, was not equally approved; there was too much eagerness to seize the present moment, and too much fear of a sudden retreat, to give patience for so slow a proceeding. We could do no more, therefore, than stand in a double row, with one to screen one throughout the troop; and, in this manner, we were all very plentifully and very pleasantly served.

The Duchess of Ancaster and Lady Harcourt, as soon as the first serving attendance was over, were dismissed from the royal chairs, and most happy to join our group, and partake of our repast. The duchess, extremely fatigued with standing, drew a small body of troops before her, that she might take a few minutes' rest on a form by one of the doors; and Lady Charlotte Bertie did the same, to relieve an ankle which she had unfortunately sprained.

## THE ROYAL VISIT TO OXFORD

“Poor Miss Burney!” exclaimed the good-natured duchess; “I wish she could sit down, for she is unused to this work. She does not know yet what it is to stand for five hours following, as we do.”

The beautiful window of Sir Joshua Reynolds and Mr. Jervis, in New College, would alone have recovered me, had my fatigue been infinitely more serious. In one of the colleges I stayed so long in an old chapel, lingering over antique monuments, that all the party were vanished before I missed them, except doctors and professors; for we had a train of those everywhere; and I was then a little surprised by the approach of one of them saying, “You seem inclined to abide with us, Miss Burney?” — and then another, in an accent of facetious gallantry, cried, “No, no, don’t let us shut up Miss Burney among old tombs! — No, no!”

After this, many of the good doctors occasionally spoke to me, when there happened to be an opportunity. How often did I wish my dear father amongst them! They considered me as a doctor’s daughter, and were all most excessively courteous, — handing, and pointing, and showing me about as much as possible.

In another college, while Miss Planta and myself were hanging a little back, at the entrance into a small cedar chapel, that would not much more than hold the royal family and their immediate suite, the Duchess of Ancaster, who took every opportunity to show me civilities, and distinguish me, came down the steps, and made me ascend them, to return with her, when she called to her daughter, and in the most obliging terms introduced me to her, with many kind speeches of her wish that we should cultivate much acquaintance.

## ENGLAND

Lady Charlotte is very handsome, and has a very good figure: she unfortunately lisps very much, which, at first, never prejudices in favor of the understanding; but I have conversed with her too little to know anything more of her than that she is well bred, and seems to have a large portion, internally, of the good-natured and obliging disposition of her mother.

At the Town Hall an address was presented by the mayor and corporation of the city of Oxford to the king, which the mayor read. The king took off his hat, and bowed, and received the address, after hearing it, but returned no answer. Nor has His Majesty made any except to the Oxford University, though they have, since, poured in upon him from every part of the kingdom.

The mayor was then knighted.

I think it was in Trinity College that we saw the noblest library I have ever happened to enter. For 't is but little, my dear Susan, I have seen of sights. Here we had now court scenery, in which I acted but an uncourtier-like part. The queen and princesses had seats prepared for them, which, after a stroll up and down the library, they were glad, I believe, to occupy. The ladies of their suite were then graciously ordered by Her Majesty to be seated, as there was not here the state or public appearance that was observed at the theater, and in the college where the refreshments were given.

As to the poor men, they must never sit in the presence of the queen, be they whom they will or what they will: so they were fain to stand it out.

Miss Planta glided away behind a pillar, and, being there unseen, was able to lounge a little. She was dreadfully tired. So was everybody but myself. For me, my

## THE ROYAL VISIT TO OXFORD

curiosity was so awake to everything, that I seemed insensible to all inconvenience.

I could not, in such a library, prevail with myself to so modest a retirement as Miss Planta's: I considered that the queen had herself ordered my attendance in this expedition, and I thought myself very well privileged to make it as pleasant as I could. I therefore stole softly down the room, to the farther end, and there amused myself with examining what books were within reach of my eyes, and with taking down and looking into all such as were also within reach of my understanding. This was very pleasant sport to me; and had we stayed there till midnight, would have kept me from weariness.

In another college (we saw so many, and in such quick succession, that I recollect not any by name, though all by situation), I saw a performance of courtly etiquette, by Lady Charlotte Bertie, that seemed to me as difficult as any feat I ever beheld, even at Astley's or Hughes's. It was in an extremely large, long, spacious apartment. The king always led the way out, as well as in, upon all entrances and exits; but here, for some reason that I know not, the queen was handed out first and the princesses, and the aide-de-camp and equerry followed. The king was very earnest in conversation with some professor; the attendants hesitated whether to wait or follow the queen; but presently the Duchess of Ancaster, being near the door, slipped out, and Lady Harcourt after her. The Miss Vernons, who were but a few steps from them, went next. But Lady Charlotte, by chance, happened to be very high up in the room, and near to the king. Had I been in her situation, I had surely waited

## ENGLAND

till His Majesty went first; but that would not, I saw, upon this occasion, have been etiquette. She therefore faced the king, and began a march backwards, — her ankle already sprained, and to walk forward, and even leaning upon an arm, was painful to her: nevertheless, back she went, perfectly upright, without one stumble, without ever looking once behind to see what she might encounter; and with as graceful a motion, and as easy an air, as I ever saw anybody enter a long room, she retreated, I am sure, full twenty yards backwards out of one.

For me, I was also, unluckily, at the upper end of the room, looking at some portraits of founders, and one of Henry VII in particular, from Holbein. However, as soon as I perceived what was going forward, — backward, rather, — I glided near the wainscot (Lady Charlotte, I should mention, made her retreat along the very middle of the room); and having paced a few steps backwards, stopped short to recover, and, while I seemed examining some other portrait, disentangled my train from the heels of my shoes, and then proceeded a few steps only more; and then, observing the king turn another way, I slipped a yard or two at a time forwards; and hastily looked back, and then was able to go again according to rule, and in this manner, by slow and varying means, I at length made my escape.

Miss Planta stood upon less ceremony, and fairly ran off.

Since that time, however, I have come on prodigiously, by constant practice, in the power and skill of walking backwards, without tripping up my own heels, feeling my head giddy, or treading my train out of the

## THE ROYAL VISIT TO OXFORD

plaits — accidents very frequent among novices in that business; and I have no doubt but that, in the course of a few months, I shall arrive at all possible perfection in the true court retrograde motion.

In another college, in an old chapter house, I had the opportunity to see another court scene. It was nearly round in shape, and had various old images and ornaments. We were all taken in by the doctors attendant, and the party, with doctors and all, nearly filled it: but, finding it crowded, everybody stood upon the less ceremony, and we all made our examinations of the various contents of the room quite at our ease: till suddenly the king and queen, perceiving two very old-fashioned chairs were placed at the head of the room for their reception, graciously accepted them, and sat down. Nothing could exceed the celerity with which all confusion instantly was over, and the most solemn order succeeded to it. Chairs were presented to the three princesses by the side of the queen, and the Duchess of Ancaster and Lady Harcourt planted themselves at their backs; while Lady Charlotte instantly retreated close to the wall, and so did every creature else in the room, all according to their rank or station, and the royal family remained conspicuous and alone, all crowd dispersed, and the space of almost the whole room unoccupied before them, so close to the walls did everybody respectfully stand.

The last college we visited was Cardinal Wolsey's — an immense fabric. While roving about a very spacious apartment, Mr. F—— came behind me, and whispered that I might easily slip into a small parlor, to rest a little while; almost everybody else having taken some opportunity to contrive themselves a little sitting but myself.



## ENGLAND

I assured him, very truly, I was too little tired to make it worth while; but poor Miss Planta was so woefully fatigued that I could not, on her account, refuse to be of the party. He conducted us into a very neat little parlor, belonging to the master of the college, and Miss Planta flung herself on a chair half-dead with weariness.

Mr. F—— was glad of the opportunity to sit for a moment also; for my part, I was quite alert. Alas! my dear Susan, 't is my mind that is so weak, and so open to disorder; my body, I really find, when it is an independent person, very strong, and capable of much exertion without suffering from it.

Mr. F—— now produced, from a paper repository concealed in his coat pocket, some apricots and bread, and insisted upon my eating; but I was not inclined to the repast, and saw he was half-famished himself; — so was poor Miss Planta: however, he was so persuaded I must both be as hungry and as tired as himself, that I was forced to eat an apricot to appease him.

Presently, while we were in the midst of this regale, the door suddenly opened, and the queen came in! — followed by as many attendants as the room would contain.

Up we all started, myself alone not discountenanced; for I really think it quite respect sufficient never to sit down in the royal presence, without aiming at having it supposed that I have stood bolt upright ever since I have been admitted to it.

Quick into our pockets was crammed our bread, and close into our hands was squeezed our fruit; by which I discovered that our appetites were to be supposed anni-



## THE ROYAL VISIT TO OXFORD

hilated at the same time that our strength was to be invincible.

Very soon after this we were joined by the king, and in a few minutes we all paraded forth to the carriages, and drove back to Nuneham.



V  
THE NAPOLEONIC WARS

## HISTORICAL NOTE

THROUGHOUT Napoleon's career he had in England a persistent and uncompromising enemy that steadily thwarted his dream of European supremacy. On the Continent he was invincible, but the ocean was England's, and try as he would, he could not wrest it from her. And not content with defending her shores, England revived again and again the drooping spirits of the Continental Powers in their life-and-death struggle with the French emperor, and by scattering subsidies and forming coalitions kept alive the spirit that at last gathered strength to pull down the great adventurer from his imperial throne and send him forth to die on a desolate island of the Atlantic.

The three dominant figures in England's long struggle with Napoleon were William Pitt the younger, son of the Earl of Chatham (prime minister in 1783 at the age of twenty-four, died in 1806), Admiral Nelson, whose great victories at the Nile and Trafalgar secured the safety of England and her colonies, and Sir Arthur Wellesley, afterwards the Duke of Wellington, hero of the Peninsular War in Spain and of the battle of Waterloo.

By the treaty of Vienna (1815), England gained Cape Colony (South Africa), Ceylon, British Guiana, Malta, and other important territories. But the long struggle had been won at an enormous cost. From 1793 to 1815, the national debt increased from two hundred and fifty to eight hundred and fifty million pounds. To the popular discontent resulting from the hard times that followed are chiefly due the far-reaching reforms of the nineteenth century.

# THE BATTLE OF THE BALTIC

[1801]

BY THOMAS CAMPBELL

[DURING the struggle with Napoleon, England declared a blockade against the French ports. The Baltic countries united to oppose this. Early in 1801, the British fleet entered the harbor of Copenhagen and opened fire. After the victory of the English, Nelson was so kind to his wounded foes that when he landed in Denmark he was received with shouts of applause.

*The Editor.]*

OF Nelson and the North  
Sing the glorious day's renown,  
When to battle fierce came forth  
All the might of Denmark's crown,  
And her arms along the deep proudly shone;  
By each gun the lighted brand  
In a bold determined hand,  
And the prince of all the land  
Led them on.

Like leviathans afloat  
Lay their bulwarks on the brine;  
While the sign of battle flew  
On the lofty British line:  
It was ten of April morn by the chime:  
As they drifted on their path  
There was silence deep as death;  
And the boldest held his breath  
For a time.

## ENGLAND

But the might of England flush'd  
To anticipate the scene;  
And her van the fleeter rush'd  
O'er the deadly space between.  
"Hearts of oak!" our captains cried, when each gun  
From its adamant lips  
Spread a death-shade round the ships,  
Like the hurricane eclipse  
Of the sun.

Again! again! again!  
And the havoc did not slack,  
Till a feeble cheer the Dane  
To our cheering sent us back; —  
Their shots along the deep slowly boom: —  
Then ceased — and all is wail,  
As they strike the shatter'd sail;  
Or in conflagration pale  
Light the gloom.

Out spoke the victor then  
As he hail'd them o'er the wave,  
"Ye are brothers; ye are men!  
And we conquer but to save: —  
So peace instead of death let us bring:  
But yield, proud foe, thy fleet,  
And make submission meet  
To our king."

Then Denmark blessed our chief  
That he gave her wounds repose;  
And the sounds of joy and grief  
From her people wildly rose,

## THE BATTLE OF THE BALTIC

As death withdrew his shades from the day:  
While the sun look'd smiling bright  
O'er a wide and woeful sight,  
Where the fires of funeral light  
Died away.

Now joy, old England, raise!  
For the tidings of thy might,  
By the festal cities' blaze,  
Whilst the wine cup shines in light;  
And yet amidst that joy and uproar,  
Let us think of them that sleep  
Full many a fathom deep  
By thy wild and stormy steep  
Elsinore!

Brave hearts! to Britain's pride  
Once so faithful and so true,  
On the deck of fame that died,  
With the gallant good Riou:  
Soft sigh the winds of Heaven o'er their grave!  
While the billow mournful rolls  
And the mermaid's song condoles  
Singing glory to the souls  
Of the brave!



## TRAFALGAR

[1805]

BY WILLIAM C. BENNETT

NORTHWEST the wind was blowing  
Our good ships running free;  
Seven leagues lay Cape Trafalgar  
Away upon our lee;  
'T was then, as broke the morning,  
The Frenchman we descried,  
East away, there they lay,  
That day that Nelson died.

That was a sight to see, boys,  
On which that morning shone;  
We counted three-and-thirty,  
Mounseer and stately Don;  
And plain their great three-deckers  
Amongst them we descried, —  
“Safe,” we said, “for Spithead,”  
That day that Nelson died.

Then Nelson spoke to Hardy,  
Upon his face the smile,  
The very look he wore when  
We beat them at the Nile!  
“We must have twenty, Hardy,”  
'T was thus the hero cried;  
And we had twenty, lads,  
That day that Nelson died.









## TRAFALGAR

Up went his latest signal;  
Ah, well, my boys, he knew  
That not a man among us  
But would his duty do!  
And as the signal flew, boys,  
With shouts each crew replied;  
How we cheered as we neared  
The foe, when Nelson died!

We led the weather column,  
But Collingwood, ahead,  
A mile from all, the lee line  
Right through the Frenchman led;  
“And what would Nelson give to  
Be here with us!” he cried,  
As he bore through their roar  
That day that Nelson died.

Well, on the Victory stood, boys,  
With every sail full spread;  
And as we neared them slowly  
There was but little said.  
There were thoughts of home amongst us,  
And as their line we eyed,  
Here and there, perhaps, a prayer,  
That day that Nelson died.

A gun, — the Bucentaure first  
Began with us the game;  
Another, — then their broadsides  
From all sides through us came;

## ENGLAND

With men fast falling round us,  
While not a gun replied,  
With sails rent, on we went,  
That day that Nelson died.

“Steer for their admiral’s flag, boys!”  
But where it flew none knew;  
“Then make for that four-decker,”  
Said Nelson, “men, she’ll do!”  
So, at their Trinidad,  
To get we straightway tried,  
As we broke through their smoke,  
That day that Nelson died.

’T was where they clustered thickest  
That through their line we broke,  
And to their Bucentaure first  
Our thundering broadside spoke,  
We shaved her; — as our shots, boys,  
Crashed through her shattered side,  
She could feel how to keel,  
That day that Nelson died.

Into the Don’s four-decker  
Our larboard broadsides pour,  
Though all we well could spare her  
Went to the Bucentaure.  
Locked to another Frenchman,  
Our starboard fire we plied,  
Gun to gun, till we won,  
That day that Nelson died.



## TRAFALGAR

"They've done for me at last, friend!"

'T was thus they heard him say,

"But I die as I would die, boys,

Upon this glorious day;

I've done my duty, Hardy,"

He cried, and still he cried, —

As below, sad and slow,

We bore him as he died.

On wounded and on dying

The cockpit's lamp shone dim;

But many a groan we heard, lads,

Less for themselves than him.

And many a one among them

Had given, and scarcely sighed,

A limb to save him

Who there in glory died.

As slowly life ebbed from him

His thoughts were still the same:

"How many have we now, boys?"

Still faint and fainter came.

As ship on ship struck to us

His glazing eyes with pride,

As it seemed, flashed and gleamed,

As he knew he conquering died.

We beat them — how, you know, boys,

Yet many an eye was dim;

And when we talked of triumph,

We only thought of him.

## ENGLAND

And still, though fifty years, boys,  
Have gone, who, without pride,  
Names his name, — tells his fame,  
Who at Trafalgar died!

## THE BURIAL OF SIR JOHN MOORE

[1809]

BY CHARLES WOLFE

[IN 1808, Spain rose against Napoleon and was promptly assisted by England. Sir John Moore, the English general, was unexpectedly forced to fight with a much larger force than his own. He was victorious, but fell in the very hour of his victory.

*The Editor.]*

NOT a drum was heard, not a funeral note,  
As his corpse to the ramparts we hurried;  
Not a soldier discharged his farewell shot  
O'er the grave where our hero we buried.

We buried him darkly at dead of night,  
The sods with our bayonets turning;  
By the struggling moonbeams' misty light,  
And the lantern dimly burning.

No useless coffin inclosed his breast,  
Not in sheet nor in shroud we wound him;  
But he lay like a warrior taking his rest,  
With his martial cloak around him.

Few and short were the prayers we said,  
And we spoke not a word of sorrow;  
But we steadfastly gazed on the face that was dead,  
And we bitterly thought of the morrow.

## ENGLAND

We thought as we hollowed his narrow bed,  
And smoothed down his lonely pillow,  
That the foe and the stranger would tread o'er his head,  
And we far away on the billow!

Lightly they'll talk of the spirit that's gone,  
And o'er his cold ashes upbraid him, —  
But little he'll reck, if they let him sleep on  
In the grave where a Briton has laid him.

But half of our heavy task was done  
When the clock struck the hour for retiring:  
And we heard the distant and random gun  
That the foe was sullenly firing.

Slowly and sadly we laid him down,  
From the field of his fame fresh and gory;  
We carved not a line, and we raised not a stone,  
But we left him alone with his glory.

WELLINGTON'S MARCH FROM QUATRE-BRAS  
TO WATERLOO

## WELLINGTON'S MARCH FROM QUATRE-BRAS TO WATERLOO

BY ERNEST CROFTS

(*English painter, 1847*)

WHILE Napoleon was organizing his troops, after his return from Elba, Wellington with an English army and Blücher with the Prussians proceeded to Belgium, where it was evident an encounter would take place. Wellington with many of his officers was at a ball when word was brought that the emperor was at hand. Drums beat, bugles sounded, and in one hour the troops were on the march to Quatre-Bras, where on June 16, 1815, two days before the struggle at Waterloo, a desperate battle was fought in which the English were victorious. On the same day the Prussians were defeated by the French under Marshal Grouchy, and in order to keep in communication with his allies, Wellington was forced to retire from Quatre-Bras toward Brussels.

For several days it had rained furiously and the roads were overflowed with water or deep in mud. Wellington, falling back from Quatre-Bras in the midst of a heavy thunderstorm, halted on the evening of the seventeenth at Waterloo, where he determined to make a final stand against the French, and sent dispatches to Blücher to hasten to his support. Napoleon, too, in pursuit of Wellington, came to Waterloo in the storm and darkness and sent word to Grouchy to advance with all speed, as it was evident that on the morrow a decisive conflict would take place.

In this picture Wellington is seen riding at the head of his soldiers and cheered by a cavalry regiment that has been ordered back to protect the English rear.







## JUST BEFORE WATERLOO

[1815]

BY WILLIAM MAKEPEACE THACKERAY

[ON the 15th of June, 1815, a magnificent ball was given at Brussels, at which the Duke of Wellington was a guest. In the midst of the revelry, a courier announced to him that the troops of Napoleon had crossed the boundary and were near Quatre-Bras. The news quickly ran through the ball-room — through the city. The bugles sounded, the drums beat, and within an hour Wellington and the English forces were on the march.

The selection opens while the people of Brussels are still ignorant of the result of the encounter at Quatre-Bras. There are wild rumors of the coming of the French, and hosts of people are trying to escape from Brussels. Rebecca, the adventuress of the book, has worked upon the timidity of Amelia's brother Jos and induced him to pay her an exorbitant price for her horses. George is the husband of Amelia.

The battle of Waterloo took place on the 18th of June.

*The Editor.]*

THOUGH midnight was long passed, there was no rest for the city [Brussels]. The people were up, the lights in the houses flamed, crowds were still about the doors, and the streets were busy. Rumors of various natures went still from mouth to mouth: one report averred that the Prussians had been utterly defeated; another that it was the English who had been attacked and conquered: a third that the latter had held their ground. This last rumor gradually got strength. No Frenchmen

## ENGLAND

had made their appearance. Stragglers had come in from the army bringing reports more and more favorable: at last an aide-de-camp actually reached Brussels with dispatches from the commandant of that place, who placarded presently through the town an official announcement of the success of the allies at Quatre-Bras, and the entire repulse of the French under Ney after a six hours' battle. The aide-de-camp must have arrived some time while Jos and Rebecca were making their bargain together, or the latter was inspecting his purchase. When he reached his own hotel, he found a score of its numerous inhabitants on the threshold discoursing of the news; there was no doubt as to its truth. And he went up to communicate it to the ladies under his charge. He did not think it was necessary to tell them how he had intended to take leave of them, how he had bought horses, and what a price he had paid for them.

But success or defeat was a minor matter to them, who had only thought for the safety of those they loved. Amelia, at the news of the victory, became still more agitated even than before. She was for going that moment to the army. She besought her brother with tears to conduct her thither. Her doubts and terrors reached their paroxysm; and the poor girl, who for many hours had been plunged into stupor, raved and ran hither and thither in hysteric insanity — a piteous sight. No man writhing in pain on the hard-fought field fifteen miles off, where lay, after their struggles, so many of the brave — no man suffered more keenly than this poor harmless victim of the war. Jos could not bear the sight of her pain. He left his sister in the charge of her stouter

## JUST BEFORE WATERLOO

female companion, and descended once more to the threshold of the hotel, where everybody still lingered, and talked, and waited for more news.

It grew to be broad daylight as they stood here, and fresh news began to arrive from the war, brought by men who had been actors in the scene. Wagons and long country carts laden with wounded came rolling into the town; ghastly groans came from within them, and haggard faces looking up sadly from out of the straw. Jos Sedley was looking at one of these carriages with a painful curiosity — the moans of the people within were frightful — the wearied horses could hardly pull the cart. "Stop! stop!" a feeble voice cried from the straw, and the carriage stopped opposite Mr. Sedley's hotel.

"It is George, I know it is!" cried Amelia, rushing in a moment to the balcony, with a pallid face and loose flowing hair. It was not George, however, but it was the next best thing; it was news of him.

It was poor Tom Stubble, who had marched out of Brussels so gallantly twenty-four hours before, bearing the colors of the regiment, which he had defended very gallantly upon the field. A French lancer had speared the young ensign in the leg, who fell, still bravely holding to his flag. At the conclusion of the engagement, a place had been found for the poor boy in a cart, and he had been brought back to Brussels.

"Mr. Sedley, Mr. Sedley!" cried the boy faintly, and Jos came up almost frightened at the appeal. He had not at first distinguished who it was that called him.

Little Tom Stubble held out his hot and feeble hand. "I'm to be taken in here," he said. "Osborne and and Dobbin said I was; and you are to give the man two

## ENGLAND

napoleons: my mother will pay you." This young fellow's thoughts, during the long, feverish hours passed in the cart, had been wandering to his father's parsonage, which he had quitted only a few months before, and he had sometimes forgotten his pain in that delirium.

The hotel was large, and the people kind, and all the inmates of the cart were taken in and placed on various couches. The young ensign was conveyed up stairs to Osborne's quarters. Amelia and the major's wife had rushed down to him when the latter had recognized him from the balcony. You may fancy the feelings of these women when they were told that the day was over and both their husbands were safe; in what mute rapture Amelia fell on her good friend's neck, and embraced her; in what a grateful passion of prayer she fell on her knees, and thanked the Power which had saved her husband. . . . There was only one man in the army for her: and as long as he was well, it must be owned that its movements interested her little. All the reports which Jos brought from the street fell very vaguely on her ears; though they were sufficient to give that timorous gentleman, and many other people then in Brussels, every disquiet. The French had been repulsed certainly, but it was after a severe and doubtful struggle, and with only a division of the French army. The emperor, with the main body, was away at Ligny, where he had utterly annihilated the Prussians, and was now free to bring his whole force to bear upon the allies. The Duke of Wellington was retreating upon the capital, and a great battle must be fought under its walls probably, of which the chances were more than doubtful. The Duke of Wellington had but twenty thousand British troops on

## JUST BEFORE WATERLOO

whom he could rely, for the Germans were raw militia, the Belgians disaffected; and with this handful His Grace had to resist a hundred and fifty thousand men that had broken into Belgium under Napoleon. Under Napoleon! What warrior was there, however famous and skillful, that could fight at odds with him?

Jos thought of all these things and trembled. So did all the rest of Brussels — where people felt that the fight of the day before was but the prelude to the greater combat which was imminent. One of the armies opposed to the emperor was scattered to the winds already. The few English that could be brought to resist him would perish at their posts, and the conqueror would pass over their bodies into the city. Woe be to those whom he found there! Addresses were prepared, public functionaries assembled and debated secretly, apartments were got ready, and tri-colored banners and triumphal emblems manufactured, to welcome the arrival of His Majesty the emperor and king. The emigration still continued, and wherever families could find means of departure, they fled. . . .

[The 18th] was a Sunday. And Mrs. Major O'Dowd had the satisfaction of seeing both her patients refreshed in health and spirits by some rest which they had taken during the night. She herself had slept on a great chair in Amelia's room, ready to wait upon her poor friend or the ensign, should either need her nursing. When morning came, this robust woman went back to the house where she and her major had their billet; and here performed an elaborate and splendid toilet, befitting the day. And it is very possible that whilst alone in that

## ENGLAND

chamber, which her husband had inhabited, and where his cap still lay on the pillow, and his cane stood in the corner, one prayer at least was sent up to Heaven for the welfare of the brave soldier, Michael O'Dowd.

When she returned, she brought her Prayer-Book with her, and her uncle the dean's famous book of sermons; out of which she never failed to read every Sabbath; not understanding all, haply, not pronouncing many of the words aright, which were long and abstruse (for the dean was a learned man, and loved long Latin words), but with great gravity, vast emphasis, and with tolerable correctness in the main. How often has my Mick listened to these sermons, she thought, and me reading in the cabin of a calm! She proposed to continue this exercise on the present day, with Amelia and the wounded ensign for a congregation. The same service was read on that day in twenty thousand churches at the same hour; and millions of British men and women, on their knees, implored protection of the Father of all.

They did not hear the noise which disturbed our little congregation at Brussels. Much louder than that which had interrupted them two days previously, as Mrs. O'Dowd was reading the service in her best voice, the cannon of Waterloo began to roar. . . . All that day, from morning until past sunset, the cannon never ceased to roar. It was dark when the cannonading stopped all of a sudden.

All of us have read of what occurred during that interval. The tale is in every Englishman's mouth; and you and I, who were children when the great battle was won and lost, are never tired of hearing and recounting



## JUST BEFORE WATERLOO

the history of that famous action. Its remembrance rankles still in the bosoms of millions of the countrymen of those brave men who lost the day. They pant for an opportunity of revenging that humiliation; and if a contest, ending in a victory on their part, should ensue, elating them in their turn, and leaving its cursed legacy of hatred and rage behind to us, there is no end to the so-called glory and shame, and to the alternations of successful and unsuccessful murder, in which two high-spirited nations might engage. Centuries hence, we Frenchmen and Englishmen might be boasting and killing each other still, carrying out bravely the Devil's code of honor.

All our friends took their share and fought like men in the great field. All day long, while the women were praying ten miles away, the lines of the dauntless English infantry were receiving and repelling the furious charges of the French horsemen. Guns which were heard at Brussels were ploughing up their ranks, and comrades falling, and the resolute survivors closing in. Towards evening, the attack of the French, repeated and resisted so bravely, slackened in its fury. They had other foes besides the British to engage, or were preparing for a final onset. It came at last: the columns of the Imperial Guard marched up the hill of Saint-Jean, at length and at once to sweep the English from the height which they had maintained all day, and spite of all: unscared by the thunder of the artillery — which hurled death from the English line — the dark, rolling column pressed on and up the hill. It seemed almost to crest the eminence, when it began to waver and falter. Then it stopped, still facing the shot. Then at last the English troops

## ENGLAND

rushed from the post from which no enemy had been able to dislodge them, and the Guard turned and fled.

No more firing was heard at Brussels — the pursuit rolled miles away. Darkness came down on the field and city: and Amelia was praying for George, who was lying on his face, dead, with a bullet through his heart.



## WATERLOO

[1815]

BY DOUGLAS BROOKE WHEELTON SLADEN

[“THE battle of Waterloo was fought on a glorious day in June; a Sabbath day, clear and warm after the heavy rain of the night, which had entirely ceased ere the roar of battle began. At home, mothers and sisters and sweethearts were praying for the safety of those dear to them who were about to engage in deadly combat. It was while these loved ones were engaged in their devotions at church that the battle commenced, and from many a maiden’s heart, in Kent and elsewhere, went out a fervent petition asking divine protection for the one dearer to her than life; and many a noble boy fought better and died more heroically that awful day, knowing that such a woman was praying for him.”]

“WHAT struck?”

“Half-past ten o’clock.”

As over his saddle-bow he bent,  
He thought of the village church in Kent,  
And said, “She’ll be kneeling soon to pray —  
Perhaps for me, on this Sabbath day.”

Ping! ping!

Hark the bullets wing!

Their cuirassiers sweep across the plain.

“Charge them, our Life Guards!” — They turn again;  
While English beauty is on its knees  
For English valor across the seas.

## ENGLAND

There goes  
The Vanguard of the foes!  
They've taken the wood by Hougoumont!  
"Coldstreams and Fusiliers to the front!"  
Taken again, lads! that's not amiss;  
Your sweethearts at home will boast of this.

Pell-mell,  
Bullet, shot, and shell  
Rained on our infantry thick and fast;  
Many a stout heart will beat its last;  
Blue eyes will moisten many a day  
For good lives lightly given away.

Crash, clash,  
Like a torrent's dash,  
Lancer and cuirassier leap on the square!  
Scarcely a third of the bayonets there.  
Ye who would look on old England again,  
Now must ye prove yourselves Englishmen.

Stamp, stamp,  
With its even tramp,  
Rolls uphill the invincible Guard:  
Falters it at the fiftieth yard?  
Weak, worn, and oft assaulted the foe,  
Yet never its heart misgave it so.

On, on,  
And the fight is won!  
Shot-stricken linesman and thrice-charged Guard  
Glare at them lion-like, hungry and hard;

## WATERLOO

His waiting is done — his hour has come;  
Pent-up fierceness drives bayonets home.

On, on,  
Life Guard and Dragoon!  
An English charge and a red right hand  
Will bring fair years to your fair old land.  
With riven corselet and shivered lance,  
Is reft and shivered the pride of France.

Still, still,  
In the moonlight chill,  
A dying Dragoon looks up to a friend:  
“Tell her I did my part to the end —  
Tell her I died as an Englishman should —  
And give her — her handkerchief — it is my blood.”

There went,  
From a church in Kent,  
An eager and anxious prayer to God  
For lovers, brothers, and sons abroad:  
The fairest and noblest prayed for one —  
Neither lover, nor brother, nor son.

A calm  
After hymn and psalm:  
The preacher in silent thought is bowed,  
Ere he gives out the bidding prayer aloud.  
Hark! what can that long, dull booming be,  
Swept by the east wind across the sea?

Boom, boom,  
Like the voice of doom!

## ENGLAND

The preacher has fought, and knows full well  
The message that booming has to tell,  
And gives out his text: "Let God arise,  
And he shall scatter our enemies."

One night  
In two memories bright;  
One golden hour unwatched at a ball,  
A kerchief taken or given was all.  
"Off to the war to-morrow — good-bye —  
I'll carry it with me until I die!"

He is dead!  
"You have come," she said,  
"To bring me tidings of him I loved?  
Your face has told me your tale — he proved  
Worthy the name I did not know,  
The man that I thought him a year ago."

"He died  
With stern English pride,  
But lived to fight the great battle through;  
His last words were of England and you;  
He died as an English gentleman should,  
And sent you — your handkerchief — rich with his  
blood."

"Ah me!  
Life is sad," moaned she,  
"When all the sun in its sky hath flown!"  
And "One loving bosom is very lone."  
And "Oh, if I might lie by you  
In your soldier's grave at Waterloo!"

“SCOTLAND FOREVER!”

## “SCOTLAND FOREVER!”

BY LADY BUTLER (ELIZABETH THOMPSON)

(*English artist, 1844*)

“ON the afternoon of the 18th of June the Ninety-second Regiment, which was then reduced to two hundred men, found it necessary to charge a column of the enemy, which was coming down upon them, numbering nearly three thousand. The Scots Greys had been placed to the left, in reserve; their duty was clear; they joined in the charge, passing through the ranks of the Highland infantry as best they could, receiving from their countrymen as they passed an enthusiastic welcome, and joining with them in the shout of ‘Scotland forever!’ The French column they charged was enveloped in smoke, which had in no degree cleared when the Greys dashed into the mass, which yielded to the furious onset, and was hurled back in confusion by the impetus of the shock, for it was not imagined that cavalry were near; it was infantry only by which the enemy thought, by the sound of the musketry, they were threatened, and they were lost in amazement at the suddenness and fury of the charge.” The Scots Greys were almost annihilated in this charge.







VI  
THE LAST HUNDRED YEARS  
IN ENGLAND

## HISTORICAL NOTE

GEORGE IV (1820-1830) was succeeded by William IV, on whose death in 1837, Queen Victoria ascended the throne.

During the last hundred years England has waged wars in China, India, Russia, and South Africa. It is not, however, for its wars that this century of her history will be remembered, but rather for the steady growth of democracy at home and for the development of England into a great colonial empire abroad.

A list of the more important reforms will show how far England has advanced in less than a century. In 1823, the criminal law was reformed, the death penalty being abolished for some two hundred offenses. In 1829, the Catholic Emancipation Act made it possible for Roman Catholics to enter Parliament. In 1832, the "rotten boroughs," that is, the electoral districts in which the population had become very small, were abolished, and their seats distributed among the great new manufacturing centers, thus transferring the balance of power to the middle classes. In 1833, slavery was abolished in the colonies, and in the same year the first Factory Act was passed, limiting the labor of children to eight hours a day. In 1867, the suffrage was extended to all householders in towns. In 1868, imprisonment for debt was abolished. In 1870, compulsory education was established. In 1884, male suffrage was made practically universal. In 1888, local self-government was granted. In 1907, old-age pensions were inaugurated, and in 1911, the power of the House of Lords was curtailed.

Queen Victoria died in 1901. During her reign, the longest in English history, England's population doubled, her wealth increased threefold and her trade sixfold. Her colonial possessions were vastly increased, and the colonies of Canada, Australia, Cape Colony, and New Zealand were granted home rule. Victoria was succeeded by her son Edward VII, who was followed in 1910 by George V.

## WHEN VICTORIA BECAME QUEEN

[1837]

BY BENJAMIN DISRAELI, EARL OF BEACONSFIELD

THE daily bulletins became more significant, the crisis was evidently at hand. A dissolution of Parliament at any time must occasion great excitement; combined with a new reign, it inflames the passions of every class of the community. Even the poor begin to hope; the old, wholesome superstition, that the sovereign can exercise power, still lingers; and the suffering multitude are fain to believe that its remedial character may be about to be revealed in their instance. As for the aristocracy in a new reign, they are all in a flutter. A bewildering vision of coronets, stars, and ribbons, smiles, and places at court, haunts their noontide speculations and their midnight dreams. Then we must not forget the numberless instances in which the coming event is deemed to supply the long-sought opportunity of distinction, or the long-dreaded cause of utter discomfiture; the hundreds, the thousands, who mean to get into Parliament, the units who dread getting out. What a crashing change from lounging in St. James's Street to sauntering on Boulogne pier; or, after dining at Brooks's and supping at Crockford's, to be saved from destruction by the friendly interposition that sends you in an official capacity to the marsupial sympathies of Sydney or Swan River!

Now is the time for the men to come forward who have claims: claims for spending their money, which

## ENGLAND

nobody asked them to do, but which, of course, they only did for the sake of the party. They never wrote for their party, or spoke for their party, or gave their party any other vote than their own: but they urge their claims to something; a commissionership of anything, or a consulship anywhere; if no place to be had, they are ready to take it out in dignities. They once looked to the Privy Council, but would now be content with an hereditary honor; if they can have neither, they will take a clerkship in the Treasury for a younger son. Perhaps they may get that in time; at present they go away growling with a gaugership; or having with a desperate dexterity at length contrived to transform a tidewaiter into a landwaiter. But there is nothing like asking, except refusing.

Hark! it tolls! All is over. The great bell of the metropolitan cathedral announces the death of the last son of George III who probably will ever reign in England. He was a good man: with feelings and sympathies: deficient in culture rather than ability; with a sense of duty; and with something of the conception of what should be the character of an English monarch. Peace to his *manes*! We are summoned to a different scene.

In a palace in a garden, not in a haughty keep, proud with the fame but dark with the violence of ages; not in a regal pile, bright with the splendor, but soiled with the intrigues, of courts and factions; in a palace in a garden, meet scene for youth and innocence, and beauty, came a voice that told the maiden that she must ascend her throne!

The Council of England is summoned for the first time within her bowers. There are assembled the prelates

## WHEN VICTORIA BECAME QUEEN

and captains and chief men of her realm; the priests of the religion that consoles, the heroes of the sword that has conquered, the votaries of the craft that has decided the fate of empires; men gray with thought, and fame, and age; who are the stewards of divine mysteries, who have toiled in secret cabinets, who have encountered in battle the hosts of Europe, who have struggled in the less merciful strife of aspiring senates; men, too, some of them, lords of a thousand vassals and chief proprietors of provinces, yet not one of them whose heart does not at this moment tremble as he awaits the first presence of the maiden who must now ascend her throne.

A hum of half-suppressed conversation which would attempt to conceal the excitement, which some of the greatest of them have since acknowledged, fills that brilliant assemblage; that sea of plumes, and glittering stars, and gorgeous dresses. Hush! the portals open; she comes; the silence is as deep as that of a noontide forest. Attended for a moment by her royal mother and the ladies of her court, who bow and then retire, Victoria ascends her throne, a girl, alone, and for the first time, amid an assemblage of men.

In a sweet and thrilling voice, and with a composed mien which indicates rather the absorbing sense of august duty than an absence of emotion, the queen announces her accession to the throne of her ancestors, and her humble hope that divine Providence will guard over the fulfillment of her lofty trust.

The prelates and captains and chief men of her realm then advance to the throne, and kneeling before her, pledge their troth, and take the sacred oaths of allegiance and supremacy.

## ENGLAND

Allegiance to one who rules over the land that the great Macedonian could not conquer; and over a continent of which even Columbus never dreamed; to the queen of every sea, and of nations in every zone.

# THE CHARGE OF THE LIGHT BRIGADE

[1854]

BY ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON

HALF a league, half a league,  
Half a league onward,  
All in the valley of Death  
    Rode the six hundred!  
“Forward, the Light Brigade!  
Charge for the guns!” he said:  
Into the Valley of Death  
    Rode the six hundred.

“Forward, the Light Brigade!”  
Was there a man dismay’d?  
Not tho’ the soldier knew  
    Some one had blunder’d:  
Theirs not to make reply,  
Theirs not to reason why,  
Theirs but to do and die.  
Into the Valley of Death  
    Rode the six hundred.

Cannon to right of them,  
Cannon to left of them,  
Cannon in front of them  
    Volley’d and thunder’d;

## ENGLAND

Storm'd at with shot and shell,  
Boldly they rode and well;  
Into the jaws of death,  
Into the mouth of hell  
Rode the six hundred.

Flash'd all their sabers bare,  
Flash'd as they turn'd in air  
Sabering the gunners there,  
Charging an army, while  
All the world wonder'd.  
Plunged in the battle-smoke,  
Right thro' the line they broke;  
Cossack and Russian  
Reel'd from the saber-stroke  
Shatter'd and sunder'd.  
Then they rode back, but not,  
Not the six hundred.

Cannon to right of them,  
Cannon to left of them,  
Cannon behind them  
Volley'd and thunder'd;  
Storm'd at with shot and shell,  
While horse and hero fell,  
They that had fought so well  
Came thro' the jaws of Death,  
Back from the mouth of hell,  
All that was left of them,  
Left of six hundred.



## BALACLAVA

## BALACLAVA

BY LADY BUTLER (ELIZABETH THOMPSON)

(*English artist, 1844*)

IN 1854 England and France supported Turkey, which had been attacked by Russia, and their armies invaded the Crimea, laying siege to the great Russian fortress of Sebastopol. It was at the battle of Balaclava in this war that the Light Brigade made their famous charge.

When the command to charge across a mile of open ground to the Russian batteries was given, there were, as Tennyson says, —

“Cannon in front of them.”

There was a battery in front and on each flank, and Russian riflemen on both sides. Every soldier realized the hopelessness of the charge and knew that

“Some one had blundered”;

but military discipline prevailed, and without a moment's hesitation the hopeless charge was made. Out of the six hundred and seventy, the killed, wounded, and missing numbered three hundred. There has been much dispute on the question of the responsibility for giving the order. Whether a command was misunderstood and the matter was purely a blunder, or whether the drunkenness of an officer was the cause, will perhaps never be fully established.

This picture shows the survivors staggering back from the bullet-swept plain into the ranks of the British army.





## THE CHARGE OF THE LIGHT BRIGADE

When can their glory fade?  
O the wild charge they made!  
All the world wonder'd.  
Honor the charge they made!  
Honor the Light Brigade,  
Noble six hundred!

## SANTA FILOMENA

[1854-1856]

BY HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW

[In the Crimean War, the arrangements for the care of the soldiers were so inadequate that nine tenths of the men brought to the hospitals died. Florence Nightingale was begged to go and bring order out of chaos. Unlimited authority was given her, and what many looked upon as the "wild experiment" of putting a woman in charge of a military hospital of ten thousand men proved to be a great success. As she walked, lamp in hand, from room to room, the wounded soldiers kissed her very shadow as it fell upon their beds of suffering. It is of her that Longfellow wrote the following poem.]

*The Editor.]*

WHENE'ER a noble deed is wrought,  
Whene'er is spoken a noble thought,  
Our hearts, in glad surprise,  
To higher levels rise.

The tidal waves of deeper souls  
Into our inmost being rolls,  
And lifts us unawares  
Out of all meaner cares.

Honor to those whose words or deeds  
Thus help us in our daily needs,  
And by their overflow  
Raise us from what is low!

## SANTA FILOMENA

Thus thought I, as by night I read  
Of the great army of the dead,  
    The trenches cold and damp,  
    The starved and frozen camp, —

The wounded from the battle-plain,  
In dreary hospitals of pain,  
    The cheerless corridors,  
    The cold and stony floors.

Lo! in that house of misery  
A lady with a lamp I see  
    Pass through the glimmering gloom,  
    And flit from room to room.

And slow, as in a dream of bliss,  
The speechless sufferer turns to kiss  
    Her shadow, as it falls  
    Upon the darkening walls.

As if a door in heaven should be  
Opened and then closed suddenly,  
    The vision came and went,  
    The light shone and was spent.

On England's annals, through the long  
Hereafter of her speech and song,  
    That light its rays shall cast  
    From portals of the past.

## ENGLAND

A Lady with a Lamp shall stand  
In the great history of the land,  
A noble type of good,  
Heroic womanhood.

Nor even shall be wanting here  
The palm, the lily, and the spear,  
The symbols that of yore  
Saint Filomena bore.



## BENJAMIN DISRAELI

[1804-1881]

BY L. F. JENNINGS

[BENJAMIN DISRAELI, Earl of Beaconsfield, was born in 1804. Before he was twenty-two years of age, he had become well known as a writer; but his ambition was political, and he succeeded in entering Parliament. He manifested such talent and ability that he was made Chancellor of the Exchequer, and, in 1868, Premier. He soon lost this office, but returned to power in 1874; and for four years his strong will skillfully guided the foreign policy of Great Britain. In 1881 he died.

Disraeli was a thoroughgoing imperialist, the champion of the aristocracy. Nevertheless, in practice he was liberal, and went so far as to urge establishing the Church of Rome in Ireland, besides advocating several almost revolutionary reforms in England. He was a brilliant orator, always clear and dignified, and witty withal.

*The Editor.]*

THERE is no more difficult body of men to lead in the world than those who constitute the House of Commons, and when it has fallen to Mr. Disraeli's lot to lead them, he has done it with incomparable tact. He never scolds or lectures them, as if they were a pack of naughty children, who ought to be whipped and sent to bed. This is Mr. Gladstone's method of managing his fellow members, and it partly accounts for the success with which he turns a majority for him into a majority against him. Mr. Disraeli, on the other hand, deals patiently with the House, humors it in its fits of petulance or anger, and

often recalls it to a sense of its duty by a few words of good-humored remonstrance. Once, when he had suffered a great defeat, and the House was wild with excitement, and everybody looked to him for a violent speech, he rose calmly and said, "I think the best thing is always to put a good face upon a disagreeable state of affairs, and take that sensible view which may be taken even of the most distressing and adverse occurrences, if you have a command over your temper and your head." In the same way, his trenchant replies to attacks upon himself or his party are always free from malevolence, while at the same time they pierce the tenderest points of his antagonists. He fastens some epithet upon a man which sticks to him for the remainder of his life. Mr. Horsman will always be the "superior person" of the House of Commons. No one who sees Mr. Beresford Hope rise to make a speech will forget his "Batavian grace." Lord Salisbury will be remembered for his "power of spontaneous aversion." Mr. Lowe is the "inspired schoolboy." When Mr. Gladstone professed to disestablish the Irish Church, after supporting the cause of "Church and State" all his life, Mr. Disraeli had the opportunity of pointing out a real case of inconsistency, and he did not fail to use it. He taunted the Liberal leader with endeavoring to "reverse the solemn muniments of the nation at eight days' notice," and with having come forward, "like a thief in the night, to make the enormous sacrifice of all the convictions of his life." His sketch of the eternal "Irish difficulty" is worth reading, even though it suffers much through being detached from a great speech: —

"I never liked the emigration from Ireland. I have

deplored it. I know that the finest elements of political power are men, and therefore I have not sympathized with the political economists who would substitute entirely for men, animals of a lower organization. . . . I am not conscious that I have ever been deficient in sympathy for the Irish people. They have engaging qualities, which I think every man who has any heart must respect. But I must say nothing surprises me more than the general conduct of the Irish people on this subject of sentimental grievances. They are brave, lively, very imaginative, and therefore very sanguine; but going about the world announcing that they are a conquered race, they do appear to me the most extraordinary people in the universe. Every one of us, nations and individuals, is said to have a skeleton in the house. I hope I have not; if I had, I would turn the key upon him. But why do they go about ostentatiously declaring themselves to be a conquered race? If they really were a conquered race, they are not the people who ought to announce it. It is the conquerors from whom we should learn the fact, for it is not the conquered who go about the world and announce their shame and humiliation. (Cheers.) But I entirely deny that the Irish are a conquered race. I deny that they are more a conquered race than the people of any other nation. Therefore, I cannot see that there is any real ground for the doleful tone in which they complain that they are the most disgraced of men, and make that the foundation for the most unreasonable requests. Ireland is not one whit more conquered than England. They are always telling us that the Normans conquered Ireland. Well, I have heard that the Normans conquered England, too (laughter), and the

## ENGLAND

only difference between the two conquests is that while the conquest of Ireland was only partial, that of England was complete. (Renewed laughter.) Then they tell us that a long time ago there was that dreadful conquest by Cromwell, when Cromwell not only conquered but plundered the people. But Cromwell conquered England. (Great laughter.) He conquered the House of Commons. (Renewed laughter.) He ordered that bauble to be taken away, in consequence of which an honorable member, I believe of very advanced Liberal opinions, the other night proposed that we should raise a statue to his memory. (Laughter and cheers.) Well, sir, then we are told that the Dutch conquered Ireland, but, unfortunately, they conquered England, too. They marched from Devonshire to London through the midst of a grumbling population. But the Irish fought like gentlemen for their sovereign, and there is no disgrace in the battle of the Boyne, nor does any shame attach to the conduct of those who were defeated. (Hear, hear!) I wish I could say as much for the conduct of the English leaders at that time. (Hear, hear!) Therefore, the story of the Irish coming forward on all occasions to say that they are a conquered race, and, in consequence of their being a conquered race, to wish to destroy the English institutions, is the most monstrous thing I ever heard of. (Laughter.)”

Lightness and gayety often appear in Mr. Disraeli's speeches when all things seem to be going against him. It is his courage and unfailing good humor which make him many personal friends, even among his bitter political foes. If a man is doomed to be beaten, it is well to see him taking his punishment with a serene countenance

## BENJAMIN DISRAELI

and a cheerful air. Throughout the long and stormy period during which Mr. Disraeli was compelled to remain in the "cold shade of opposition," he never betrayed signs of a failing heart. "The determined and the persevering," as he says in "Lothaire," "need never despair of gaining their object in this world"; and this principle is the keynote to his own life. He allied himself very early with a declining party, and he has remained steadfast to it through almost unexampled vicissitudes. There was a grudge against it in the minds of the people, and it never had a chance of taking up a popular question. All the fruit on the tree fell to the Liberals. Nothing would have been more natural, according to the ordinary behavior of men, than for Mr. Disraeli to have broken down during his long and arduous struggle against a victorious party. He had sat for fifteen years in Parliament before the smallest prospect appeared of his enjoying the solace of office. His party was scattered, demoralized, and cast down. It had no policy before it. Its former long lease of power had rendered the people tired of it; and it had fallen out of accord with the spirit of the age. Younger men and younger ideas were needed in it. Mr. Disraeli was abundantly able to supply ideas, but the very sound of the words "change" or "progress" scared the country party. They distrusted the unknown man who was at their head in the Lower House. He was much too clever for them. He had a head full of ideas — that was decidedly un-English. He had written in newspapers, and could not tell the weight of a bullock by pinching it in the rear. Nothing much worse could be said of a man. The old squires looked askance at the young man with a Hebrew type of face who suddenly appeared

among them. He had no land and no money, no "family," and no titled kinsfolk. To move a stubborn, inert mass such as the Tory party then was might have defied the strength of twenty men. The task fell to the "adventurer," and he had to address himself to it while the party was in deep adversity. The lot of a leader in opposition is at the best never an enviable one. His followers are eager for office; and if he cannot bring them to the desired haven, they reproach him for his want of capacity and enterprise. If he makes a dash at power and fails, they accuse him of foolhardiness and stupidity. "Anybody," they will say, "might have seen that failure was inevitable," although they may all the time have been inciting him to make the attempt. If he goes fast, he is hot-brained; if slow, he is faint-hearted. Mr. Disraeli tried hard for years to bring his party out of the Slough of Despond, and was resisted chiefly by that party itself.

It was not until 1852 that he was first called to office as Chancellor of the Exchequer. Twice afterwards he was compelled to take the same post, with a minority at his back. At length still greater responsibilities were pressed upon him. In the early part of 1868, Lord Derby, under whom Mr. Disraeli had so often served, found his health rapidly declining. He retired from office, and Mr. Disraeli received the commands of the Queen to form a cabinet. When he went down to the House of Commons, on the night of March 5, 1868, everybody expected a memorable speech. The House was crowded, and the new premier was vehemently cheered as he passed through Westminster Hall. In the House itself he was received with equal warmth. The galleries were



## BENJAMIN DISRAELI

filled with people eager to hear the great speech. But Mr. Disraeli does not care to surprise people — at least not in the way they expect. He delivered a short and modest address, and instantly applied himself to the practical work of the House — work which few prime ministers have ever managed so well. The interest felt by the public in his accession to power was not unnatural. Since Mr. Disraeli had entered Parliament, more than thirty years before, only five men had succeeded in climbing before him to the chief place in the country, — Peel, Aberdeen, Russell, Palmerston, and Derby. He had beaten his rival, Gladstone, in the race. Many great men had come and gone during those thirty years, and had missed the chief mark. Sir George Cornewall Lewis, Sir James Graham, Arthur Buller, the Duke of Newcastle, were men of great influence and abilities; but the unknown member, whose faith was that all things in this life will fall to those who wait and persevere, achieved the distinction which they failed to reach. He had fought out his struggle with a grand courage which would alone render him a man memorable in history. He set himself to accomplish his purpose, not in a feverish or impulsive spirit, but with an heroic patience, an indomitable endurance, and a splendid self-reliance which enabled him to face all antagonists, to rise again and again from repeated reverses and blows, to mock at all difficulties, and finally to vanquish every obstacle which was thrust in his path. He had no intimate friends, outside a very small circle of men with whom he has been acting for years. He began as a solitary man in the wastes of London, with the chances of success incalculably against him. He sought no help from outside.

## ENGLAND

He paid court to no man, and, what must be the strangest thing of all to aspiring politicians, to no newspaper. Social prejudices stood in front of him like a wall of iron. Not the least of these prejudices was that which related to the race from which he sprang. His family traced its descent from the pure Sephardim stock: they were Hebrews of the Hebrews. For two generations, at least, they had been Christians, but still the favorite taunt leveled at Mr. Disraeli was founded on his Jewish origin. These reproaches, as usual, he met with defiance. So far from repudiating his race, he has always gloried in it. He fought its battles in the House of Commons, and to him fell the honor of completing the removal of Jewish disabilities. He succeeded in gaining for Jews the right to sit in the House of Commons, and he has done more to break down the unjust prejudice against them than any man of his generation. He has made people at last understand that they do not insult him by calling him a Jew — they only pay him a compliment.



## GLADSTONE'S FIGHT FOR HOME RULE

[1893]

FROM THE ATLANTIC MONTHLY.

[WILLIAM EWART GLADSTONE (1809-1898) was the son of a wealthy merchant of Liverpool. He entered Parliament at the age of twenty-three, the follower of Sir Robert Peel, and rose from one position to another. From the beginning he manifested unusual ability in finance. He professed Tory principles, but in 1866 he supported Lord Russell's bill for the extension of suffrage and the redistribution of seats in the House of Commons. In 1867, he became the leader of the Liberal party. The following year he was made Prime Minister. He succeeded in bringing about the disestablishment of the Irish Church, and in winning some measure of reform in the Irish land system. He was made Premier four times. In 1894, he gave up political office, and in 1898 he died.

Gladstone's only rival was Disraeli; but Disraeli's sparkling oratory was more than balanced by Gladstone's solid principles. Disraeli was ambitious and ready to adopt new standards that promised preferment; Gladstone changed his opinions more than once in the course of his career, but never to win a personal success. His place in history is that of a reformer in finance and a defender of the rights of the English people of all classes.

*The Editor.]*

AND now came the part of Mr. Gladstone's public life which brought both his statesmanship and his character most seriously and most bitterly into dispute. Called again, for the third time, to be Prime Minister of Eng-

## ENGLAND

land, he accepted the great office virtually at the hands of the Irish party, without whose support it could not be held, and with it he accepted their programme of home rule for Ireland.

The wisdom of Mr. Gladstone's course is more questionable than the sincerity of it. The subject on that side is too large for this article, yet a few words must be said. In his first plan, submitted to Parliament on the 8th of April, 1886, he proposed to give Ireland a distinct legislature, with substantial independence in the control of its domestic affairs, but to silence its voice in the larger affairs of the United Kingdom by taking its representation in the Imperial Parliament entirely away. The Liberal party was broken by the startling proposition. Eighty-five of its members seceded and joined the Conservatives to defeat the bill. Mr. Gladstone appealed by a dissolution, and was beaten in the country overwhelmingly. The seceding Liberals, taking the name of "Unionists," formed a coalition with the Conservatives in a Ministry which held the Government, under Lord Salisbury, for six years, until the Parliament expired. Then Mr. Gladstone, still full of vigor, and firm in his resolution to give home rule to Ireland, renewed his appeal to the people. The elections of 1892 went against him in England, but favorably in Scotland and Wales, and strongly favorable in Ireland, of course. Without the Irish members he would be heavily outvoted in the House; with them he had a majority of forty-two. On this dubious verdict he undertook his fourth Ministry, and brought forward his second home rule bill. It was radically different from the first in plan, giving Ireland eighty members in the House of Commons at London

## GLADSTONE'S FIGHT FOR HOME RULE

(with no vote there on matters affecting Great Britain alone), and a domestic legislature of two houses at Dublin. The Commons passed the bill, and the Lords, as expected, threw it out. Mr. Gladstone saw the uselessness of a dissolution, or of agitation against the peers. He went stoutly through other business of the session to the end, and even to April of the following year. Then he resigned. He had finished his political career.

In these home-rule measures Mr. Gladstone had set his hand for the first time to an important undertaking of constructive statesmanship; and the verdict must be that he was not equal to it. His life work has been in reforming statesmanship. In that he has had no peer. He has been, we may say, the greatest of those peaceful revolutionists who lift and carry nations forward, out of old conditions into new; who reconcile their institutions with advancing time, and make them participants in the progress of the world. But this reparative work, most useful, perhaps, that true statesmanship can do, wins commonly less of the admiration of mankind than the framing of political systems and the building of states. Bismarck and Cavour, among Gladstone's contemporaries, are more than likely to rank above him, in present and in future opinion, as belonging to an order of statesmanship that is superior in its kind. The justice of that opinion is far from sure. It turns mostly upon a question of weight in moral qualities that are widely opposed. But the fact of it is to be recognized; and so, too, is the fact that when Gladstone attempted a serious work of constructive statesmanship, he failed.

A grievous ending for so great and so noble a career! It ought to have been ended for him in the serene con-

## ENGLAND

tentment of some crowning success. In no procession of noisy triumph, but by some flower-strewn and beautiful way he should have gone to his retirement with a happily satisfied heart. He had done so much for England, — for Britain, for Ireland! He had labored so long, so hopefully, so valiantly, so hard! He had struck, without favor or fear, at so many wrongs! He had remembered so faithfully the whole people, and borne so calmly the selfish resentments of a selfish class! He had warmed the very heart of the world so often with his generous enthusiasms! He had been for half a century so inspiring a figure in the eyes of all mankind, so chivalrous in standing for Right! One feels that there might fitly have been a trooping of all the people of British race to say Hail and Farewell to him when he went out of public life.

Gladstone's place in English history will be high, and it will be quite apart from any other. He will have no near companionship in his fame. It will be, we think, an eminence assigned to moral qualities more than to intellectual powers. The very sincerity that his enemies have denied to him will be counted perhaps the loftiest of his claims. It will be seen that few men of brilliant gifts and great ambitions have sought with his earnestness for the Right in what they did, or have stood with his courage by what they found it to be. When he braved the scorn and anger of the Church which has always been more to him than to most of its priests, and challenged by the same act his own past, in order to do justice to the people of another creed, and when he made a righteous peace with the Boers in the face of a storm of English wrath, he rose to a greatness

## GLADSTONE'S FIGHT FOR HOME RULE

in character that will be measured in future time with clearer eyes than now.

The persuasive witchery of his eloquence will be poorly understood by generations to come. It is not found in the word, the phrase, the argument, or the thought. It came for the most part from the spirit that warmed the breath of the man, sounded in his voice, looked out of his eyes. It was personal to him, largely drawn from the moral qualities that seemed to be his greater distinction. No man of his day has had such power of persuasion as he. It may not be too bold to say that no man of any time has surpassed him in that power. Yet he was never logically strong. His argumentative writings, the most carefully and deliberately composed, show defects of reasoning that are marked. From controversy with an antagonist like Professor Huxley he was sure to come with wounds. Yet his masterful influence over minds of every class is a certain fact. It was once said by somebody that "Gladstone could persuade anybody to anything — himself included"; and no doubt the epigram carries a significant truth. Fashion a man finely and largely, and make him to be tensely strong in every part of his whole nature, but inject a little, barely a little excess on the moral and emotional side, — a little more of feeling, with pressure of conscience behind it, than logical judgment can quite control, — and we shall have the persuasive man who is over-persuasive sometimes to himself. On the great scale, as in Gladstone, it produces a rare and splendid power for the kind of work he had to do, — a rare and splendid character for the delight and admiration of mankind. It kept him in the strength and beauty of youth till he died. It did more; for he was

## ENGLAND

younger in spirit, younger in the generousities and hospitalities of his mind, when his work was finished than when it began. He, at least, in this questioning nineteenth century, found wellsprings of faith in both God and man, and drank of them to the end.

## THE LATEST ENGLISH REVOLUTION

[1911]

FROM THE OUTLOOK

[IN 1906, the Liberals came into power. This party is opposed to continuing the special privileges which place political power in the hands of powerful families and classes. In 1911, it brought about what has been called the "bloodless revolution," that is, the taking from the House of Lords of the power to veto a bill passed in three successive sessions by the House of Commons.

*The Editor.]*

WHAT has really happened is that the House of Lords can no longer interpose a veto to the will of the people, as expressed by the House of Commons, although, in order to make effective any expression of that will in opposition to the wish of the peers, the House of Commons must pass any measure three separate times, covering a period of not less than two years — which seems to be far enough from permitting the Government majority to exercise a snap judgment as the result of sudden popular excitement. The thing that impressed the Spectator as most significant during the nearly three weeks which intervened between the formal announcement of the Prime Minister that the royal prerogative would be invoked if needful, and the passage of the Parliament Bill by a majority of seventeen in the House of Lords, was that the people of England did not seem to care a rap about the real revolution that was going on.



## ENGLAND

No one on the streets was talking about it. There were no gatherings to discuss it, except here and there a conference between peers of varying views. The tram-cars, the barber-shops, the hotel lobbies, the smoking rooms, were as phlegmatic and uninterested as though the matter of "mending or ending" had been settled long before — as in effect it had been, at the last two popular elections, when excitement had not been wanting. The people had decided, and, having commissioned their elected rulers to act for them, they had gone about their business of farming and trading with a confidence entirely calm, and perhaps a little grim, that the work would be efficiently accomplished.

The humor of the closing drama was supplied by the bluff and venerable Lord Halsbury, who at the age of more than fourscore years flung his gauntlet into the arena, called about him a hundred peers who declined to follow the prudent counsel of the Unionist leader, Lord Lansdowne, and announced that, as for himself and his followers, they would never yield, even if the House of Lords was swamped by five hundred newly created Liberal peers and its ancient Conservative prestige abolished forever. These fighting lords came to be known as the "Die-hards," and sometimes as the "Ditchers," from their desire to occupy the last ditch in their demise; while the peers who followed Lord Lansdowne in recognizing in advance their defeat, and proposed to abstain from voting on the final division, were called "Hedgers." The real tragedy of the event seems to have been the disappointment of the five hundred Liberal candidates for the peerage, who had, it is understood, been carefully chosen, and of course were at least tacitly pledged to the



## THE LATEST ENGLISH REVOLUTION

Liberal programme. For so large a number of ambitious men, with equally ambitious wives and daughters, to get so near that height of privilege and then have their aspirations dashed to earth, implies an aggregate of disappointment that cannot be contemplated without a shudder.

## THE CORONATION OF GEORGE V

[1911]

BY SYDNEY BROOKS

A GRAY, windy day and none the less British for being so; all London pouring Abbey-wards; the cars in the underground trains splashed with the unwonted blaze of admirals', generals', and privy councilors' uniforms; hordes of sightseers with luncheon bags and baskets; much tripping over swords and earnest gazing at gold braid and scarlet tunics and silk knee breeches, amid a torrent of festive, inconsequential talk, as the train speeds on; the whole of Victoria Street one solid mass of motors, peers' coaches, taxicabs, and broughams, each with its vision of nodding plumes and gleaming jewels and resplendent masculinity within; the Abbey, as one draws near it, grayer, more venerable and reposeful than one has ever known it, the fit hearthstone for a world-wide race; a glimpse of stands and tiers multitudinously crowded, of garlands, poles, bunting, and glittering emblems, of windows and roofs alive with faces; then the turning into Dean's Yard, usually the quietest of all the little havens in which London abounds, but now bustling and brilliant with troops and guests and officials, women in court dresses with gorgeous trains carried over the arms, naval and military men, judges and officers of the court, and so into the cloisters, till I am directed for the entrance I want and mount up and up and round and round the seven hundred-year-old cork-

## THE CORONATION OF GEORGE V

screwy stone staircase, till I am drawn through an arch by a courteous and bespangled usher, and find myself in the South Triforium, sixty feet or so above the nave.

It is 8 o'clock. The royal guests are not due to leave Buckingham Palace till 9.30, and the king and queen will not reach the Abbey before 11; so there is plenty of time to look around. The Triforium itself is mainly given up to journalists, but among them are not a few army and navy officers and their wives, for whom seats could not be found elsewhere, and also a gathering of white-robed scholars from Westminster School, come to assert their historic privilege of acclaiming the king. One wanders about, sampling one coign of vantage after another, and finding each different and each superb. The arch nearest to the western door by which the royal guests, the princes and princesses of the blood royal, and Their Majesties, are to enter later on, and through which already is pouring a stream of peers and peeresses, offers perhaps the best view of all. Craning over its edge and looking down on the floor below and up the whole length of the Abbey, what does one see? What will be the sight that will greet the king and queen on their entrance? First, a rich blue Worcester carpet stretching along the vista to the carven height of the choir screen, on which are massed the orchestra and trumpeters round the scarlet, conspicuous robes of Sir Frederick Bridge, the conductor. On either side of the carpet runs a wide border of softer, blue-gray up to the edge of the partitions, three feet or so in height, that wall off the seats from the Abbey floor. The partitions are hung with silver brocade heavily stamped with patterns in royal blue. Behind them, row upon row, tier upon tier, as-

## ENGLAND

cend the seats, their straight lines of pale blue merging exquisitely with the somber gray of the walls and arches. Even at this early hour they are well filled, and every moment sees a new arrival. One looks down on a rippling sea of color. Admirals in gold and blue coats over white breeches and stockings; army officers in scarlet and gold; Scottish chieftains in flowing dark green tartans; the mayors of the great cities in scarlet cloaks edged with miniver and hung with gold badges; here a jumble of shimmering hues, a great glittering splash, that resolves itself under opera glasses into Oriental potentates, with flashing turbans and ropes of jewels; there the Earl Marshal's officers showing people to their places; with crimson, gold-tipped staves; and mingling with all the white plumes of the women and their dresses of white or softest blue or heliotrope or pink or lightest green. Medals and ribbons and orders and clasps and jewels twinkle up at one; only the yellow-gray pillars of the Abbey and the busbied Grenadiers, who alternate with the Yeomen of the Guard, seem motionless; all else goes billowing and sparkling in long harmonies of shade and light.

No stage effect ever began to compare with this. Eyes and brain ache with the ever-moving gorgeousness of it all. Stroke follows upon stroke, gem is added to gem. One watches a peeress, coronet in hand, moving with resplendent grace up the nave and through the arch of the choir screen, her crimson fan-shaped train edged with ermine spreading luxuriously behind her or borne by a page all exquisite in cream and gold and ruffles and long sword; or a prelate in scarlet and lawn; or an Indian visitor, a walking column of jewels; or an ambassador ablaze with stars; or a judge in full glory of wig

## THE CORONATION OF GEORGE V

and scarlet mantle; or a knight in the brilliant cloak of his order. And they enter not in twos or threes, but in dozens, till for sheer relief one is forced to rest one's eyes on the arching roof of the Abbey and its cool and tranquil vistas. The more distinguished among them and those higher in rank pass, as I said, under the arch of the choir screen that spans the nave, beneath the orchestra and the royal trumpeters, who are to sound the fanfares on silver trumpets, and who stand out gorgeously in their murrey and gold. The screen makes an excellent break as one's eye sweeps up the length of the Abbey, but those who are to the westward of it — perhaps half the total number present — find that it blocks their view of the Coronation ceremonies, and except the entrance of the guests and the processions, they can see little or nothing of all that makes up the splendor of the occasion. But being in the Triforium, with a liberty of movement, I can pass to a point beyond the choir screen, to the very angle, indeed, of the nave and transepts, and look down on the altar, the thrones, the coronation chair, the very scene of the king's sacring. Just beyond the screen are the choir stalls, soon to be occupied by the royal guests and representatives and their suites. Above them are tiers upon tiers of seats. Then come the transepts, the north being occupied by the peeresses and the south by the peers, and above them both run vast galleries up to the level of the Triforium itself for members of Parliament and their wives. Beyond the transepts one's eye travels over galleries splashed with the red of judges, the blue and white of admirals, the scarlet and gold of army officers, interspersed with the gleam of women's necks and

## ENGLAND

arms, the shimmer of their dresses and the flash of jewels — past the royal boxes reserved for the king's and queen's and for Queen Alexandra's private friends — till it rests on the glittering cream and gold of the altar, laden with the sacred vessels. In the space between the two transepts, called the "theater," stand the two thrones, in crimson damask, facing the altar and set on a dais, the king's being to the right, the queen's to the left and lower down. A few yards farther on, still facing the altar, is the historic chair of St. Edward, the coronation seat of centuries of English kings. To the right of it, but some little distance, — almost, indeed, under the shadow of an arch, — stand two recognition chairs, facing northwards, with faldstools in soft light blue before them. Down from the altar, over the blue carpet, ripples the sheen of magnificent Persian rugs.

One has not time to take in even one half the "values" of the general setting before the preliminaries begin. From St. Edward's Chapel, behind the sanctuary screen, the regalia are brought forth, are laid on the altar, are dedicated. A procession forms, headed by the trumpeters, followed by the choir, the sub-dean of Westminster and the prebendaries in their crimson robes. Out bursts the splendid hymn, "O God, our Help in Ages past," and with slow ecclesiastical pomp the regalia are borne down the nave and into the tapestried annex, there to await the coming of the king and queen. Hardly are they deposited before the royal guests arrive. To name them would be to simply give a list of all the reigning families and of all the nations on earth. Nothing that has gone before equals the splendor of their approach, as headed by the German crown prince and princess, they sweep

## THE CORONATION OF GEORGE V

up the nave in a profusion of varied magnificence, a flowing opalescent stream of dancing lights, and take their places in the choir stalls. No sooner are they seated than, to the blare of silver trumpets and preceded by pursuivants in mediæval bravery, the Prince of Wales enters, a wholesome, unaffected, boyish figure, in the mantle of the Garter, bearing a vast plumed hat. He is escorted to a seat in the south transept just in front of the peers' benches. All who are bound for the royal boxes pass before him, and all, as they pass, curtsy or bow, and the prince acknowledges their salutation with a pleasing, because natural, jerk of his head and shoulders. He is kept for a while quite busy. His three brothers and his sister, and after them a long train of princes and princesses of the blood royal, each with an attendant page or officer or lady in waiting, make their obeisance on their way to the royal boxes. It is the last of the preliminaries before the arrival of the king and queen. Every seat is taken; the whole massed effect of stateliness and brilliance is at its highest point; all Europe, America, Africa, and the Orient, four hundred millions of British subjects, and the best of English beauty, valor, and worth, are represented there in those radiant seven thousand personages, awaiting the coming of the king and queen.

They come at last. One hears the booming of the guns, the faint echo of cheering without. There is not to-day the feeling of anxious tension that there was nine years ago when no one knew whether King Edward could stand the strain of the long and arduous ceremony. But there is the universal emotion of expectancy fed by all that has gone before and charged with the sense of the



## ENGLAND

full significance of an occasion that is a religious rite and a political sacrament as well as a spectacular pageant. All eyes and thoughts are turned to the west door. Slowly the procession enters. First the Abbey beadle in robes of silken blue; then the ten chaplains in ordinary scarlet — hooded; after them the domestic chaplains, the sacrist bearing the Cross of Westminster, followed by more ecclesiastics. Then the pursuivants, all gold and murrey, and the officers of the orders of knighthood in mantles of glimmering hues, heralds in blazoned coats, household officials, great nobles bearing the standards of the British Dominions, India, Ireland, Scotland, England, and the United Kingdom, Lord Lansdowne holding aloft the Royal Standard, the four knights of the Order of the Garter appointed to hold the canopy for the king's anointing, great political dignitaries, chancellors and lord chamberlains, the Archbishop of Canterbury, more pursuivants, the bearers of the queen's regalia, and then the queen herself, — pale and tense with emotion but splendidly dignified, — her stupendous train borne by eight ladies in snowy white and followed by double dazzling lines of attendant retinue. It is an incomparable moment as the procession flashes onwards and the organ and choir burst into the noble anthem, "I was glad when they said unto me, We will go into the House of the Lord," and the Westminster boys fling out their greeting, "Vivat Regina Maria! Vivat, vivat, vivat!"

There is a pause of but a moment and the final procession enters the Abbey. One watches the passing of the king's regalia with a certain impatience, even though Lord Roberts and Lord Kitchener are among the sword-



## THE CORONATION OF GEORGE V

bearers, and the golden orb and the scepter with the dove and St. Edward's crown are among the precious treasures. At last, firm and upright, in his crimson robe of state, flanked by two bishops and an array of gentlemen-at-arms, followed by his train-bearers in red and white attended by a glowing company of officials and Yeomen of the Guard, comes the king — while the anthem swells to its second movement and the "Vivats" of the Westminster boys crash out again. The service begins at once, that unique and noble service, a tissue of mediæval mysticism, chivalry, feudalism, ecclesiasticism, and politics, blending the sacred and the secular into a pact between the king and his god, and the people and their sovereign. The anointing with oil, the solemn benedictions many times multiplied, the investiture of the sovereign with quasi-sacerdotal robes, the delivery to him of the regalia with prayers and injunctions — make it in certain aspects predominantly an ecclesiastical ceremony. On the other hand, the fourfold "Recognition" with which the service opens and in which the archbishop, turning to the four points of the compass asks the people whether they are willing to do their homage and service to the king, recalls the time when monarchy was elective or rested on the fortunes of war; and the administration of the oath emphasizes its secular and political side. Then again the touching of the king's heels with the golden spurs, the girding on of the sword, the presentation of the glove, and the homage of the bishops, princes, and peers recall the ideas and practices of feudalism and chivalry. And the whole of this curious service, except the "Recognition," is embedded in the communion service of the Church of England,

## ENGLAND

at which king and queen themselves devoutly communicate. Is this amazing and yet moving medley, written in the noblest language and with no part of it that does not bear the seal and warrant of the centuries, destined, I wonder, in the quick-moving times that lie ahead, to be the enduring form which the covenant between the English monarch and his people is destined to assume?

But there is scant leisure or inclination for such questionings while the service itself proceeds, while one's ears and mind and heart are filled and stirred by the chanting of the Litany, while beneath one's eyes the solemn coronation oath is administered and the king is seen to kiss the Bible and sign the roll, while the four highest of English noblemen hold a gleaming canopy of gold over his head and the archbishop anoints him, while the chivalric investiture is in progress and while, when the crowning is accomplished, the peers, with a blinding, simultaneous movement put on their coronets, and "God save the King" resounds through the Abbey, and the trumpets blare, and far off one hears the cannon thundering the glad tidings to the world. Each one of these separate ceremonies has its unforgettable moments when everything that color, music, the utmost splendor of costume and of language, and the solemnities and mysteries of religion can do to flood the emotions and dazzle and beguile the senses is done with superb and compelling effect. The passage of the regalia from throne to altar, the assumption of the emblems of temporal power, the first moment when the crowned and anointed king turns round to face his subjects, the helping of the king onto his throne in reminiscence of the days

## THE CORONATION OF GEORGE V

when the monarch was lifted shield-high for his people to see, the thrilling flavor of a thousand years of kingship in the words and acts of homage, the coming and going of magnificent dignitaries with emblems whose significance is woven with the earliest annals of English nationality, the unrobing of the Monarch at this moment in obedience to hallowed forms, his investment at that moment still in accordance with traditions and meanings that were ancient five hundred years ago, the bowings and kneelings, the prayers and oblations, the crowning of the queen, and the culminating scene when king and queen and bishops kneel at the altar rails and receive the communion while the tremendous words of the Anglican service roll in beauty through the listening Abbey — these are episodes that must surely, in their union of the deepest messages with the most gorgeous of pageants, stay printed on the mind forever.

It is over. The benediction has been pronounced; the *Te Deum* is ringing out; the king and queen have passed into St. Edward's Chapel behind the altar. In a few moments they reappear; the processions are re-formed; the queen, bearing in her right hand her scepter and the cross and in her left the ivory rod with the dove and wearing her crown, passes through the choir and down to the west door, the central and most imposing figure in a long line of beauty and splendor; two minutes later the king, wearing the imperial crown, in his right hand the scepter with the cross, emblem of kingly power and justice, in his left hand the orb, follows in the midst of his retinue; the organ peals "God save the King," and cheer after cheer breaks from the brilliant ranks of guests and spectators. Without a hitch and with every circum-

## ENGLAND

stance of historic pomp the great ceremony is consummated, and as we leave the Abbey there are borne to our ears the thunderous cheers of the multitude without, acclaiming their crowned and anointed sovereigns.

# SCOTLAND

## I

### BALLADS AND LEGENDS OF EARLY SCOTLAND

## HISTORICAL NOTE

AT the time of the Roman occupation of Britain, Scotland was inhabited by Celtic tribes, chiefly Picts, so wild and savage that in spite of expeditions and fortifications they remained unconquered. Not many years after the Romans had left Britain forever, the Scots, a people from northern Ireland, invaded the north of Scotland and settled on the western coast. These are the folk who showed themselves the strongest race and who gave the country its name. They also gave it its religion; for St. Columba and other missionaries from Ireland made their abode on the isle of Iona, and preached the Christian faith in the land.

In the ninth century, the country north of the Forth and the Clyde was ruled by one king, a Scot, and was called Alban. A century later, its name had become Scotland. Not all strangers came with such peaceful intent as St. Columba and his companions, for the horrors of Danish invasions continued from the ninth century to the eleventh; and to this day there is more Scandinavian blood in the Lowlands of Scotland than in any other part of Great Britain. Even in the thirteenth century a bold attempt was made by the Norse, but Alexander III was so successful at the battle of Largs that King Hakon was glad to start for home with his damaged vessels. This ended the invasions of the Northmen. A treaty was made by the two rulers, and three years later the daughter of the King of Scotland married the son of the King of Norway. The child of this marriage, the little Princess Margaret, became Queen of Scotland on the death of Alexander III, but on the way to her kingdom she died.

## LEGENDS OF ST. COLUMBA

[563?]

BY ADAMNAN. NINTH ABBOT OF THE IONIAN  
MONASTERY

[ST. COLUMBA is said to have been born in Ireland, and to have come in 563 with twelve companions to the island of Iona. There he and his brethren built huts for themselves, and also a little church. Around the tiny settlement they raised a wall of turf.

But these earnest men were not satisfied to live quietly in their own houses, and before long Columba with some of his followers set out to see Brude, King of the Picts, who lived near where Inverness now stands, to tell him about the Christian faith, and try to persuade him to accept it. They were successful, and the Picts became Christians. A large monastery was built on Iona, and the island was regarded as so holy a place that for a long while the bodies of the kings of Ireland, Scotland, and even Denmark were brought there for burial.

*The Editor.]*

### HOW ST. COLUMBA OVERCAME THE DRUID BROICHAN

ON a certain day Broichan, whilst conversing with the saint, said to him, "Tell me, Columba, when dost thou propose to set sail?" The saint replied, "I intend to begin my voyage after three days, if God permits me, and preserves my life." Broichan said, "On the contrary, thou shalt not be able, for I can make the winds unfavorable to thy voyage, and cause a great darkness to envelop you in its shade." Upon this the saint observed, "The

## SCOTLAND

almighty power of God ruleth all things, and in his name and under his guiding providence all our movements are directed." What more need I say? That same day, the saint, accompanied by a large number of followers, went to the long lake of the river Nesa (Loch Ness), as he had determined. Then the Druids began to exult, seeing that it had become very dark, and that the wind was very violent and contrary.

Our Columba, therefore, seeing that the sea was violently agitated, and that the wind was most unfavorable for his voyage, called on Christ the Lord and embarked in his small boat; and whilst the sailors hesitated, he the more confidently ordered them to raise the sails against the wind. No sooner was this order executed, while the whole crowd was looking on, than the vessel ran against the wind with extraordinary speed. And after a short time, the wind, which hitherto had been against them, veered round to help them on their voyage, to the intense astonishment of all. And thus throughout the remainder of that day the light breeze continued most favorable, and the skiff of the blessed man was carried safely to the wished-for haven.

### SAINT COLUMBA AND THE WHITE HORSE

In the end of this same week, that is, on the day of the Sabbath, the venerable man and his pious attendant Diormit went to bless the barn, which was near at hand. When the saint had entered in and blessed it and two heaps of winnowed corn that were in it, he gave expression to his thanks in these words, saying, "I heartily congratulate my beloved monks, that this year also, if I am obliged to depart from you, you will have a suffi-



## LEGENDS OF ST. COLUMBA

cient supply for the year." On hearing this, Diormit, his attendant, began to feel sad, and said, "This year at this time, father, thou very often vexest us by so frequently making mention of thy leaving us." But the saint replied to him, "I have a little secret address to make to thee, and if thou wilt promise me faithfully not to reveal it to any one before my death, I shall be able to speak to thee with more freedom about my departure." When his attendant had on bended knees made the promise as the saint desired, the venerable man thus resumed his address: "This day in the Holy Scriptures is called the Sabbath, which means rest. And this day is indeed a Sabbath to me, for it is the last day of my present laborious life, and on it I rest after the fatigues of my labors; and this night at midnight, which commenceth the solemn Lord's day, I shall, according to the sayings of Scripture, go the way of our fathers. For already my Lord Jesus Christ deigneth to invite me; and to Him, I say, in the middle of this night shall I depart, at his invitation. For so it hath been revealed to me by the Lord Himself." The attendant hearing these sad words began to weep bitterly, and the saint endeavored to console him as well as he could.

After this, the saint left the barn, and in going back to the monastery, rested halfway at a place where a cross, which was afterwards erected, and is standing to this day, fixed into a millstone, may be observed on the roadside. While the saint, as I have said, bowed down with old age, sat there to rest a little, behold, there came up to him a white pack-horse, the same that used, as a willing servant, to carry the milk-vessels from the cowshed to the monastery. It came up to the saint, and,

## SCOTLAND

strange to say, laid its head on his bosom — inspired, I believe, by God to do so, as each animal is gifted with the knowledge of things according to the will of the Creator; and knowing that its master was soon about to leave it, and that it would see him no more, began to utter plaintive cries, and like a human being, to shed copious tears on the saint's bosom, foaming and greatly wailing. The attendant seeing this, began to drive the weeping mourner away, but the saint forbade him, saying: "Let it alone, as it is so fond of me, — let it pour out its bitter grief into my bosom. Lo! thou, as thou art a man, and hast a rational soul, canst know nothing of my departure hence, except what I myself have just told you; but to this brute beast, devoid of reason, the Creator Himself hath evidently in some way made it known that its master is going to leave it." And saying this, the saint blessed the work-horse, which turned away from him in sadness.

### THE STAKE WHICH WAS BLESSED BY THE SAINT

At another time there came to St. Columba a very poor peasant, who lived in the district which borders the shores of the Aporic Lake (Lochaber). The blessed man, taking pity on the wretched man, who had not wherewithal to support his wife and family, gave him all the alms he could afford, and then said to him, "Poor man, take a branch from the neighboring wood, and bring it to me quickly." The wretched man brought the wood as he was directed, and the saint, taking it in his own hand, sharpened it to a point like a stake, and, blessing it, gave it back to the destitute man, saying, "Preserve this stake with great care, and it, I believe, will never hurt

## LEGENDS OF ST. COLUMBA

men or cattle, but only wild beasts and fishes; and as long as thou preservest this stake thou shalt never be without abundance of venison in thy house."

The wretched beggar upon hearing this was greatly delighted, and returning home, fixed the stake in a remote place which was frequented by the wild beasts of the forest; and when that next night was past, he went at early morning dawn to see the stake, and found a stag of great size that had fallen upon it and been transfixed by it. Why should I mention more instances? Not a day could pass, so the tradition goes, in which he did not find a stag or hind or some other wild beast fixed upon the stake; and his whole house being thus filled with the flesh of the wild beasts, he sold to his neighbors all that remained after his own family was supplied. But, as in the case of Adam, the envy of the devil found out this miserable man also through his wife, who, not as a prudent matron, but rather like one infatuated, thus spoke to her husband: "Remove the stake out of the earth, for if men, or cattle, perish on it, then thou and I and our children shall be put to death, or led into captivity." To these words her husband replied, "It will not be so, for when the holy man blessed the stake he said it would never injure men or cattle." Still the miserable man, after saying this, yielded to his wife, and taking the stake out of the earth, like a man deprived of his reason, brought it into the house and placed it against the wall. Soon after, his house-dog fell upon it and was killed, and on its death his wife said to him, "One of thy children will fall upon it and be killed." At these words of his wife he removed the stake out of the house, and having carried it to a forest, placed it in the thickest brushwood,

## SCOTLAND

where, as he thought, no animal could be hurt by it; but upon his return the following day, he found a roe had fallen upon it and perished. He then took it away and concealed it by thrusting it under the water in the edge of the river, which may be called in Latin *Nigra Dea*. On returning the next day he found transfixed and still held by it, a salmon of extraordinary size, which he was scarcely able by himself to take from the river and carry home. At the same time he took the stake again back with him from the water, and placed it outside on the top of his house, where a crow, having soon after lighted, was instantly killed by the force of the fall. Upon this, the miserable man, yielding again to the advice of his foolish wife, took down the stake from the housetop, and taking an axe cut it in many pieces, and threw them into the fire. Having thus deprived himself of this effectual means of alleviating his distress, he was again, as he deserved to be, reduced to beggary.

# THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

[1040]

BY WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

[THE historical facts concerning Duncan and Macbeth are as follows: Duncan was King of Moray and Ross, but Macbeth's family, of which Macbeth was the head, also claimed the throne. Rebellion rose, and in battle King Duncan was defeated and slain. Macbeth became King of Scotland, and reigned seventeen years. Then Duncan's son Malcolm raised an army of Scots and English and slew Macbeth, and so won back his father's crown.

*The Editor.]*

## ACT I, SCENE III. *A heath near Forres*

*Thunder. Enter the three Witches*

*First Witch.* Where hast thou been, sister?

*Sec. Witch.* Killing swine.

*Third Witch.* Sister, where thou?

*First Witch.* A sailor's wife had chestnuts in her lap,  
And munch'd, and munch'd, and munch'd: — "Give  
me," quoth I;

"Aroint thee, witch!" the rump-fed ronyon cries.  
Her husband's to Aleppo gone, master o' the Tiger:  
But in a sieve I'll thither sail,  
And, like a rat without a tail,  
I'll do, I'll do, and I'll do.

*Sec. Witch.* I'll give thee a wind.

*First Witch.* Thou'rt kind.

*Third Witch.* And I another.

## SCOTLAND

*First Witch.* I myself have all the other,  
And the very ports they blow,  
All the quarters that they know  
I' th' shipman's card.  
I will drain him dry as hay:  
Sleep shall neither night nor day  
Hang upon his pent-house lid;  
He shall live a man forbid:  
Weary se'nnights nine times nine  
Shall he dwindle, peak and pine:  
Though his bark cannot be lost,  
Yet it shall be tempest-tost.  
Look what I have.

*Sec. Witch.* Show me, show me.

*First Witch.* Here I have a pilot's thumb,  
Wreck'd as homeward he did come.      [*Drums within.*]

*Third Witch.* A drum, a drum!  
Macbeth doth come.

*All.* The weird sisters, hand in hand,  
Posters of the sea and land,  
Thus do go about, about:  
Thrice to thine and thrice to mine,  
And thrice again, to make up nine.  
Peace! the charm's wound up.

*Enter MACBETH and BANQUO*

*Macb.* So foul and fair a day I have not seen.

*Ban.* How far is 't call'd to Forres? What are these  
So wither'd and so wild in their attire,  
That look not like th' inhabitants o' th' earth,  
And yet are on 't? Live you? or are you aught  
That man may question? You seem to understand me,

## THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

By each at once her chappy finger laying  
Upon her skinny lips: you should be women,  
And yet your beards forbid me to interpret  
That you are so.

*Macb.* Speak, if you can: what are you?

*First Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee, thane of  
Glamis!

*Sec. Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee, thane of  
Cawdor!

*Third Witch.* All hail, Macbeth that shalt be king  
hereafter!

*Ban.* Good sir, why do you start; and seem to fear  
Things that do sound so fair? [To the Witches.]

I' th' name of truth,  
Are ye fantastical, or that indeed  
Which outwardly ye show? My noble partner  
You greet with present grace and great prediction  
Of noble having and of royal hope,  
That he seems rapt withal: to me you speak not.  
If you can look into the seeds of time,  
And say which grain will grow and which will not,  
Speak then to me, who neither beg nor fear  
Your favours nor your hate.

*First Witch.* Hail!

*Sec. Witch.* Hail!

*Third Witch.* Hail!

*First Witch.* Lesser than Macbeth, and greater.

*Sec. Witch.* Not so happy, yet much happier.

*Third Witch.* Thou shalt get kings, though thou be  
none:

So all hail, Macbeth and Banquo!

*First Witch.* Banquo and Macbeth, all hail!



## SCOTLAND

*Macb.* Stay, you imperfect speakers, tell me more:  
By Sinel's death I know I am thane of Glamis;  
But how of Cawdor? the thane of Cawdor lives,  
A prosperous gentleman; and to be king  
Stands not within the prospect of belief,  
No more than to be Cawdor. Say from whence  
You owe this strange intelligence? or why  
Upon this blasted heath you stop our way  
With such prophetic greeting? Speak, I charge you.

[Witches *vanish*.]

*Ban.* The earth hath bubbles, as the water has,  
And these are of them. Whither are they vanish'd?

*Macb.* Into the air; and what seem'd corporal melted  
As breath into the wind. Would they had stay'd!

*Ban.* Were such things here as we do speak about?  
Or have we eaten on the insane root  
That takes the reason prisoner?

*Macb.* Your children shall be kings.

*Ban.* You shall be king.

*Macb.* And thane of Cawdor too: went it not so?

*Ban.* To the selfsame tune and words. Who 's here?

### *Enter ROSS and ANGUS*

*Ross.* The King hath happily received, Macbeth,  
The news of thy success; and when he reads  
Thy personal venture in the rebels' fight,  
His wonders and his praises do contend  
Which should be thine or his: silenced with that,  
In viewing o'er the rest o' th' selfsame day,  
He finds thee in the stout Norweyan ranks,  
Nothing afraid of what thyself didst make,  
Strange images of death. As thick as tale



## THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

Came post with post; and every one did bear  
Thy praises in his kingdom's great defence,  
And pour'd them down before him.

*Ang.* We are sent  
To give thee from our royal master thanks;  
Only to herald thee into his sight,  
Not pay thee.

*Ross.* And, for an earnest of a greater honour,  
He bade me, from him, call thee thane of Cawdor:  
In which addition, hail, most worthy thane!  
For it is thine.

*Ban.* [*Aside.*] What, can the Devil speak true?

*Macb.* The thane of Cawdor lives: why do you dress  
me  
In borrow'd robes?

*Ang.* Who was the thane lives yet;  
But under heavy judgement bears that life  
Which he deserves to lose. Whether he was combined  
With those of Norway, or did line the rebel  
With hidden help and vantage, or that with both  
He labour'd in his country's wrack, I know not;  
But treasons capital, confess'd and proved,  
Have overthrown him.

*Macb.* [*Aside.*] Glamis, and thane of Cawdor!  
The greatest is behind. [*To ROSS and ANGUS.*] Thanks  
for your pains.

[*To Ban.*] Do you not hope your children shall be  
kings,  
When those that gave the thane of Cawdor to me  
Promised no less to them?

*Ban.* That trusted home  
Might yet enkindle you unto the crown,

## SCOTLAND

Besides the thane of Cawdor. But 't is strange:  
And, oftentimes, to win us to our harm,  
The instruments of darkness tells us truths,  
Win us with honest trifles, to betray 's  
In deepest consequence.  
Cousins, a word, I pray you.

*Macb.* [Aside.] Two truths are told,  
As happy prologues to the swelling act  
Of the imperial theme. — I thank you, gentlemen.  
[Aside.] This supernatural soliciting  
Cannot be ill, cannot be good: if ill,  
Why hath it given me earnest of success,  
Commencing in a truth? — I'm thane of Cawdor.  
If good, why do I yield to that suggestion  
Whose horrid image doth unfix my hair  
And make my seated heart knock at my ribs,  
Against the use of nature? Present fears  
Are less than horrible imaginings:  
My thought, whose murder yet is but fantastical,  
Shakes so my single state of man that function  
Is smother'd in surmise, and nothing is  
But what is not.

*Ban.* Look, how our partner 's rapt.

*Macb.* [Aside.] If chance will have me king, why,  
    chance may crown me,  
Without my stir.

*Ban.* New honours come upon him,  
Like our strange garments, cleave not to their mould  
But with the aid of use.

*Macb.* [Aside.] Come what come may,  
Time and the hour runs through the roughest day.

*Ban.* Worthy Macbeth, we stay upon your leisure.

## THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

*Macb.* Give me your favour: my dull brain was wrought

With things forgotten. Kind gentlemen, your pains  
Are register'd where every day I turn

The leaf to read them. Let us toward the King.

Think upon what hath chanced, and, at more time,

The interim having weigh'd it, let us speak

Our free hearts each to other.

*Ban.*

Very gladly.

*Macb.* Till then, enough. Come, friends. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV. *Forres. The palace*

*Flourish. Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN,  
LENNOX, and Attendants*

*Dun.* Is execution done on Cawdor? Are not  
Those in commission yet return'd?

*Mal.*

My liege,

They are not yet come back. But I have spoke

With one that saw him die: who did report

That very frankly he confess'd his treasons,

Implored your highness' pardon and set forth

A deep repentance: nothing in his life

Became him like the leaving it; he died

As one that had been studied in his death

To throw away the dearest thing he owed,

As 't were a careless trifle.

*Dun.*

There's no art

To find the mind's construction in the face:

He was a gentleman on whom I built

An absolute trust.

## SCOTLAND

*Enter* MACBETH, BANQUO, ROSS, *and* ANGUS

O worthiest cousin!

The sin of my ingratitude even now  
Was heavy on me: thou art so far before  
That swiftest wind of recompense is slow  
To overtake thee. Would thou hadst less deserved,  
That the proportion both of thanks and payment  
Might have been mine! only I have left to say,  
More is thy due than more than all can pay.

*Macb.* The service and the loyalty I owe,  
In doing it, pays itself. Your highness' part  
Is to receive our duties; and our duties  
Are to your throne and state children and servants,  
Which do but what they should, by doing every thing  
Safe toward your love and honour.

*Dun.*

Welcome hither:

I have begun to plant thee, and will labour  
To make thee full of growing. Noble Banquo,  
That hast no less deserved, nor must be known  
No less to have done so, let me infold thee  
And hold thee to my heart.

*Ban.*

There if I grow,

The harvest is your own.

*Dun.*

My plenteous joys,

Wanton in fulness, seek to hide themselves  
In drops of sorrow. Sons, kinsmen, thanes,  
And you whose places are the nearest, know  
We will establish our estate upon  
Our eldest, Malcolm, whom we name hereafter  
The Prince of Cumberland; which honour must  
Not unaccompanied invest him only,

## THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

But signs of nobleness, like stars, shall shine  
On all deservers. From hence to Inverness,  
And bind us further to you.

*Macb.* The rest is labour, which is not used for you.  
I'll be myself the harbinger and make joyful  
The hearing of my wife with your approach;  
So humbly take my leave.

*Dun.* My worthy Cawdor!

*Macb.* [*Aside.*] The Prince of Cumberland! that is a  
step

On which I must fall down, or else o'erleap,  
For in my way it lies. Stars, hide your fires;  
Let not light see my black and deep desires:  
The eye wink at the hand; yet let that be,  
Which the eye fears, when it is done, to see. [*Exit.*

*Dun.* True, worthy Banquo; he is full so valiant,  
And in his commendations I am fed;  
It is a banquet to me. Let's after him,  
Whose care is gone before to bid us welcome:  
It is a peerless kinsman. [*Flourish. Exeunt.*

### SCENE V. *Inverness.* MACBETH'S castle

*Enter* LADY MACBETH, *reading a letter*

*Lady M.* [*Reads.*] They met me in the day of success:  
and I have learned by the perfectest report, they have  
more in them than mortal knowledge. When I burned  
in desire to question them further, they made themselves  
air, into which they vanished. Whiles I stood rapt in  
the wonder of it, came missives from the King, who all-  
hailed me 'Thane of Cawdor;' by which title, before,  
these weird sisters saluted me, and referred me to the

## SCOTLAND

coming on of time, with 'Hail, king that shalt be!' This have I thought good to deliver thee, my dearest partner of greatness, that thou mightst not lose the dues of rejoicing, by being ignorant of what greatness is promised thee. Lay it to thy heart, and farewell."

Glamis thou art, and Cawdor; and shalt be  
What thou art promised: yet do I fear thy nature;  
It is too full o' th' milk of human kindness  
To catch the nearest way: thou wouldst be great,  
Art not without ambition, but without  
The illness should attend it: what thou wouldst highly,  
That wouldst thou holily; wouldst not play false,  
And yet wouldst wrongly win: thou'dst have, great  
Glamis,  
That which cries "Thus thou must do, if thou have it";  
And that which rather thou dost fear to do  
Than wishest should be undone. Hie thee hither,  
That I may pour my spirits in thine ear;  
And chastise with the valour of my tongue  
All that impedes thee from the golden round,  
Which fate and metaphysical aid doth seem  
To have thee crown'd withal.

### *Enter a Messenger*

What is your tidings?

*Mess.* The king comes here to-night.

*Lady M.*

Thou 'rt mad to say it:

Is not thy master with him? who, were 't so,  
Would have inform'd for preparation.

*Mess.* So please you, it is true: our thane is coming:  
One of my fellows had the speed of him,

## THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

Who, almost dead for breath, had scarcely more  
Than would make up his message.

*Lady M.* Give him tending;  
He brings great news. *[Exit Messenger.]*

The raven himself is hoarse  
That croaks the fatal entrance of Duncan  
Under my battlements. Come, you spirits  
That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here,  
And fill me from the crown to the toe top-full  
Of direst cruelty! make thick my blood;  
Stop up the access and passage to remorse,  
That no compunctious visitings of nature  
Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between  
The effect and it! Come to my woman's breasts,  
And take my milk for gall, you murth'ring ministers,  
Wherever in your sightless substances  
You wait on nature's mischief! Come, thick night,  
And pall thee in the dunnest smoke of hell,  
That my keen knife see not the wound it makes,  
Nor heaven peep through the blanket of the dark,  
To cry "Hold, hold!"

*Enter MACBETH*

Great Glamis! worthy Cawdor!  
Greater than both, by the all-hail hereafter!  
Thy letters have transported me beyond  
This ignorant present, and I feel now  
The future in the instant.

*Macb.* My dearest love,  
Duncan comes here to-night.

*Lady M.* And when goes hence?

*Macb.* To-morrow, as he purposes.



## SCOTLAND

*Lady M.*

O, never

Shall sun that morrow see!

Your face, my thane, is as a book where men  
May read strange matters. To beguile the time,  
Look like the time; bear welcome in your eye,  
Your hand, your tongue: look like the innocent flower,  
But be the serpent under 't. He that 's coming  
Must be provided for: and you shall put  
This night's great business into my dispatch;  
Which shall to all our nights and days to come  
Give solely sovereign sway and masterdom.

*Macb.* We will speak further.

*Lady M.*

Only look up clear;

To alter favour ever is to fear:

Leave all the rest to me.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE VI. *Before MACBETH's castle*

*Hautboys and torches. Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, BANQUO, LENNOX, MACDUFF, ROSS, ANGUS, and Attendants*

*Dun.* This castle hath a pleasant seat; the air  
Nimbly and sweetly recommends itself  
Unto our gentle senses.

*Ban.* This guest of summer,  
The temple-haunting martlet, does approve,  
By his loved masonry, that the heaven's breath  
Smells wooingly here: no jutty, frieze,  
Buttress, nor coign of vantage, but this bird  
Hath made his pendent bed and procreant cradle:  
Where they most breed and haunt, I have observed,  
The air is delicate.



# THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

*Enter* LADY MACBETH

*Dun.* See, see, our honour'd hostess!  
The love that follows us sometime is our trouble,  
Which still we thank as love. Herein I teach you  
How you shall bid God 'ild us for your pains,  
And thank us for your trouble.

*Lady M.* All our service  
In every point twice done and then done double  
Were poor and single business to contend  
Against those honours deep and broad wherewith  
Your majesty loads our house: for those of old,  
And the late dignities heap'd up to them,  
We rest your hermits.

*Dun.* Where 's the thane of Cawdor?  
We coursed him at the heels, and had a purpose  
To be his purveyor: but he rides well;  
And his great love, sharp as his spur, hath holp him  
To his home before us. Fair and noble hostess,  
We are your guest to-night.

*Lady M.* Your servants ever  
Have theirs, themselves and what is theirs, in compt,  
To make their audit at your highness' pleasure,  
Still to return your own.

*Dun.* Give me your hand,  
Conduct me to mine host: we love him highly,  
And shall continue our graces towards him.  
By your leave, hostess. [*Kissing her. Exeunt.*]

## SCOTLAND

### SCENE VII. *Corridor in MACBETH's castle*

*Hautboys and torches. Enter a Sewer, and divers Servants with dishes and service, and pass over the stage. Then enter MACBETH*

*Macb.* If it were done when 't is done, then 't were well

It were done quickly. If th' assassination  
Could trammel up the consequence, and catch  
With his surcease success; that but this blow  
Might be the be-all and the end-all here,  
But here, upon this bank and shoal of time,  
We'd jump the life to come. But in these cases  
We still have judgement here; that we but teach  
Bloody instructions, which, being taught, return  
To plague the inventor: this even-handed justice  
Commends th' ingredients of our poison'd chalice  
To our own lips. He's here in double trust;  
First, as I am his kinsman and his subject,  
Strong both against the deed; then, as his host,  
Who should against his murderer shut the door,  
Not bear the knife myself. Besides, this Duncan  
Hath borne his faculties so meek, hath been  
So clear in his great office, that his virtues  
Will plead like angels, trumpet-tongued, against  
The deep damnation of his taking-off;  
And pity, like a naked new-born babe,  
Striding the blast, or heaven's cherubin, horsed  
Upon the sightless couriers of the air,  
Shall blow the horrid deed in every eye,  
That tears shall drown the wind. I have no spur

## THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

To prick the sides of my intent, but only  
Vaulting ambition, which o'erleaps itself  
And falls on th' other —

*Enter* LADY MACBETH

How now! what news?

*Lady M.* He has almost supp'd: why have you left  
the chamber?

*Macb.* Hath he ask'd for me?

*Lady M.* Know you not he has?

*Macb.* We will proceed no further in this business:  
He hath honour'd me of late; and I have bought  
Golden opinions from all sorts of people,  
Which would be worn now in their newest gloss,  
Not cast aside so soon.

*Lady M.* Was the hope drunk  
Wherein you dress'd yourself? hath it slept since?  
And wakes it now, to look so green and pale  
At what it did so freely? From this time  
Such I account thy love. Art thou afeard  
To be the same in thine own act and valour  
As thou art in desire? Wouldst thou have that  
Which thou esteem'st the ornament of life,  
And live a coward in thine own esteem,  
Letting "I dare not" wait upon "I would,"  
Like the poor cat i' th' adage?

*Macb.* Prithee, peace:  
I dare do all that may become a man;  
Who dares do more is none.

*Lady M.* What beast was 't, then,  
That made you break this enterprise to me?  
When you durst do it, then you were a man;

## SCOTLAND

And, to be more than what you were, you would  
Be so much more the man. Nor time nor place  
Did then adhere, and yet you would make both:  
They have made themselves, and that their fitness  
now

Does unmake you. I have given suck, and know  
How tender 't is to love the babe that milks me:  
I would, while it was smiling in my face,  
Have pluck'd my nipple from his boneless gums,  
And dash'd the brains out, had I so sworn as you  
Have done to this.

*Mach.*

If we should fail?

*Lady M.*

We fail!

But screw your courage to the sticking-place,  
And we'll not fail. When Duncan is asleep —  
Whereto the rather shall his day's hard journey  
Soundly invite him — his two chamberlains  
Will I with wine and wassail so convince  
That memory, the warder of the brain,  
Shall be a fume, and the receipt of reason  
A limbeck only: when in swinish sleep  
Their drenched natures lie as in a death,  
What cannot you and I perform upon  
The unguarded Duncan? what not put upon  
His spongy officers, who shall bear the guilt  
Of our great quell?

*Mach.*

Bring forth men-children only;

For thy undaunted mettle should compose  
Nothing but males. Will it not be received,  
When we have mark'd with blood those sleepy two  
Of his own chamber and used their very daggers,  
That they have done 't?

## THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

*Lady M.* Who dares receive it other,  
As we shall make our griefs and clamour roar  
Upon his death?

*Macb.* I am settled, and bend up  
Each corporal agent to this terrible feat.  
Away, and mock the time with fairest show:  
False face must hide what the false heart doth know.  
[*Exeunt.*]

ACT II, SCENE I. *Court within* MACBETH'S castle

*Enter BANQUO, and FLEANCE bearing a torch before him*

*Ban.* How goes the night, boy?

*Fle.* The moon is down; I have not heard the clock.

*Ban.* And she goes down at twelve.

*Fle.* I take 't, 't is later, sir.

*Ban.* Hold, take my sword. There 's husbandry in  
heaven;

Their candles are all out. Take thee that too.

A heavy summons lies like lead upon me,

And yet I would not sleep: merciful powers,

Restrain in me the cursed thoughts that nature

Gives way to in repose!

*Enter* MACBETH *and a Servant with a torch*

Give me my sword.

## Who's there?

*Macb.* A friend.

*Ban.* What, sir, not yet at rest? The king's a-bed:  
He hath been in unusual pleasure, and  
Sent forth great largess to your offices.  
This diamond he greets your wife withal,

## SCOTLAND

By the name of most kind hostess; and shut up  
In measureless content.

*Macb.* Being unprepared,  
Our will became the servant to defect;  
Which else should free have wrought.

*Ban.* All 's well.  
I dreamt last night of the three weird sisters:  
To you they have show'd some truth.

*Macb.* I think not of them:  
Yet, when we can entreat an hour to serve,  
We would spend it in some words upon that business,  
If you would grant the time.

*Ban.* At your kind'st leisure.

*Macb.* If you shall cleave to my consent, when 't is,  
It shall make honour for you.

*Ban.* So I lose none  
In seeking to augment it, but still keep  
My bosom franchised and allegiance clear,  
I shall be counsell'd.

*Macb.* Good repose the while!

*Ban.* Thanks, sir: the like to you!

[*Exeunt* BANQUO and FLEANCE.]

*Macb.* Go bid thy mistress, when my drink is ready,  
She strike upon the bell. Get thee to bed.

[*Exit* Servant.]

Is this a dagger which I see before me,  
The handle toward my hand? Come, let me clutch thee.  
I have thee not, and yet I see thee still.  
Art thou not, fatal vision, sensible  
To feeling as to sight? or art thou but  
A dagger of the mind, a false creation,  
Proceeding from the heat-oppressed brain?

## THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

I see thee yet, in form as palpable  
As this which now I draw.  
Thou marshall'st me the way that I was going;  
And such an instrument I was to use.  
Mine eyes are made the fools o' th' other senses,  
Or else worth all the rest; I see thee still,  
And on thy blade and dudgeon gouts of blood,  
Which was not so before. There 's no such thing;  
It is the bloody business which informs  
Thus to mine eyes. Now o'er the one half-world  
Nature seems dead, and wicked dreams abuse  
The curtain'd sleep; now witchcraft celebrates  
Pale Hecate's offerings, and wither'd murder,  
Alarum'd by his sentinel, the wolf,  
Whose howl 's his watch, thus with his stealthy pace,  
With Tarquin's ravishing strides, towards his design  
Moves like a ghost. Thou sure and firm set earth,  
Hear not my steps, which way they walk, for fear  
Thy very stones prate of my whereabout,  
And take the present horror from the time,  
Which now suits with it. Whiles I threat, he lives:  
Words to the heat of deeds too cold breath gives.  
[*A bell rings.*]

I go, and it is done; the bell invites me.  
Hear it not, Duncan; for it's a knell  
That summons thee to heaven or to hell. [Exit.]

### [SCENE II]

*Enter* LADY MACBETH

*Lady M.* That which hath made them drunk hath  
made me bold;

## SCOTLAND

What hath quench'd them hath given me fire. Hark!  
Peace!

It was the owl that shriek'd, the fatal bellman,  
Which gives the stern'st good-night. He is about it:  
The doors are open; and the surfeited grooms  
Do mock their charge with snores: I have drugg'd their  
possets,

That death and nature do contend about them,  
Whether they live or die.

*Macb.* [*Within.*] Who 's there? what, ho!

*Lady M.* Alack, I am afraid they have awaked,  
And 't is not done. The attempt, and not the deed,  
Confounds us. Hark! I laid their daggers ready;  
He could not miss 'em. Had he not resembled  
My father as he slept, I had done 't.

*Enter MACBETH*

My husband!

*Macb.* I have done the deed. Didst thou not hear a  
noise?

*Lady M.* I heard the owl scream and the crickets  
cry.

Did not you speak?

*Macb.* When?

*Lady M.* Now.

*Macb.* As I descended?

*Lady M.* Ay.

*Macb.* Hark!

Who lies i' th' second chamber?

*Lady M.* Donalbain.

*Macb.* This is a sorry sight. [*Looking on his hands.*]

*Lady M.* A foolish thought, to say a sorry sight.



## THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

*Macb.* There 's one did laugh in 's sleep, and one cried  
"Murther!"

That they did wake each other: I stood and heard  
them:

But they did say their prayers, and address'd them  
Again to sleep.

*Lady M.* There are two lodged together.

*Macb.* One cried "God bless us!" and "Amen" the  
other,

As they had seen me with these hangman's hands,  
Listening their fear. — I could not say "Amen,"  
When they did say "God bless us!"

*Lady M.* Consider it not so deeply.

*Macb.* But wherefore could not I pronounce "Amen"?  
I had most need of blessing, and "Amen"  
Stuck in my throat.

*Lady M.* These deeds must not be thought  
After these ways; so, it will make us mad.

*Macb.* Methought I heard a voice cry "Sleep no  
more!

Macbeth does murther sleep," — the innocent sleep,  
Sleep that knits up the ravell'd sleeve of care,  
The death of each day's life, sore labour's bath,  
Balm of hurt minds, great nature's second course,  
Chief nourisher in life's feast, —

*Lady M.* What do you mean?

*Macb.* Still it cried "Sleep no more!" to all the house:  
"Glamis hath murther'd sleep, and therefore Cawdor  
Shall sleep no more; Macbeth shall sleep no more."

*Lady M.* Who was it that thus cried? Why, worthy  
thane,

You do unbend your noble strength, to think

## SCOTLAND

So brainsickly of things. Go get some water,  
And wash this filthy witness from your hand.  
Why did you bring these daggers from the place?  
They must lie there: go carry them; and smear  
The sleepy grooms with blood.

*Macb.* I'll go no more:  
I am afraid to think what I have done;  
Look on 't again I dare not.

*Lady M.* Infirm of purpose!  
Give me the daggers: the sleeping and the dead  
Are but as pictures: 't is the eye of childhood  
That fears a painted devil. If he do bleed,  
I'll gild the faces of the grooms withal;  
For it must seem their guilt. [*Exit. Knocking within.*]

*Macb.* Whence is that knocking?  
How is 't with me, when every noise appals me?  
What hands are here? ha! they pluck out mine eyes.  
Will all great Neptune's ocean wash this blood  
Clean from my hand? No, this my hand will rather  
The multitudinous seas incarnadine,  
Making the green one red.

### *Re-enter* LADY MACBETH

*Lady M.* My hands are of your colour; but I shame  
To wear a heart so white. [*Knocking within.*] I hear  
a knocking  
At the south entry: retire we to our chamber:  
A little water clears us of this deed:  
How easy is it, then! Your constancy  
Hath left you unattended. [*Knocking within.*] Hark!  
more knocking.  
Get on your nightgown, lest occasion call us,

## THE MURDER OF KING DUNCAN

And show us to be watchers. Be not lost  
So poorly in your thoughts.

*Macb.* To know my deed, 't were best not know my-  
self!

[*Knocking within.*

Wake Duncan with thy knocking! I would thou couldst!

[*Exeunt.*

# THE INVASION OF THE NORSEMEN

[1263]

BY CHARLES MACKAY

## I

HAKON, King of Norway, call'd his men of might,  
Sea-captains and Vikingers — his veterans in fight;  
And set sail for Scotland's coast  
With a well-apparel'd host,  
Fully twenty thousand strong —  
When the summer days grew long —  
In the fairest fleet that ever the North Sea billows bore,  
To harry it and pillage it, and hold it evermore.

## II

Mile on mile extended, o'er the ocean blue,  
Sail'd the ships of battle, white and fair to view —  
Running races on the sea,  
With their streamers waving free,  
From their saucy bows all day  
Dashing up the scornful spray,  
And leaving far behind them, in the darkness of the  
    night,  
Unborrow'd from the firmament, long tracks of liquid  
    light.

## III

Past the isles of Shetland lay the monarch's path,  
Round the isles of Orkney and the Cape of Wrath,

## THE INVASION OF THE NORSEMEN

'Mid the islands of the West  
That obey'd his high behest —  
The Lewis, and Uist, and Skye,  
And the countless isles that lie  
Between the wide Atlantic and Albyn's mountains  
brown,  
And paid him homage duly, and fealty to his crown.

### IV

Music and rejoicing follow'd on their way,  
Drinking and carousing nightly till the day.  
Every sailor in the fleet  
Felt his heart with pleasure beat,  
Every soldier in the ships  
Had a smile upon his lips,  
As he drank, and saw in fancy, reeking sword and flar-  
ing brand,  
And the rapine, and the violence, and the carnage of the  
land.

### V

Not amid the mountains of the rugged North  
Would the mighty Hakon send his legions forth;  
Not by highland loch or glen  
Would he land his eager men; —  
Not on banks of moorland stream  
Were their thirsty swords to gleam; —  
But farther to the southward, from the rocks of bare  
Argyll  
To the sloping hills of Renfrew, and the grassy meads of  
Kyle.

## SCOTLAND

### VI

In the vales of Carrick, smiling by the sea,  
In the woods of Lennox, in the Lothians three,  
There was fatness all the year —  
There were sheep and fallow-deer —  
There was mead to fill the horn —  
There were kye and there was corn, —  
There was food for hungry Norsemen, with spoil to last  
    them long,  
And lordly towers to revel in, with music and with  
    song.

### VII

Like scarts upon the wing, by the hope of plunder  
    led,  
Pass'd the ships of Hakon with sails like pinions spread.  
But the tidings went before  
To the inland, from the shore;  
And from crag to mountain crag,  
At the terror of his flag,  
Arose a cry of warning, and a voice of loud alarm,  
That call'd the startled multitudes to gather and to  
    arm.

### VIII

Every mountain-summit had its beal-fire bright;  
All Argyll, ere sunset, crown'd its hills with light,  
And from Morven to Cantyre  
Lit the chain of signal-fire;  
From Cantyre to Cowal's coast  
Blazed a warning of the host

## THE INVASION OF THE NORSEMEN

Of savage Norse invaders that to spoil and harry came,  
With their lust and with their hunger — with the sword  
and with the flame.

### IX

Glen call'd out to mountain — mount to moorland  
brown,  
Village call'd to village, town gave voice to town;  
And the bells in every tower  
Rang the tocsin hour by hour,  
Until old Dunedin heard,  
And the Lothians three were stirr'd,  
And sent their yeomen westward to struggle hand to  
hand  
For their wives and for their children, for their homes  
and native land.

### X

Wives had no endearment for a laggard lord;  
Maidens had no love-looks and no kindly word  
For the lover who was slow  
To march out against the foe.  
Even maids themselves put on  
Coat of mail and habergeon;  
Threw the snood off for the helmet, left the distaff for  
the spear,  
To die for sake of Scotland, with a sire or lover dear.

### XI

Young King Alexander march'd his legions forth,  
From eastward to the westward, from southward to the  
north:

## SCOTLAND

High his flashing falchion gleam'd,  
In his blue eye valor beam'd,  
In his heart high courage glow'd,  
As in pride of youth he rode  
With the flower of Scotland's people, to defend her  
sacred soil,  
And repel the Norse mauraunders that came down for  
blood and spoil.

### XII

With him rode the Comyn, grown in battles gray,  
With a thousand bowmen ready for the fray,  
With a tongue to give command,  
And a rough untiring hand;  
With a cheek in battle scarr'd,  
And a soul to pity hard;  
When he drew his sword for battle, and flung away the  
sheath,  
It was death to him who struggled with the Comyn of  
Monteith.

### XIII

And the Bishop of St. Andrew's, a priest but in his  
name,  
In his heart a soldier, with all his warriors came.  
And the stalwart Earl of Fife  
Led his vassals to the strife —  
Full a thousand fighting men,  
Strong of hand and sharp of ken,  
And ready each to die at the bidding of his lord;  
But readier still for Scotland to draw the avenging  
sword.



# THE INVASION OF THE NORSEMEN

## XIV

From his northern mountains and his lochs afar  
March'd the Earl of Caithness, ready aye for war,  
With his pibroch sounding shrill  
To his clansmen of the hill;  
And the Earl of March, new wed,  
Left his happy bridal bed  
At the first war-cry of danger that broke upon his ears,  
And join'd King Alexander, with twice a thousand spears.

## XV

Thirsting for the conquest, eager for the fray,  
Hakon sail'd by Arran at the dawn of day;  
But as up the Firth of Clyde  
He came proudly with the tide,  
Rose a storm upon the deep,  
And with wild and fitful sweep  
Howl'd aloft amid the rigging; while the sun look'd pale  
and wan,  
Through the clouds and driving vapors as the tempest  
hurried on.

## XVI

To the ship of Hakon came his stanchest men —  
Holder, Sweno, Ratho, Hingst, and Innisfen,  
Irminsule, and Loke, and Harr,  
Each a chieftain fierce in war;  
In the foray, hand to hand,  
On the sea or on the land;  
Loving fighting more than counsel, blazing torch than  
morning shine;  
The foremost in the battle, and the hindmost at the wine.

## SCOTLAND

### XVII

Short was Hakon's counsel, and the signal flew  
From captain on to captain, from crew again to crew,  
That by Largs, ere noon of day,  
They should land within the bay, —  
And through all the ships there ran  
A rejoicing, man with man,  
That the hour had come at last, when the sword should  
    leave its sheath,  
And the clothyard shaft its quiver for the revelry of  
    death.

### XVIII

Scotland's king was ready — Scotland's patriot men,  
Marshal'd round their monarch from mountain, strath,  
    and glen,  
And from every height around  
Seem'd to issue from the ground.  
Thirty thousand men that day  
Met the Norsemen in the bay,  
And fought, but not for pillage, nor for glory in the  
    strife,  
But for God and for their country — for their freedom  
    and their life.

### XIX

Loud the shock resounded on the battle-field,  
Clink of sword and buckler, clang of spear and shield —  
Whir of arrows in the blast,  
On their errand flying fast;  
And a shouting loud and high,  
And a shrill continuous cry,

## THE INVASION OF THE NORSEMEN

From either side arising, as th' impetuous legions met,  
And the green fresh sward was trodden deep, and dank,  
and gory-wet.

### XX

Loud the voice of Hakon sounded 'mid the fray,  
Alexander's louder cheer'd the Scots that day;  
And the kings press'd on to meet,  
Through the arrows thick as sleet,  
Through the living and the dead,  
Holding high the dauntless head —  
To fight in single combat, and to struggle hand to hand,  
For the glory of the battle and the mastery of the land.

### XXI

And the fierce Earl Comyn sought the Norseman Harr;  
The bishop singled Ratho from the ranks of war;  
And the Earls of March and Fife,  
In the sharp-contested strife,  
Fought with Irminsule and Loke,  
Thrust for thrust, and stroke for stroke;  
And the Earl of Caithness drove the haughty Innisfen  
Back again into the ocean with a hundred of his men.

### XXII

Harr fell deadly wounded by the Comyn's blade;  
Ratho fled to seaward, faint and sore dismay'd;  
While Loke, with mortal wound,  
Fell exhausted on the ground,  
And Hingst sank down to rest,  
With the death-shaft in his breast;

## SCOTLAND

When a sudden panic seized on the whole Norwegian  
foe,  
And they fled like flying dust, when the Norland tem-  
pests blow.

### XXIII

Down upon them swooping in their sudden rout,  
Came King Alexander with exulting shout —  
Crying, “Strike for Scotland’s sake,  
And a bloody vengeance take  
For the insult borne too long —  
For the centuries of wrong —  
For the murder and the ravage they have done within  
our lands; —  
Down upon them, Scottish hearts! Strike, and spare  
not, Scottish hands!”

### XXIV

Fighting, flying, struggling — with his scatter’d host  
Hakon saw, despairing, that the day was lost.  
Of his twenty thousand men  
Not a third were left him then,  
The fearful tale to tell  
Of the slaughter that befell;  
And Hakon, iron-hearted, who had never wept before,  
With his hands his pale face cover’d, and sobb’d upon  
the shore.

### XXV

Flying their pursuers, faint, with pallid lips,  
Hakon and his captains stagger’d to their ships;  
And ere nightfall, many a one,  
That had sail’d when day begun

## THE INVASION OF THE NORSEMEN

As if life were in her sides  
To defy the winds and tides,  
Was driven before the tempest, her tall mast snapp'd in  
twain,  
A helpless wreck on Arran, ne'er to sail the seas again.

### XXVI

Through the Kyles, storm-batter'd, Hakon held his way,  
By Cantyre and Islay on to Colonsay:  
And when dawn'd the morning light  
Not a vessel was in sight,  
But his own ship scudding by  
On the gloomy shore of Skye,  
Dismantled 'mid the hurricane that still around him  
blew,  
With danger all around him and a spirit-broken crew.

### XXVII

Thus he sail'd to Orkney; but by night nor day,  
To his men around him, did one word betray  
All the anguish of his heart —  
Though at times a sudden start,  
And a short uneasy pace,  
And the flushing of his face,  
Show'd the grief and rage within him, as he mourn'd  
with silent lips  
For his hope of conquest lost, for his sailors and his ships.

### XXVIII

In the bay of Kirkwall, shelter'd from the gale,  
His sad crew dropp'd their anchor, and furl'd the tat-  
ter'd sail.

## SCOTLAND

And the king was led on shore,  
Weak, and faint, and spirit-sore,  
Seeing — heeding — knowing nought  
But his own despairing thought —  
A thought of bitter shame, that he had not died that  
day,  
With his face towards the mountains, in the thickest of  
the fray.

### XXIX

To his couch they led him, once so bold and strong,  
And they watch'd beside him tenderly and long;  
But all human care was vain  
To relieve him of his pain:  
So the mighty Hakon died  
In his sorrow and his pride,  
And they buried him in Orkney; and Norsemen never  
more  
Set sail to harry Scotland, or plunder on her shore.

## SIR PATRICK SPENS

### AN OLD BALLAD

[It was planned to marry the little Princess Margaret, "the Maid of Norway," to the son of Edward I of England, but she died on the voyage from Norway to Scotland. The following ballad may possibly be connected with this voyage.

*The Editor.]*

THE king sits in Dunfermline town,  
Drinking the blude-red wine:  
"O whare will I get a skeely skipper  
To sail this new ship of mine?"

O up and spake an elden knight,  
Sat at the king's right knee:  
"Sir Patrick Spens is the best sailør  
That ever sailed the sea."

Our king has written a braid letter,  
And sealed it with his hand,  
And sent it to Sir Patrick Spens,  
Was walking on the strand.

"To Noroway, to Noroway,  
To Noroway o'er the faem;  
The king's daughter of Noroway,  
'T is thou maun bring her hame!"

## SCOTLAND

The first word that Sir Patrick read,  
Sae loud loud laughed he;  
The neist word that Sir Patrick read,  
The tear blindit his e'e.

“O wha is this has done this deed,  
And tauld the king of me,  
To send us out at this time of the year,  
To sail upon the sea?

“Be it wind, be it weet, be it hail, be it sleet,  
Our ship must sail the faem;  
The king's daughter of Noroway,  
'T is we must fetch her hame.”

They hoysed their sails on Monenday morn  
Wi' a' the speed they may;  
They hae landed in Noroway  
Upon a Wodensday.

They hadna been a week, a week,  
In Noroway, but twae,  
When that the lords o' Noroway  
Began aloud to say:

“Ye Scottishmen spend a' our king's goud,  
And a' our queenis fee.”  
“Ye lie, ye lie, ye liars loud!  
Fu' loud I hear ye lie!

“For I brought as much white monie  
As gane my men and me, —



## SIR PATRICK SPENS

And I brought a half-fou o' gude red goud  
Out o'er the sea wi' me.

"Make ready, make ready, my merrymen a'!  
Our gude ship sails the morn."

"Now, ever alake! my master dear,  
I fear a deadly storm!

"I saw the new moon, late yestreen  
Wi' the auld moon in her arm;  
And if we gang to sea, master,  
I fear we 'll come to harm."

They hadna sailed a league, a league,  
A league, but barely three,  
When the lift grew dark, and the wind blew loud,  
And gurly grew the sea.

The ankers brak, and the topmasts lap,  
It was sic a deadly storm;  
And the waves came o'er the broken ship,  
Till a' her sides were torn.

"Oh where will I get a gude sailòr,  
To take my helm in hand,  
Till I can get up to the tall topmast,  
To see if I can spy land?"

"O here am I, a sailor gude,  
To take the helm in hand,  
Till you go up to the tall topmast, —  
But I fear you 'll ne'er spy land."

## SCOTLAND

He hadna gane a step, a step,  
A step, but barely ane,  
When a bout flew out of our goodly ship,  
And the salt sea it came in.

“Gae fetch a web o’ the silken claith,  
Another o’ the twine,  
And wap them into our ship’s side,  
And letna the sea come in.”

They fetched a web o’ the silken claith,  
Another o’ the twine,  
And they wapped them roun’ that gude ship’s side,  
But still the sea came in.

O laith laith were our gude Scots lords  
To weet the cork-heeled shoon!  
But lang or a’ the play was played,  
They wat their hats aboon.

And mony was the feather-bed  
That flatter’d on the faem;  
And mony was the good lord’s son  
That never mair came hame.

The ladyes wrang their fingers white,  
The maidens tore their hair;  
A’ for the sake of their true loves,  
For them they ’ll see nae mair.

O lang lang may the ladyes sit,  
Wi’ their fans into their hand,

## SIR PATRICK SPENS

Before they see Sir Patrick Spens  
Come sailing to the strand!

And lang lang may the maidens sit,  
Wi' their goud kaims in their hair,  
A' waiting for their ain dear loves,  
For them they 'll see nae mair.

O forty miles off Aberdeen  
'T is fifty fathoms deep,  
And there lies gude Sir Patrick Spens  
Wi' the Scots lords at his feet.



II  
TWO SCOTTISH HEROES

.

## HISTORICAL NOTE

THE death of the "Maid of Norway" was the cause of many years of warfare; for there were no less than thirteen claimants to the crown of Scotland. Edward I of England was asked to decide which one had the best right, and he seized the opportunity to declare himself suzerain of the kingdom. He gave the crown to John Baliol; but this new ruler was less obedient than Edward had expected, and therefore he was taken to England as a prisoner. Edward then subdued Scotland, as he thought. If the Scots had only been united, years of struggle and bloodshed might have been prevented; but while, as a whole, the folk of Scottish blood sought freedom from England, the Norman nobles, a powerful class, favored Edward.

The first to raise the Scots against Edward was William Wallace, who led a popular uprising, and in the battle of Stirling destroyed a strong English force. In 1298, Edward again invaded Scotland with a great army, and defeated Wallace at the battle of Falkirk. Five years later Wallace was captured and executed.

In 1306, the banner of revolt was again raised, this time by Robert Bruce, a distant heir to the throne of Scotland. He was at first unsuccessful and was compelled to leave the country, but soon returned, and within two years had freed Scotland from English rule. In 1314, King Edward II invaded Scotland with a great army, but was totally defeated at the battle of Bannockburn. Fourteen years later, after another unsuccessful invasion, England acknowledged Bruce as King of Scotland and relinquished all claims to that country.

## THE CAPTURE OF WILLIAM WALLACE

[1305]

BY JANE PORTER

[ACCORDING to tradition, Wallace was given up to the English by a fellow countryman called Sir John Monteith. As King Edward looked upon it, Wallace was a traitor, and he was first hanged, then beheaded. His head was put up on a pole on London Bridge. His body was quartered, and each of the four parts was sent to a town of Scotland, that the Scots might fear to resist the might of England.

*The Editor.]*

A CHIEFTAIN on horseback suddenly emerged from the trees which led to the castle, and drew to their side. Edwin was wrapped in his plaid, and, cautiously concealing his face, that no chance of his recognition might betray his companion, he walked briskly on without any shade over the noble contour of a form which for majesty and grace was unequaled in Scotland, and could not be mistaken. He, too, moved swiftly forward. The horseman spurred after him. Perceiving himself pursued, and therefore known, and aware that he must be overtaken, he suddenly stopped. Edwin drew his sword, and would have given it into the hand of his friend, but Wallace, putting it back, rapidly answered: "Leave my defense to this unweaponed arm. I would not use steel against my countrymen, but none shall take me while I have a sinew to resist."

The chieftain now checked his horse in front of Wal-

## SCOTLAND

lace, and respectfully raising his visor, discovered Sir John Monteith. At sight of him Edwin dropped the point of his yet uplifted sword; and Wallace, stepping back, "Monteith," said he, "I am sorry for this encounter. If you would be safe from the destiny which pursues me, you must retire immediately, and forget that we have met." "Never," cried Monteith; "I know the ingratitude of an envious country drives the bravest of her champions from our borders, but I also know what belongs to myself! To serve you at all hazards! And by conjuring you to become my guest in my castle on the Firth of Clyde, I would demonstrate my grateful sense of the dangers you once incurred for me, and I therefore thank fortune for this rencounter."

In vain Wallace expressed his determination not to bring peril on any of his countrymen by sojourning under any roof, till he was far away from Scotland. In vain he urged to Monteith the outlawry which would await him should the infuriated abthanes<sup>1</sup> discover that he had given shelter to the man whom they had chosen to suppose a traitor, and denounce as one. Monteith, after equally unsuccessful persuasion on his side, at last said that he knew a vessel was now lying at Newark, near his castle, in which Wallace might immediately embark; and he implored him, by past friendship, to allow him to be his guide to its anchorage. To enforce this supplication, he threw himself off his horse, and, with the protestations of a fidelity that trampled on all dangers, entreated even with sobs, not to be refused the last comfort he should ever know in his now degraded country. "Once I saw Scotland's steady champion, the brave Douglas,

<sup>1</sup> Superior thanes, or gentry.



## THE CAPTURE OF WILLIAM WALLACE

rified from her shores! Do not then doom me to a second grief, bitterer than the first: do not you yourself drive me from the side of her last hero! Ah! let me behold you, companion of my school-days, friend, leader, benefactor! till the sea wrests you forever from my eyes!" Exhausted and affected, Wallace gave his hand to Monteith; the tear of gratitude stood in his eye. He looked affectionately from Monteith to Edwin, from Edwin to Monteith: "Wallace shall yet live in the memory of the trusty of this land! you, my friend, prove it. I go richly forth, for the hearts of good men are my companions."

As they journeyed along the devious windings of the Clyde, and saw at a distance the aspiring turrets of Rutherglen, Edwin pointed out to them, and said, "From that church a few months ago did you dictate a conqueror's terms to England." "And now that very England makes me a fugitive," returned Wallace. "Oh! not England!" interrupted Edwin; "you bow not to her. It is blind, mad Scotland, who thus thrusts her benefactor from her." "Ah! then, my Edwin," rejoined he, "read in me the history of thousands. So various is the fate of a people's idol; to-day he is worshiped as a god, to-morrow cast into the fire!"

Monteith turned pale at this conversation; and quickening his steps, hurried in silence past the opening of the valley which presented the view of Rutherglen.

Night overtook the travelers near the little village of Lumloch, about two hours' journey from Glasgow. Here a storm coming on, Monteith advised his friends to take shelter and rest. "As you object to implicate others," said he, "you may sleep secure in an old barn which at present has no ostensible owner. I remarked

## SCOTLAND

it while passing this way from Newark. But I rather wish you would forget this too chary regard for others, and lodge with me in the neighboring cottage." Wallace was insensible to the pelting of the elements; his unsubdued spirit wanted rest for neither mind nor body: but the broken voice and lingering step of the young Edwin, who had severely sprained his foot in the dark, penetrated his heart; and notwithstanding that the resolute boy, suddenly rallying himself, declared that he was neither weary nor in pain, Wallace seeing he was both, yielded a sad consent to be conducted from the storm. "But not," said he, "to the house. We will go into the barn, and there, on the dry earth, my Edwin, we may gratefully repose."

Monteith did not oppose him further, and, pushing open the door, Wallace and Edwin entered. Their conductor soon after followed with a light from the cottage; and, pulling down some heaped straw, strewed it on the ground for a bed. "Here I shall sleep like a prince!" cried Edwin, throwing himself along the scattered truss. "But not," returned Monteith, "till I have disengaged you from your wet garments, and preserved your arms and brigandine from the rust of this night." Edwin, sunk in weariness, said little in opposition, and, having suffered Monteith to take away his sword and to unbrace his plated vest, dropped at once on the straw in a profound sleep.

Wallace, that he might not disturb him by debate, yielded to the request of Monteith; and having resigned his armor also, waved him a good-night. Monteith nodded the same, and closed the door upon his victims. . . .

## THE CAPTURE OF WILLIAM WALLACE

From Rutherglen to Lumloch no place had presented itself in which Monteith thought he could so judiciously plant an ambuscade to surprise the unsuspecting Wallace. And in this village he had stationed so large a force of ruthless savages (brought for the occasion by Hali-burton from the Irish island of Rathlin) that their employer had hardly a doubt of this night being the last of his too trusting friend's existence. These Rathliners knew of neither Wallace nor his exploits; but the lower order of Scots, however they might fear to succor his distress, loved his person, and felt so bound to him by his actions that Monteith durst not apply to any one of them to second his villainy.

The hour of midnight passed, and yet he could not summon courage to lead his men to their nefarious attack. Twice they urged him, before he arose from his affected sleep — for sleep he could not; guilt had “murdered sleep!” and he lay awake restless, and longing for the dawn; and yet ere that dawn, the deed must be accomplished! A cock crew from a neighboring farm. “That is the sign of morning, and we have done nothing,” exclaimed a surly ruffian, who leaned on his battle-axe in an opposite corner of the apartment. “No, it is the signal of our enemy's captivity!” cried Monteith. “Follow me, but gently. If ye speak a word, or a single target rattle, before ye all fall upon him, we are lost! It is a being of supernatural might, and not a mere man whom you go to encounter. He that first disables him shall have a double reward.”

“Depend upon us!” returned the sturdiest ruffian; and stealing cautiously out of the cottage, the party advanced with noiseless steps toward the barn. Mon-

## SCOTLAND

teith paused at the door, making a sign to his men to halt while he listened. He put his ear to a crevice, not a murmur was within. He gently raised the latch, and setting the door wide open, with his finger to his lip, beckoned his followers.

## THE CORONATION OF ROBERT BRUCE

[1306]

BY GRACE AGUILAR

[ROBERT BRUCE, who had had a good claim to the throne in the days of Baliol, had left a grandson of the same name, and this second Robert Bruce now became King of Scotland — provided he could win back his kingdom from the English. His coronation took place at Scone, but the famous Stone of Scone, on which other kings had sat to be crowned, had been carried to England by Edward. Whoever laid the crown upon the head of Bruce would run the risk of a traitor's death. The Earl of Fife, to whom the duty belonged, was a friend to the English; but the earl's place was filled by his courageous sister, the Countess of Buchan.

*The Editor.]*

BRIGHTLY and blithely dawned the 26th of March, 1306, for the loyal inhabitants of Scone. Few who might gaze on the olden city, and marked the flags and pennons waving gayly and proudly on every side; the rich tapestry flung over balconies or hung from the massive windows, in every street; the large branches of oak and laurel, festooned with gay ribbons, that stood beside the entrance of every house which boasted any consequence; the busy citizens in goodly array, with their wives and families, bedecked to the best of their ability, all, as inspired by one spirit, hurrying in the direction of the abbey yard, joining the merry clamor of eager voices to the continued peal of every bell of which the old town could boast, sounding loud and joyously even above the

## SCOTLAND

roll of the drum or the shrill trumpet call; those who marked these things might well believe Scotland was once again the same free land which had hailed in the same town the coronation of Alexander the Third, some years before. Little would they deem that the foreign foemen still thronged her feudal holds and cottage homes, that they waited but the commands of their monarch to pour down on all sides upon the daring individual who thus boldly assumed the state and solemn honor of a king, and, armed but by his own high heart and a handful of loyal followers, prepared to resist, defend, and *free*, or *die* for Scotland.

There was silence — deep, solemn, yet most eloquent silence, reigning in the abbey church of Scone. The sun shining in that full flood of glory we sometimes find in the infant spring, illumined as with golden luster the long, narrow casements, falling thence in flickering brilliance on the pavement floor, its rays sometimes arrested, to revolve in heightened luster from the glittering sword or the suit of half-mail of one or other of the noble knights assembled there. The rich plate of the abbey, all at least which had escaped the cupidity of Edward, was arranged with care upon the various altars; in the center of the church was placed the abbot's oaken throne which was to supply the place of the ancient stone, the coronation seat of the Scottish kings — no longer there, its absence felt by one and all within that church as the closing seal to Edward's infamy — the damning proof that as his slave, not as his sister kingdom, he sought to render Scotland. From the throne to the high altar, where the king was to receive the eucharist, a carpet of rich brocaded Genoa velvet was laid down; a cushion of

## THE CORONATION OF ROBERT BRUCE

the same elegantly wrought material marked the place beside the spot where he was to kneel. Priests, in their richest vestments, officiated at the high altar; six beautiful boys, bearing alternately a large waxen candle, and the golden censers filled with the richest incense, stood beside them, while opposite the altar and behind the throne, in an elevated gallery, were ranged the seventy choristers of the abbey, thirty of whom were youthful novices; behind them a massive screen or curtain of tapestry concealed the organ, and gave a yet more startling and thrilling effect to its rich deep tones, thus bursting, as it were, from spheres unseen.

The throne was already occupied by the patriot king, clothed in his robes of state; his inner dress was a doublet and vest of white velvet, slashed with cloth of silver; his stockings, fitting tight to the knee, were of the finest woven white silk, confined where they met the doublet with a broad band of silver; his shoes of white velvet, brodered with silver, in unison with his dress; a scarf of cloth of silver passed over his right shoulder, fastened there by a jeweled clasp, and, crossing his breast, secured his trusty sword to his left side; his head, of course, was bare, and his fair hair, parted carefully on his arched and noble brow, descended gracefully on either side; his countenance was perfectly calm, unexpressive of aught save of a deep sense of the solemn service in which he was engaged. There was not the faintest trace of either anxiety or exultation — naught that could shadow the brows of his followers, or diminish by one particle the love and veneration which in every heart were rapidly gaining absolute dominion.

On the right of the king stood the Abbot of Scone, the



## SCOTLAND

Archbishop of St. Andrew's, and the Bishop of Glasgow, all of which venerable prelates had instantaneously and unhesitatingly declared for the Bruce; ranged on either side of the throne, according more to seniority than rank, were seated the brothers of the Bruce and the loyal barons who had joined his standard. Names there were already famous in the annals of patriotism — Fraser, Lennox, Athol, Hay — whose stalwart arms had so nobly struck for Wallace, whose steady minds had risen superior to the petty emotions of jealousy and envy which had actuated so many of similar rank. These were true patriots, and gladly and freely they once more rose for Scotland. Sir Christopher Seaton, brother-in-law to the Bruce, Somerville, Keith, St. Clair, the young Lord Douglas, and Thomas Randolph, the king's nephew, were the most noted of those now around the Bruce; yet on that eventful day not more than fourteen barons were mustered round their sovereign, exclusive of his four gallant brothers, who were in themselves a host. All these were attired with the care and gallantry their precarious situation permitted; half-armor, concealed by flowing scarfs and graceful mantles, or suits of gayer seeming among the younger knights, for those of the barons' followers of gentle blood and chivalric training were also admitted within the church, forming a goodly show of gallant men. Behind them, on raised seats, which were divided from the body of the church by an open railing of ebony, sat the ladies of the court, the seat of the queen distinguished from the rest by its canopy and cushion of embroidered taffeta, and among those gentle beings fairest and loveliest shone the maiden of Buchan, as she sat in smiling happiness between the



## THE CORONATION OF ROBERT BRUCE

youthful daughter of the Bruce, the Princess Margory, and his niece, the Lady Isoline, children of ten and fourteen, who already claimed her as their companion and friend.

The color was bright on the soft cheek of Agnes, the smile laughed alike in her lip and eye; for ever and anon, from amid the courtly crowd beneath, the deep blue orb of Nigel Bruce met hers, speaking in its passionate yet respectful gaze, all that could whisper joy and peace unto a heart young, loving, and confiding, as that of Agnes. The evening previous he had detached the blue ribbon which confined her flowing curls, and it was with a feeling of pardonable pride she beheld it suspended from his neck, even in that hour, when his rich habiliments and the imposing ceremony of the day marked him the brother of a king. Her brother, too, was at his side, gazing upon his sovereign with feelings, whose index, marked as it was on his brow, gave him the appearance of being older than he was. It was scarcely the excitement of a mere boy, who rejoiced in the state and dignity around him; the emotion of his mother had sunk into his very soul, subduing the wild buoyancy of his spirit, and bidding him feel deeply and sadly the situation in which he stood. It seemed to him as if he had never thought before; and now that reflection had come upon him, it was fraught with a weight and gloom he could not remove and could scarcely comprehend. He felt no power on earth could prevent his taking the only path which was open to the true patriot of Scotland, and in following that path he raised the standard of revolt, and enlisted his own followers against his father. Till the moment of action he had dreamed not of these things;

## SCOTLAND

but the deep anxieties, the contending feelings of his mother, which, despite her controlled demeanor, his heart perceived, could not but have their effect, and premature manhood was stealing fast upon his heart.

Upon the left of the king, and close beside his throne, stood the Countess of Buchan, attired in robes of the darkest crimson velvet, with a deep border of gold, which swept the ground, and long falling sleeves with a broad fringe; a thick cord of gold and tassels confined the robe around the waist, and thence fell reaching to her feet, and well-nigh concealing the inner dress of white silk, which was worn to permit the robes falling easily on either side, and thus forming a long train behind. Neither gem nor gold adorned her beautiful hair; a veil was twisted in its luxuriant tresses, and served the purpose of the matron's coif. She was pale and calm, but such was the usual expression of her countenance, and perhaps it accorded better with the dignified majesty of her commanding figure than a greater play of feature. It was not the calmness of insensibility, of vacancy, it was the still reflection of a controlled and chastened soul, of one whose depth and might was known but to herself.

The pealing anthem for a while had ceased, and it was as if that church was desolate, as if the very hearts that throbbed so quickly for their country and their king were hushed awhile and stilled, that every word which passed between the sovereign and the primate should be heard. Kneeling before him, his hands placed between those of the archbishop, the king, in a clear and manly voice, received, as it were, the kingdom from his hands, and swore to govern according to the laws of his ancestors; to defend the liberties of his people alike

## THE CORONATION OF ROBERT BRUCE

from the foreign and the civil foe; to dispense justice; to devote life itself to restoring Scotland to her former station in the scale of kingdoms. Solemnly, energetically, he took the required vows; his cheek flushed, his eye glistened, and ere he rose he bent his brow upon his spread hands, as if his spirit supplicated strength, and the primate, standing over him, blessed him, in a loud voice, in the name of Him whose lowly minister he was.

A few minutes, and the king was again seated on his throne, and from the hands of the Bishop of Glasgow the Countess of Buchan received the simple coronet of gold, which had been hastily made to supply the place of that which Edward had removed. It was a moment of intense interest; every eye was directed toward the king and the dauntless woman by his side, who, rather than the descendant of Malcolm Cean Mohr should demand in vain the service from the descendants of the brave Macduff, exposed herself to all the wrath of a fierce and cruel king, the fury of an incensed husband and brother, and in her own noble person represented that ancient and most loyal line. Were any other circumstance needed to enhance the excitement of the patriots of Scotland, they would have found it in this. As it was, a sudden, irrepressible burst of applause broke from many eager voices as the bishop placed the coronet in her hands, but one glance from those dark, eloquent eyes sufficed to hush it on the instant into stillness.

Simultaneously all within the church stood up, and gracefully and steadily, with a hand which trembled not, even to the observant and anxious eyes of her son, Isabella of Buchan placed the sacred symbol of royalty on the head of Scotland's king; and then arose, as with

## SCOTLAND

one voice, the wild enthusiastic shout of loyalty, which bursting from all within the church, was echoed again and again from without, almost drowning the triumphant anthem which at the same moment sent its rich, hallowed tones through the building, and proclaimed Robert Bruce indeed a king.

Again and yet again the voice of triumph and of loyalty arose hundred-tongued, and sent its echo even to the English camp; and when it ceased, when slowly, and as it were reluctantly, it died away, it was a grand and glorious sight to see those stern and noble barons one by one approach their sovereign's throne and do him homage.

It was not always customary for the monarchs of those days to receive the feudal homage of their vassals the same hour of their coronation, it was in general a distinct and almost equally gorgeous ceremony; but in this case both the king and barons felt it better policy to unite them; the excitement attendant on the one ceremonial they felt would prevent the deficiency of numbers in the other being observed, and they acted wisely.

There was a dauntless firmness in each baron's look, in his manly carriage and unwavering step, as one by one he traversed the space between him and the throne, seeming to proclaim that in himself he held indeed a host. To adhere to the usual custom of paying homage to the suzerain bareheaded, barefooted, and unarmed, the embroidered slipper had been adopted by all instead of the iron boot; and as he knelt before the throne, the Earl of Lennox, for, first in rank, he first approached his sovereign, unbuckling his trusty sword, laid it, together with his dagger, at Robert's feet, and

## THE CORONATION OF ROBERT BRUCE

placing his clasped hands between those of the king, repeated, in a deep sonorous voice, the solemn vow — to live and die with him against all manner of men. Athol, Fraser, Seaton, Douglas, Hay, gladly and willingly followed his example; and it was curious to mark the character of each man, proclaimed in his mien and hurried step.

The calm, controlled, and somewhat thoughtful manner of those grown wise in war, their bold spirits feeling to the inmost soul the whole extent of the risk they ran, scarcely daring to anticipate the freedom of their country, the emancipation of their king from the heavy yoke that threatened him, and yet so firm in the oath they pledged, that had destruction yawned before them ere they reached the throne, they would have dared it rather than turned back — and then again those hot and eager youths, feeling, knowing but the excitement of the hour, believing but as they hoped, seeing but a king, a free and independent king, bounding from their seats to the monarch's feet, regardless of the solemn ceremonial in which they took a part, desirous only, in the words of their oath, to live and die for him — caused a brighter flush to mantle on King Robert's cheek, and his eyes to shine with new and radiant light. None knew better than himself the perils that encircled him, yet there was a momentary glow of exultation in his heart as he looked on the noble warriors, the faithful friends around him, and felt that they, even they, representatives of the oldest, the noblest houses in Scotland — men famed not alone for their gallant bearing in war, but their fidelity and wisdom, and unstained honor and virtue in peace — even they acknowledged him their king,

## SCOTLAND

and vowed him that allegiance which was never known to fail.

Alan of Buchan was the last of that small yet noble train who approached his sovereign. There was a hot flush of impetuous feeling on the boy's cheek, an indignant tear trembled in his dark flashing eye, and his voice, sweet, thrilling as it was, quivered with the vain effort to restrain his emotion.

"Sovereign of Scotland," he exclaimed, "descendant of that glorious line of kings to whom my ancestors have until this dark day vowed homage and allegiance; sovereign of all good and faithful men, on whose inmost souls the name of Scotland is so indelibly writ, that even in death it may there be found, refuse not thou my homage. I have but my sword, not e'en a name of which to boast, yet hear me swear," he raised his clasped hands toward heaven, "swear that for thee, for my country, for thee alone, will I draw it, alone shall my life be spent, my blood be shed. Reject me not because my name is Comyn, because I alone am here of that once loyal house. Oh! condemn me not; reject not untried a loyal heart and trusty sword."

"Reject thee," said King Robert, laying his hand kindly on the boy's shoulder; "reject thee, young soldier," he said, cheerily: "in Alan of Buchan we see but the noble son of our right noble countrywoman, the Lady Isabella; we see in him but a worthy descendant of Macduff, the noble scion, though but by the mother's side, of the loyal House of Fife. Young as thou art, we ask of thee but the heart and sword which thou hast so earnestly proffered, nor can we, son of Isabella of Fife, doubt their honesty and truth; thou shalt earn a loyal



## THE CORONATION OF ROBERT BRUCE

name for thyself, and till then, as the brother in arms, the chosen friend of Nigel Bruce, all shall respect and trust thee. We confer knighthood on twenty of our youthful warriors seven days hence; prepare thyself to receive it with our brother; enough for us to know thou hast learned the art of chivalry at thy mother's hand."

Dazzled, bewildered by the benign manner, and yet more gracious words of his sovereign, the young heir of Buchan remained kneeling for a brief space, as if rooted to the ground, but the deep, earnest voice of his mother, the kind greeting of Nigel Bruce, as he grasped his arm, and hailed him companion in arms, roused him at once, and he sprung to his feet; the despondency, shame, doubt, anxiety which like lead had weighed down his heart before, dissolved before the glad, buoyant spirit, the bright, free, glorious hopes, and dreams, and visions which are known to youth alone.

Stentorian and simultaneous was the eager shout that hailed the appearance of the newly anointed king, as he paused a moment on the great stone staircase, leading from the principal doors of the abbey to the abbey yard. For miles round, particularly from those counties which were but thinly garrisoned by the English, the loyal Scots had poured at the first rumor of the Bruce's rising, and now a rejoicing multitude welcomed him with one voice, the execrations against their foes forgotten in this outpouring of the heart toward their native prince.

Inspired by this heartfelt greeting, the king advanced a few paces on the stone terrace, and raised his right hand, as if about to speak; on the instant every shout was hushed, and silence fell upon that eager multitude, as deep and voiceless as if some mighty magic chained

## SCOTLAND

them spellbound where they stood, their very breathing hushed, fearful to lose one word.

Many an aged eye grew dim with tears, as it rested on the fair and graceful form, the beautifully expressive face of him who, with eloquent fervor, referred to the ancient glory of their country; tears of joy, for they felt they looked upon the good genius of their land, that she was raised from her dejected stupor, to sleep a slave no more; and the middle-aged and the young, with deafening shouts and eager gestures, swore to give him the crown, the kingdom he demanded, free, unshackled as his ancestors had borne them, or die around him to a man; and blessings and prayers in woman's gentler voice mingled with the swelling cry, and little children caught the Bruce's name, and bade "God bless him," and others, equally impetuous, shouted "Bruce and freedom!"

"Love, obey, follow me, for Scotland's sake; noble or gentle, let all private feud be forgotten in this one great struggle for liberty or death. Thus," he concluded, "united and faithful, the name of Wallace on each lip, the weal of Scotland in each heart, her mountains our shield, her freedom our sword, shall we, can we fail? No! no! Scotland shall be free, or her green sod and mountain flowers shall bloom upon our graves. I have no crown save that which Scotland gives, no kingdom save what your swords shall conquer, and your hearts bestow; with you I live and die."



## BRUCE AT BANNOCKBURN

[1314]

BY P. HUME BROWN

AT the end of seven years after Bruce had landed at Turnberry, almost every place in Scotland was taken from the English except Stirling Castle, and that castle was now besieged by Bruce's brother Edward. He made a bargain with the English commander of the castle, whose name was Sir Philip Mowbray, that the Scots should get the castle, if within a year King Edward did not send an army to fight for it. When Bruce heard of this bargain, he was not pleased, as he could not raise nearly such a large army as the English. But his brother's answer was, "Let the King of England bring all the men he has; we will fight them and more." "Be it so," was Bruce's answer, "we will abide the battle like men." It was a rash bargain that Edward Bruce had made, but it was to end in the most famous day in the history of Scotland.

The King of England was to come and fight for Stirling Castle not later than Midsummer Day; that is, the 24th of June. And he kept his word, for the very day before, he and his army came to the place where Bruce was waiting for them. As Stirling Castle was the place for which the two armies were to fight, Bruce had chosen his ground not far from the castle, so that the English would have to fight him before they could reach it. So, on the long summer evening of the 23d of June, Bruce

## SCOTLAND

and his men saw the English host draw near them. And a splendid sight it must have been. Edward's army was the largest that a King of England had ever led. It was said that he had one hundred thousand men, of whom forty thousand were horsemen. It was, indeed, what the Bible calls an army terrible with banners; and many of Bruce's men, as they saw it come on, must have wondered if they could ever hope to win the victory over such a mighty host.

Though Scotland was now a united country, Bruce could not, of course, raise such a great army as Edward, since England had far more inhabitants than Scotland. Indeed, though Bruce did his best to raise a strong army, he had only about half the number of men who followed Edward, so that in the battle that was to be fought, there would be two Englishmen against every Scotsman. However, the Scots had this great advantage, that their king was a great general while the King of England was not. And before the battle, Bruce showed how skillful he was by the way he arranged his men.

The place where he arranged them was on the banks of the little stream called the Bannock Burn, and about three miles to the south of Stirling Castle. On one side of his army was the stream which the English would have to cross before they could make their attack, and in other places there were bogs which lay between the two armies. And where there was firm ground between them, Bruce took care that it should not be easy for the English to ride over. He dug pits, and then covered them with turf so that they should not be seen, and all over the ground he put steel spikes, called calthrops, which would lame the English horses, and break the

## BRUCE AT BANNOCKBURN

ranks of the cavalry when they charged. In this way, therefore, the English knights were prevented from riding all at once upon the Scots, as they would have done had the ground between the two armies been perfectly smooth and open.

Bruce divided his army into four parts, the largest part being made up of the footmen with long spears. He had only a very few horse-soldiers, but we shall see what a good use he made of them. He had also some good archers, though not nearly so many nor so skillful as the English, for the Scots never cared for archery, and always liked best to fight with their spears and axes. When the English came up, it was too late to fight that day, and so both armies lay in sight of each other waiting for the morrow's battle. But in the evening two things happened which must have put heart into the Scots for the coming fight.

An English lord, named Clifford, rode at the head of three hundred horsemen in the direction of Stirling Castle, to carry assistance to it. Now, Bruce had told Randolph that this should be prevented, and when he saw Clifford riding to Stirling, he turned to Randolph and said, "Randolph, a rose has fallen from your chaplet," meaning that he had failed in his duty. But Randolph at once put himself at the head of a troop of foot-soldiers, armed with spears, and caught Clifford on the way. At first it seemed as if Randolph were to be beaten, and Douglas asked leave of Bruce to go to his assistance. Bruce refused his permission; but Douglas could not bear to see his friend defeated, and perhaps slain, and in spite of Bruce's refusal he rode off at the head of his men to give help. Before he reached the place of fight-

## SCOTLAND

ing, however, the English were seen to flee, and then he ordered his men to return, so that Randolph might have all the honor of the victory.

This was one event that was lucky for the Scots, and the other was this. During the evening, Bruce was riding in front of his army on a pony, and had only a battle-axe in his hand. An English knight, named Sir Henry de Bohun, knew him by the gold coronet he wore on his helmet, and thought that, if he could slay him, he would put both an end to the war and win great glory for himself. So, on his great war-horse, and with his lance couched, he rode full speed upon Bruce. Just as he drew near, however, Bruce made his pony turn aside, and avoided the thrust of the lance. Then in an instant he rose in his stirrups to his full height, and with one blow of his battle-axe on De Bohun's helmet felled him to the ground. The Scottish leaders who were near Bruce blamed him for risking his life when so much depended upon him, but he only said, "I have broken my good battle-axe."

As soon as the sun rose next morning, the two armies prepared for battle. Before it began, the Scots went down on their knees to pray, and when King Edward saw this, he said to an English lord near him, "See, they are kneeling to ask for pardon." "Yes," was the answer, "they are asking pardon, but from God, and not from us. Yon men will conquer or die." Then the fight began, the English knights riding against the Scottish spear-men, who were all on foot; and this was the fiercest part of the battle. At the beginning the English archers bent their bows and sent their arrows among the Scots as thick as snowflakes. Had this gone on long, the same

## BRUCE AT BANNOCKBURN

thing would have happened as had taken place at Falkirk, when Wallace's spearmen were shot down by the English arrows, and the battle was lost.

But Bruce had thought of this beforehand: at his command the Scottish mounted men rode against the English archers, who were, of course, all on foot. Their bows were of no use in a close fight, and soon they were either slain or put to flight. For hours the battle went on, but, as we know, the English were not on ground where they could fight their best. Their horses had not room to move about, so that they got mixed up among each other. Then the boggy ground and the steel spikes prevented the horsemen from riding quickly, and when a horse-soldier is brought to a standstill in a crowd, a soldier on foot armed with a spear is more than a match for him, as he can kill the horse, and slay the rider before the latter can free himself from his stirrups. And this was what happened to thousands of the English horsemen. When their horses were slain, they were either trampled to death or pierced by a Scottish spear.

And so the battle raged, till a thing happened that decided which side was to win. From a hill near at hand, afterwards called the Gillies' Hill, what looked like another Scottish army was seen to descend. It was only the servants or gillies who attended on Bruce's camp, and a number of men who lived in the neighborhood; but, as they came in a body and with banners flying, the English thought they were really another army, and then they lost heart and began to give way. When the Scottish spearsmen saw this, they fought all the harder, and soon the enemy was fleeing in all directions. When King Edward saw that the battle was lost, he at first rode to

## SCOTLAND

Stirling Castle, thinking that he would be safe there; but Sir Philip Mowbray, the commander of the castle, told him that by the bargain he had made with Edward Bruce he would have to surrender it the next day. So there was nothing for it but that the beaten king should try to reach his own kingdom if he could. And a narrow escape he had, for Douglas rode after him as far as Dunbar, a distance of sixty miles, when Edward got into a boat and sailed to Berwick, where he was safe.

This was the greatest victory that the Scots ever gained, and the English thought it was such a disgrace to themselves that they said it was a punishment for their sins. So much booty fell into the hands of the Scots that it made Scotland a richer country. Precious garments, jewels, and plate, which Edward and his knights had brought with them, were all taken; and many of the chief men of the English were made prisoners, and had to pay great sums of money to be allowed to go home. But the chief thing to be remembered about the battle of Bannockburn is that it made Scotland again a free country, and that it made Scotsmen feel more than ever they had done before, that they were one people and one nation.

## SCOTS WHA HAE

BY ROBERT BURNS

[THIS is the supposed address of Robert Bruce to his army before the battle of Bannockburn.

*The Editor.]*

SCOTS, wha hae wi' Wallace bled,  
Scots, wham Bruce has aften led;  
Welcome to your gory bed,  
Or to victory!  
Now 's the day, and now 's the hour;  
See the front o' battle lour;  
See approach proud Edward's power —  
Chains and slavery!

Wha will be a traitor knave?  
Wha can fill a coward's grave?  
Wha sae base as be a slave?  
Let him turn and flee!  
Wha for Scotland's king and law  
Freedom's sword will strongly draw,  
Freeman stand, or Freeman fa',  
Let him follow me!

By oppression's woes and pains!  
By your sons in servile chains!  
We will drain our dearest veins,  
But they shall be free!

## SCOTLAND

Lay the proud usurpers low!  
Tyrants fall in every foe!  
Liberty 's in every blow! —  
Let us do, or die!



III  
TO THE DEATH OF MARY

## HISTORICAL NOTE

SCOTLAND was still a scene of warfare and struggle. Several kings succeeded to the throne as minors, the nobles were exceedingly powerful, and whenever any of them became dissatisfied, they were always ready to enter into schemes with England. In the times of Henry VII of England, there was hope of peace, for his daughter became the wife of the Scottish king. In the very next reign, however, the friendship between the Scots and the French led to a Scottish invasion of England, and a total defeat of the Scots at Flodden Field in 1513.

Soon after Elizabeth became Queen of England, the ideas of the Reformation, interpreted by the fiery preaching of John Knox, swept over the land, and Presbyterianism became established. This helped to make the support of the Catholic Mary, Queen of Scots, only half-hearted. She fled to the protection of Elizabeth, and after being kept as a prisoner for many years, she was executed on a charge of conspiracy against the crown. On the death of Queen Elizabeth, Mary's son, James VI of Scotland, became James I of England; and thus the two countries fell under one king, although the separate governments were maintained.

## THE BIER-RIGHT

[Latter part of the fourteenth century]

BY SIR WALTER SCOTT

[THE husband of Magdalen Proudpute has been slain, and it is suspected that some one of the followers of Sir John Ramorny was his murderer. The test of "bier-right" has been decided upon; that is, every member of Sir John's household must kneel beside the bier and take a solemn oath of his own innocence. It was a belief of the time that if this oath was false, the wounds of the murdered man would straightway burst open and begin to bleed afresh.

*The Editor.]*

It was, therefore, after high mass had been performed with the greatest solemnity of which circumstances rendered the ceremony capable, and after the most repeated and fervent prayers had been offered to Heaven by the crowded assembly, that preparations were made for appealing to the direct judgment of Heaven on the mysterious murder of the unfortunate bonnet-maker.

The scene presented that effect of imposing solemnity which the rites of the Catholic Church are so well qualified to produce. The eastern window, richly and variously painted, streamed down a torrent of chequered light upon the high altar. On the bier placed before it were stretched the mortal remains of the murdered man, his arms folded on his breast, and his palms joined together, with the fingers pointed upwards, as if the senseless clay was itself appealing to Heaven for vengeance

## SCOTLAND

against those who had violently divorced the immortal spirit from its mangled tenement.

Close to the bier was placed the throne which supported Robert of Scotland and his brother Albany. The prince sat upon a lower stool, beside his father — an arrangement which occasioned some observation, as, Albany's seat being little distinguished from that of the king, the heir-apparent, though of full age, seemed to be degraded beneath his uncle in the sight of the assembled people of Perth. The bier was so placed as to leave the view of the body it sustained open to the greater part of the multitude assembled in the church.

At the head of the bier stood the Knight of Kinfauns, the challenger, and at the foot the young Earl of Crawford, as representing the defendant. The evidence of the Duke of Rothsay in expurgation, as it was termed, of Sir John Ramorny, had exempted him from the necessity of attendance as a party subjected to the ordeal; and his illness served as a reason for his remaining at home. His household, including those who, though immediately in waiting upon Sir John, were accounted the prince's domestics, and had not yet received their dismissal, amounted to eight or ten persons, most of them esteemed men of profligate habits, and who might therefore be deemed capable, in the riot of a festival evening, of committing the slaughter of the bonnet-maker. They were drawn up in a row on the left side of the church, and wore a species of white cassock, resembling the dress of a penitentiary. All eyes being bent on them, several of this band seemed so much disconcerted as to excite among the spectators strong prepossessions of their guilt. The real murderer had a countenance in-

## THE BIER-RIGHT

capable of betraying him — a sullen, dark look, which neither the feast nor wine-cup could enliven, and which the peril of discovery and death could not render dejected.

We have already noticed the posture of the dead body. The face was bare, as were the breast and arms. The rest of the corpse was shrouded in a winding-sheet of the finest linen, so that, if blood should flow from any place which was covered, it could not fail to be instantly manifest.

High mass having been performed, followed by a solemn invocation to the Deity, that he would be pleased to protect the innocent, and make known the guilty, Eviot, Sir John Ramorny's page, was summoned to undergo the ordeal. He advanced with an ill-assured step. Perhaps he thought his internal consciousness that Bonthron must have been the assassin might be sufficient to implicate him in the murder, though he was not directly accessory to it. He paused before the bier; and his voice faltered, as he swore by all that was created in seven days and seven nights, by heaven, by hell, by his part of paradise, and by the God and author of all, that he was free and sackless of the bloody deed done upon the corpse before which he stood, and on whose breast he made the sign of the cross, in evidence of the appeal. No consequences ensued. The body remained stiff as before, the curdled wounds gave no sign of blood.

The citizens looked on each other with faces of blank disappointment. They had persuaded themselves of Eviot's guilt, and their suspicions had been confirmed by his irresolute manner. Their surprise at his escape was therefore extreme. The other followers of Ramorny

## SCOTLAND

took heart, and advanced to take the oath with a boldness which increased as one by one they performed the ordeal, and were declared, by the voice of the judges, free and innocent of every suspicion attaching to them on account of the death of Oliver Proudpute.

But there was one individual who did not partake that increasing confidence. The name of "Bonthon — Bonthon!" sounded three times through the aisles of the church; but he who owned it acknowledged the call no otherwise than by a sort of shuffling motion with his feet, as if he had been suddenly affected with a fit of palsy.

"Speak, dog," whispered Eviot, "or prepare for a dog's death!"

But the murderer's brain was so much disturbed by the sight before him, that the judges, beholding his deportment, doubted whether to ordain him to be dragged before the bier or to pronounce judgment in default; and it was not until he was asked for the last time whether he would submit to the ordeal, that he answered, with his usual brevity, — "I will not; what do I know what juggling tricks may be practiced to take a poor man's life? I offer the combat to any man who says I harmed that dead body."

And, according to usual form, he threw his glove upon the floor of the church.

Henry the smith stepped forward, amidst the murmured applause of his fellow citizens, which even the august presence could not entirely suppress; and, lifting the ruffian's glove, which he placed in his bonnet, laid down his own in the usual form, as a gage of battle. But Bonthon raised it not.

## THE BIER-RIGHT

"He is no match for me," growled the savage, "nor fit to lift my glove. I follow the prince of Scotland, in attending on his master of horse. This fellow is a wretched mechanic."

Here the prince interrupted him. "Thou follow *me*, caitiff! I discharge thee from my service on the spot. Take him in hand, smith, and beat him as thou didst never thump an anvil! The villain is both guilty and recreant. It sickens me even to look at him; and if my royal father will be ruled by me, he will give the parties two handsome Scottish axes, and we will see which of them turns out the best fellow before the day is half an hour older."

This was readily assented to by the Earl of Crawford, and Sir Patrick Charteris, the godfathers of the parties, who, as the combatants were men of inferior rank, agreed that they should fight in steel caps, buff-jackets, and with axes, and that as soon as they could be prepared for the combat.

The lists were appointed in the Skinners' Yards — a neighbouring space of ground, occupied by the corporation from which it had the name, and who quickly cleared a space of about thirty feet by twenty-five for the combatants. Thither thronged the nobles, priests, and commons — all excepting the old king, who, detesting such scenes of blood, retired to his residence, and devolved the charge of the field upon the Earl of Errol, Lord High Constable, to whose office it more particularly belonged. The Duke of Albany watched the whole proceeding with a close and wary eye. His nephew gave the scene the heedless degree of notice which corresponded with his character.



## SCOTLAND

When the combatants appeared in the lists, nothing could be more striking than the contrast betwixt the manly, cheerful countenance of the smith, whose sparkling eye seemed already beaming with the victory he hoped for, and the sullen, downcast aspect of the brutal Bonthron, who looked as if he were some obscene bird, driven into sunshine out of the shelter of its darksome haunts. They made oath severally, each to the truth of his quarrel — a ceremony which Henry Gow performed with serene and manly confidence, Bonthron with a dogged resolution which induced the Duke of Rothsay to say to the High Constable, “Didst thou ever, my dear Errol, behold such a mixture of malignity, cruelty, and I think fear, as in that fellow’s countenance?”

“He is not comely,” said the earl, “but a powerful knave as I have seen.”

“I’ll gage a hogshead of wine with you, my good lord, that he loses the day. Henry the armourer is as strong as he, and much more active; and then look at his bold bearing! There is something in that other fellow that is loathsome to look upon. Let them yoke presently, my dear constable, for I am sick of beholding him.”

The high constable then addressed the widow, who, in her deep weeds, and having her children still beside her, occupied a chair within the lists — “Woman, do you willingly accept of this man, Henry the smith, to do battle as your champion in this cause?”

“I do — I do, most willingly,” answered Magdalen Proudfeet; “and may the blessing of God and St. John give him strength and fortune, since he strikes for the orphan and the fatherless!”

“Then I pronounce this a fenced field of battle,” said



## THE BIER-RIGHT

the constable aloud. "Let no one dare, upon peril of his life, to interrupt this combat by word, speech, or look. Sound trumpets, and fight, combatants!"

The trumpets flourished, and the combatants, advancing from the opposite ends of the lists, with a steady and even pace, looked at each other attentively, well skilled in judging from the motion of the eye the direction in which a blow was meditated. They halted opposite to, and within reach of, each other, and in turn made more than one feint to strike, in order to ascertain the activity and vigilance of the opponent. At length, whether weary of these manœuvres, or fearing lest in a contest so conducted his unwieldy strength would be foiled by the activity of the smith, Bonthron heaved up his axe for a downright blow, adding the whole strength of his sturdy arms to the weight of the weapon in its descent. The smith, however, avoided the stroke by stepping aside; for it was too forcible to be controlled by any guard which he could have interposed. Ere Bonthron recovered guard, Henry struck him a sideling blow on the steel head-piece, which prostrated him on the ground.

"Confess, or die," said the victor, placing his foot on the body of the vanquished, and holding to his throat the point of the axe, which terminated in a spike or poniard.

"I will confess," said the villain, glaring wildly upward on the sky. "Let me rise."

"Not till you have yielded," said Harry the smith.

"I do yield," again murmured Bonthron, and Henry proclaimed aloud that his antagonist was defeated.

The Dukes of Rothsay and Albany, the high con-

## SCOTLAND

stable, and the Dominican prior now entered the lists, and, addressing Bonthron, demanded if he acknowledged himself vanquished.

“I do,” answered the miscreant.

“And guilty of the murder of Oliver Proudpute?”

“I am.”

## HOW THE SCOTS LIVED WHILE JAMES I WAS KING

[1422-1437]

BY P. HUME BROWN

IN James I's reign there came a foreigner to Scotland, who wrote about what he saw there. This visitor was an Italian. His name was Æneas Sylvius, and he afterwards became Pope [Pius II], so that he was a very important person. On his voyage to Scotland his ship was nearly wrecked, and during the storm he vowed a vow that from wherever he landed he would walk barefooted to the nearest church to give thanks to God for having saved him from drowning. When he landed, he found that the nearest church was at Whitekirk, six miles from North Berwick. So, as it was winter at the time, he had to trudge these six miles with bare feet on the frozen ground, and the result was that he caught such a cold that he had rheumatism for the rest of his life.

Here are some of the things which he tells us. He went to see King James, whom he describes as a robust-looking man, but very fat. As for the palaces in which the King of Scots lived, he says that they were not so well furnished as the houses of rich merchants in Germany. What he thought very strange was that the towns had no walls round them, which all the towns on the Continent had. He also thought it odd that the houses in the towns were built of stone without lime. The houses

## SCOTLAND

in the country, he says, were built of turf, and the poorer ones had the hide of an ox hung up instead of a door. The common people were very poor, but at the same time they ate more meat and fish than was good for them; though bread was so scarce that it was looked on as a dainty. One thing astonished him very much, and that was that the people burned stone instead of wood. Of course the stone was coal, which Æneas seems never to have seen in other countries. At the church doors he noticed many beggars, who went away with glad faces when these stones were put into their hands.

These are some of the things that Æneas tells us about Scotland, but we must remember that he came from Italy, which was a rich and beautiful country, so that he could not help thinking that Scotland was a poor place compared with it, as indeed it was.

But we know a good deal more about Scotland in the reign of James I than Æneas Sylvius tells us, and this we learn from the laws James passed. For example, we know that there must then have been a great many wolves in the country, though Æneas says there were none. Every baron in the kingdom was commanded to kill all the wolves' whelps he could find, and to give twopence to any one who brought a whelp's head to him. Four times every year, also, the baron was to have a great wolf hunt; and all his farmers with their servants were to join him in the hunt, and if they did not, they had to give a sheep to the baron as a fine. This proves that there must have been many wolves in the land, or such a law would not have been passed.

There must also have been great numbers of crows in Scotland in those days, as a very curious law shows us.

## SCOTLAND WHEN JAMES I WAS KING

Every landlord was commanded to kill the young crows every year, as, when they grew up, they did so much damage to the crops. If the landlord did not obey this law, then the tree in which the crows had built their nest was to be taken from him by the king. If the landlord liked, however, he could fell the tree and pay a fine of five shillings. Such a law as this could never be passed nowadays, but in those days it was thought to be quite right that such laws should be made.

There were laws about buying and selling which seem very strange to us. No one was allowed to send a horse to any foreign country unless it were more than three years old. No one could buy cloth or any other goods from an Englishman who came to Scotland, and no Englishman was allowed to sell anything in Scotland unless he got special permission. Another law declared that no one was to send any gold or silver out of the country. What was the meaning of those laws which seem so odd to us? It was that people then thought that the country would soon be ruined if the people bought things made in other countries, and that, if money went out of the country, it would never come back again. For a long time afterwards, people in other countries besides Scotland believed this, and the result was that trade could not grow nor the people become rich.

However, even in those days, there must have been well-to-do people in Scotland, as another law shows us. By this law it was commanded that no one except a lord or a knight was to wear silk or furs, or to have pearls or any kind of trimming on his clothes. In the towns no persons except the magistrates and their wives were to wear furs. The farmers also were told that they were

## SCOTLAND

not to wear colored clothes, but plain ones made at home. Now, when such laws are made, it means that many people must have had money to spare, and that they spent it on fine clothes, and dressed themselves above their station. For in those days it was thought right that all classes of the people should each have a dress of its own, so that it might be known at once whether a man was a lord or a knight, or a magistrate, or a craftsman, or a farmer.

There was one thing about which the kings and the Parliament were very anxious, and about which many laws were made, and that was that every Scotsman should be trained to fight. So the law was that every man from the age of sixteen to sixty should possess weapons according to his rank. To make sure that every one had these weapons, there were to be four meetings, or "Wapinschaws," each year, to which all the men in town and country were to come, and, if they did not have the right weapons, they were to be fined.

What should we think nowadays if a boy or a man were fined fourpence every time he played at football? Yet such a law was really passed by James and his Parliament, and for the following reason. It was the English archers, as we know, that had gained so many victories over the Scots, and so it was very necessary that the Scots should try to become as good archers as the English. Laws were therefore passed which forbade playing at football, as being of no use, and which ordered that near every parish church there should be a target and a shooting-ground. On every holiday (and there were about sixty holidays in the year), every male person, from twelve years old, was to shoot at least three

## SCOTLAND WHEN JAMES I WAS KING

arrows at the mark; and if he did not, he was to give a sheep as a fine. In spite of these laws, however, the Scots never became good archers, and they always preferred to fight with lances and axes.

There was a class of people who gave a great deal of trouble in Scotland and in other countries at this time, and, indeed, for a long while afterwards. These were the beggars, who in those days did not go about alone, but in great bands, so that they were a terror to everybody. It was not safe to travel about the country by yourself, for if you met one of these gangs they would take everything you had, and perhaps ill-use you besides. Some of the beggars were quite well off, and actually rode on horseback; so that the old rhyme is really true: —

“Hark, hark, the dogs do bark;  
The beggars are coming to town;  
Some in rags and some on nags,  
And one in a velvet gown.”

A gang of these beggars would often come to the house of a clergyman or a farmer, where they thought they would get plenty to eat, and compel the owner of the house to give them a night's lodging. There were great numbers of them in all the towns, and, when the king and his courtiers traveled, they would often be surrounded by beggars crying for alms.

In almost every reign laws were passed to put down these troublesome and dangerous beggars, but these laws never seemed to do any good. Every person between the ages of fourteen and seventy was forbidden to beg, and if he were caught doing so, his cheek was to be burned with a red-hot iron, and he was then to be



## SCOTLAND

banished from the country. Before any one was allowed to beg, he had to get a license, and to wear a badge on his clothes to show that he was a lawful beggar. And even stricter laws than these were passed, but they were never really carried out, and so the number of beggars went on increasing rather than getting fewer.

Another law passed in James's reign shows how different the country was then from what it is now. Every agricultural laborer, if he was not rich enough to buy an ox to plough (for in those days it was oxen that drew the plough and not horses), had to dig up a piece of ground seven feet long and six feet broad on every working-day. And why was such a law made? It was because a great deal of land which might have been used for growing crops was not cultivated, but was left to itself, and so was of no use to the people who lived on it. So by such a law as this, more ground came to be cultivated, and more food was got for the people.

From all these laws we see how differently people then lived from the way in which we do now. But there is one thing that must not be forgotten about these laws: they were very seldom carried out. And it was the same in other countries besides Scotland; and the reason is, that the persons who should have enforced them, either had not the power to do so or had other things to attend to. However, even when the laws were not obeyed, they at least showed what was the right thing to be done; and no doubt many people did obey them.



## ON THE FIELD OF FLODDEN

[1513]

BY SIR WALTER SCOTT

[MARGARET TUDOR, sister of Henry VIII of England, became the wife of James IV of Scotland. Now, there were certain jewels which were to be given to Margaret, but Henry refused to send them to her. Naturally, that aroused the wrath of King James. Moreover, although the two countries were at peace, the Lord High Admiral of England seized two Scottish ships, and Henry refused to pay for their loss. Again, Henry was about to make war on France, and as France and Scotland were good friends, James stood by France. He crossed the border and captured some English castles. At last, in September, 1513, the Scots and English met at Flodden Field.

*The Editor.]*

“BUT, see! look up — on Flodden bent,  
The Scottish foe has fired his tent.” —  
And sudden, as he spoke,  
From the sharp ridges of the hill,  
All downward to the banks of Till,  
Was wreathed in sable smoke:  
Volumed, and vast, and rolling far,  
The cloud enveloped Scotland’s war,  
As down the hill they broke;  
Nor martial shout, nor minstrel tone,  
Announced their march; their tread alone  
At times one warning trumpet blown,  
At times a stifled hum,

## SCOTLAND

Told England, from his mountain-throne  
King James did rushing come. —  
Scarce could they hear or see their foes,  
Until at weapon-point they close. —  
They close, in clouds of smoke and dust,  
With sword-sway and with lance's thrust;  
And such a yell was there,  
Of sudden and portentous birth,  
As if men fought upon the earth,  
And fiends in upper air.  
Long looked the anxious squires; their eye  
Could in the darkness naught descry.  
At length the freshening western blast  
Aside the shroud of battle cast;  
And, first, the ridge of mingled spears  
Above the brightening cloud appears;  
And in the smoke the pennons flew,  
As in the storm the white sea-mew.  
Then marked they, dashing broad and far,  
The broken billows of the war,  
And plumed crests of chieftains brave,  
Floating like foam upon the wave  
But naught distinct they see;  
Wide raged the battle on the plain,  
Spears shook, and falchions flashed amain,  
Fell England's arrow-flight like rain,  
Crests rose, and stooped, and rose again,  
Wild and disorderly.  
Amid the scene of tumult, high  
They saw Lord Marmion's falcon fly:  
And stainless Tunstall's banner white,  
And Edmund Howard's lion bright,

## ON THE FIELD OF FLODDEN

Still bear them bravely in the fight;

Although against them come,  
Of gallant Gordons many a one,  
And many a stubborn Highlandman,  
And many a rugged Border clan,

With Huntley, and with Home.  
Far on the left, unseen the while,  
Stanley broke Lennox and Argyle,  
Though there the western mountaineer  
Rushed with bare bosom on the spear,  
And flung the feeble targe aside,  
And with both hands the broadsword plied;  
'T was vain. — But Fortune, on the right,  
With fickle smile, cheered Scotland's fight.  
Then fell that spotless banner white,

The Howard's lion fell:  
Yet still Lord Marmion's falcon flew  
With wavering flight, while fiercer grew  
Around the battle yell.

The border slogan rent the sky.  
"A Home! a Gordon!" was the cry;  
Loud were the clanging blows;  
Advanced, — forced back, — now low, now high,  
The pennon sank and rose;  
As bends the bark's mast in the gale,  
When rent are rigging, shrouds, and sail,  
It wavered 'mid the foes.

. . . . .  
But as they left the dark'ning heath,  
More desperate grew the strife of death.  
The English shafts in volleys hailed,  
In headlong charge their horse assailed:

## SCOTLAND

Front, flank, and rear, the squadrons sweep  
To break the Scottish circle deep,  
That fought around their king.  
But yet, though thick the shafts as snow,  
Though charging knights like whirlwinds go,  
Though bill-men ply the ghastly blow,  
Unbroken was the ring;  
The stubborn spearmen still made good  
Their dark, impenetrable wood,  
Each stepping where his comrade stood,  
The instant that he fell.  
No thought was there of dastard flight; —  
Linked in the serried phalanx tight,  
Groom fought like noble, squire like knight,  
As fearlessly and well:  
Till utter darkness closed her wing  
O'er their thin host and wounded king.  
Then skilful Surrey's sage commands  
Led back from strife his shattered bands;  
And from the charge they drew,  
As mountain-waves, from wasted lands,  
Sweep back to ocean blue.  
Then did their loss his foeman know,  
Their king, their lords, their mightiest low,  
They melted from the field as snow,  
When streams are swoln and south winds blow,  
Dissolves in silent dew.  
Tweed's echoes heard the ceaseless splash,  
While many a broken band,  
Disordered, through her currents dash,  
To gain the Scottish land;  
To town and tower, to down and dale,

## ON THE FIELD OF FLODDEN

To tell red Flodden's dismal tale,  
And raise the universal wail.  
Tradition, legend, tune, and song,  
Shall many an age that wail prolong.  
Still from the sire the son shall hear  
Of the stern strife and carnage drear,  
Of Flodden's fatal field,  
Where shivered was fair Scotland's spear,  
And broken was her shield!

## EDINBURGH AFTER FLODDEN FIELD

[1513]

BY WILLIAM E. AYTOUN

NEWS of battle! — news of battle!  
Hark! 't is ringing down the street,  
And the archways and the pavement  
Bear the clang of hurrying feet.  
News of battle! who hath brought it?  
News of triumph? who should bring  
Tidings from our noble army,  
Greetings from our gallant king?  
All last night we watched the beacons  
Blazing on the hills afar,  
Each one bearing, as it kindled,  
Message of the opened war.  
All night long the northern streamers  
Shot across the trembling sky:  
Fearful lights, that never beckon  
Save when kings or heroes die.  
News of battle! who hath brought it?  
All are thronging to the gate;  
“Warder — warder! open quickly!  
Man — is this a time to wait?”  
And the heavy gates are opened:  
Then a murmur long and loud,  
And a cry of fear and wonder  
Bursts from out the bending crowd.

## EDINBURGH AFTER FLODDEN FIELD

For they see in battered harness  
Only one hard-stricken man;  
And his weary steed is wounded,  
And his cheek is pale and wan:  
Spearless hangs a bloody banner  
In his weak and drooping hand —  
God! can that be Randolph Murray,  
Captain of the city-band?  
Round him crush the people, crying,  
“Tell us all — oh, tell us true!  
Where are they who went to battle,  
Randolph Murray, sworn to you?  
Where are they, our brothers — children?  
Have they met the English foe?  
Why art thou alone, unfollowed?  
Is it weal or is it woe?”  
Like a corpse the grizzly warrior  
Looks from out his helm of steel;  
But no word he speaks in answer —  
Only with his armèd heel  
Chides his weary steed, and onward  
Up the city streets they ride;  
Fathers, sisters, mothers, children,  
Shrieking, praying, by his side,  
“By the God that made thee, Randolph!  
Tell us what mischance hath come.”  
Then he lifts his riven banner,  
And the asker’s voice is dumb.

The elders of the city  
Have met within their hall —

## SCOTLAND

The men whom good King James had charged  
To watch the tower and wall.  
“Your hands are weak with age,” he said,  
“Your hearts are stout and true;  
So bide ye in the Maiden Town,  
While others fight for you.  
My trumpet from the Border-side  
Shall send a blast so clear,  
That all who wait within the gate  
That stirring sound may hear.  
Or, if it be the will of Heaven  
That back I never come,  
And if, instead of Scottish shouts,  
Ye hear the English drum —  
Then let the warning bells ring out,  
Then gird you to the fray,  
Then man the walls like burghers stout,  
And fight while fight you may.  
'T were better that in fiery flame  
The roof should thunder down,  
Than that the foot of foreign foe  
Should trample in the town!”

Then in came Randolph Murray —  
His step was slow and weak,  
And, as he doffed his dinted helm,  
The tears ran down his cheek.  
They fell upon his corslet,  
And on his mailèd hand,  
As he gazed around him wistfully,  
Leaning sorely on his brand.



## EDINBURGH AFTER FLODDEN FIELD

And none who then beheld him  
But straight were smote with fear,  
For a bolder and a sterner man  
Had never couched a spear.  
They knew so sad a messenger  
Some ghastly news must bring,  
And all of them were fathers,  
And their sons were with the king.

And up then rose the Provost —  
A brave old man was he,  
Of ancient name, and knightly fame,  
And chivalrous degree.

. . . . .  
Oh, woeful now was the old man's look,  
And he spake right heavily —  
“Now, Randolph, tell thy tidings,  
However sharp they be!  
Woe is written on thy visage,  
Death is looking from thy face:  
Speak! though it be of overthrow —  
It cannot be disgrace!”  
Right bitter was the agony  
That wrung that soldier proud:  
Thrice did he strive to answer,  
And thrice he groaned aloud.  
Then he gave the riven banner  
To the old man's shaking hand,  
Saying — “That is all I bring ye  
From the bravest of the land!  
Aye! ye may look upon it —  
It was guarded well and long,

## SCOTLAND

By your brothers and your children,  
By the valiant and the strong.  
One by one they fell around it,  
As the archers laid them low,  
Grimly dying, still unconquered,  
With their faces to the foe.  
Aye! ye well may look upon it —  
There is more than honor there,  
Else, be sure, I had not brought it  
From the field of dark despair.  
Never yet was royal banner  
Steeped in such a costly dye;  
It hath lain upon a bosom  
Where no other shroud shall lie.  
Sirs! I charge you, keep it holy.  
Keep it as a sacred thing,  
For the stain ye see upon it  
Was the life-blood of your king!”

Woe, woe, and lamentation!  
What a piteous cry was there!  
Widows, maidens, mothers, children,  
Shrieking, sobbing in despair!  
“O the blackest day for Scotland  
That she ever knew before!  
O our king! the good, the noble,  
Shall we never see him more?  
Woe to us and woe to Scotland!  
O our sons, our sons and men!  
Surely some have ’scaped the Southron,  
Surely some will come again!”

## EDINBURGH AFTER FLODDEN FIELD

Till the oak that fell last winter  
    Shall uprear its shattered stem —  
Wives and mothers of Dunedin —  
    Ye may look in vain for them!

## “THE GOODMAN OF BALLANGIECH”

[Between 1513 and 1542]

BY SIR WALTER SCOTT

JAMES V had a custom of going about the country disguised as a private person, in order that he might hear complaints which might not otherwise reach his ears, and perhaps that he might enjoy amusements which he could not have partaken of in his avowed royal character. This is also said to have been a custom of James IV, his father, and several adventures are related of what befell them on such occasions.

When James V travelled in disguise, he used a name which was known only to some of his principal nobility and attendants. He was called the “Goodman (the tenant, that is) of Ballengiech.” Ballengiech is a steep pass which leads down behind the castle of Stirling. Once upon a time, when the court was feasting in Stirling, the king sent for some venison from the neighbouring hills. The deer was killed, and put on horses’ backs to be transported to Stirling. Unluckily they had to pass the castle gates of Arnpryor, belonging to a chief of the Buchanans, who chanced to have a considerable number of guests with him. It was late, and the company was rather short of victuals, though they had more than enough of liquor. The chief, seeing so much fat venison passing his very door, seized on it; and to the expostulations of the keepers, who told him it belonged to King James, he answered insolently, that if James was King

## THE GOODMAN OF BALLANGIECH

in Scotland, he, Buchanan, was King in Kippen; being the name of the district in which the castle of Arnpryor lay.

On hearing what had happened, the king got on horse-back, and rode instantly from Stirling to Buchanan's house, where he found a strong, fierce-looking Highlander, with an axe on his shoulder, standing sentinel at the door. This grim warder refused the king admittance, saying the Laird of Arnpryor was at dinner, and would not be disturbed. "Yet go up to the company, my good friend," said the king, "and tell him that the Goodman of Ballengiech is come to feast with the King of Kippen."

The porter went grumbling into the house, and told his master that there was a fellow with a red beard at the gate, who called himself the Goodman of Ballengiech, who said he was come to dine with the King of Kippen. As soon as Buchanan heard these words, he knew that the king was come in person, and hastened down to kneel at James's feet, and to ask forgiveness for his insolent behaviour. But the king, who only meant to give him a fright, forgave him freely, and going into the castle, feasted on his own venison which Buchanan had intercepted. Buchanan of Arnpryor was ever afterwards called the King of Kippen.

Upon another occasion, King James, being alone and in disguise, fell into a quarrel with some gipsies, or other vagrants, and was assaulted by four or five of them. This chanced to be very near the Bridge of Cramond; so the king got on the bridge, which, as it was high and narrow, enabled him to defend himself with his sword against the number of persons by whom he was attacked. There was a poor man thrashing corn in a barn near by,

## SCOTLAND

who came out on hearing the noise of the scuffle, and seeing one man defending himself against numbers, gallantly took the king's part with his flail, to such good purpose that the gipsies were obliged to fly. The husbandman then took the king into the barn, brought him a towel and water to wash the blood from his face and hands, and finally walked with him a little way towards Edinburgh, in case he should be again attacked. On the way, the king asked his companion what and who he was. The labourer answered that his name was John Howieson, and that he was a bondsman on the farm of Braehead, near Cramond, which belonged to the King of Scotland. James then asked the poor man if there was any wish in the world which he would particularly desire should be gratified; and honest John confessed he should think himself the happiest man in Scotland were he but the proprietor of the farm on which he wrought as a labourer. He then asked the king, in turn, who he was; and James replied, as usual, that he was the Goodman of Ballengiech, a poor man who had a small appointment about the palace; but he added that if John Howieson would come to see him on the next Sunday, he would endeavour to repay his manful assistance, and at least give him the pleasure of seeing the royal apartments.

John put on his best clothes, as you may suppose, and appearing at a postern gate of the palace, inquired for the Goodman of Ballengiech. The king had given orders that he should be admitted; and John found his friend, the goodman, in the same disguise which he had formerly worn. The king, still preserving the character of an inferior officer of the household, conducted John

## THE GOODMAN OF BALLANGIECH

Howieson from one apartment of the palace to another, and was amused with his wonder and his remarks. At length, James asked his visitor if he should like to see the king; to which John replied, nothing would delight him so much, if he could do so without giving offence. The Goodman of Ballengiech, of course, undertook that the king would not be angry. "But," said John, "how am I to know His Grace from the nobles who will be all about him?" — "Easily," replied his companion; "all the others will be uncovered, — the king alone will wear his hat or bonnet."

So speaking, King James introduced the countryman into a great hall, which was filled by the nobility and officers of the crown. John was a little frightened, and drew close to his attendant; but was still unable to distinguish the king. "I told you that you should know him by his wearing his hat," said the conductor. "Then," said John, after he had again looked around the room, "it must be either you or me, for all but us two are bare-headed."

The king laughed at John's fancy; and that the good yeoman might have occasion for mirth also, he made him a present of the farm of Braehead, which he had wished so much to possess, on condition that John Howieson, or his successors, should be ready to present a ewer and basin for the king to wash his hands, when His Majesty should come to Holyrood Palace, or should pass the bridge of Cramond. Accordingly, in the year 1822, when George IV came to Scotland, the descendant of John Howieson of Braehead, who still possessed the estate which was given to his ancestor, appeared at a solemn festival, and offered His Majesty water from a

## SCOTLAND

silver ewer, that he might perform the service by which he held his lands.

James V was very fond of hunting, and when he pursued that amusement in the Highlands he used to wear the peculiar dress of that country, having a long and wide Highland shirt, and a jacket of tartan velvet, with plaid hose, and everything else corresponding. The accounts for these are in the books of his chamberlain, still preserved.

On one occasion, when the king had an ambassador of the Pope along with him, with various foreigners of distinction, they were splendidly entertained by the Earl of Athole in a huge and singular rustic palace. It was built of timber, in the midst of a great meadow, and surrounded by moats, or fosses, full of the most delicate fish. It was enclosed and defended by towers, as if it had been a regular castle, and had within it many apartments, which were decked with flowers and branches, so that in treading them one seemed to be in a garden. Here were all kinds of game, and other provisions in abundance, with many cooks to make them ready, and plenty of the most costly spices and wines. The Italian ambassador was greatly surprised to see, amongst rocks and wilderness which seemed to be the very extremity of the world, such good lodging and so magnificent an entertainment. But what surprised him most of all was to see the Highlanders set fire to the wooden castle as soon as the hunting was over, and the king in the act of departing. "Such is the constant practice of our Highlanders," said James to the ambassador; "however well they may be lodged overnight, they always burn their lodging before they leave it." By this the king intimated



JOHN KNOX PREACHING BEFORE THE  
LORDS OF THE CONGREGATION

## JOHN KNOX PREACHING BEFORE THE LORDS OF THE CONGREGATION

BY SIR DAVID WILKIE

(*English artist, 1785-1841*)

JOHN KNOX, the Scottish reformer, took refuge from his enemies in a castle which soon fell into the hands of the French. At the request of Edward VI he was released and became one of the chaplains of that monarch. On the accession of Mary he was obliged to leave England, and withdrew to Geneva. In 1559 he returned to Scotland, and was promptly declared to be an outlaw and rebel. Nevertheless, he went on fearlessly to Dundee, to Perth, and then to St. Andrew's. The Protestants were called the Congregation. The laymen who were their leaders were chiefly noblemen, and these were known as the Lords of the Congregation. To them Knox declared that he intended to preach in the cathedral church. The archbishop threatened and his friends pleaded, but he was as little affected by the one as by the other, and preached on four successive days. His sermons must have been powerful, for provosts, bailies, and inhabitants determined to set up the reformed worship in their town. By way of preparation, they tore away the images and pictures in the church and leveled the monasteries.

In 1561 Mary Queen of Scots returned from France and met in many violent interviews the belligerent reformer. Knox was the leading spirit in the Reformation in Scotland, and it is chiefly to him that the establishment of the Scottish Kirk is due.





## THE GOODMAN OF BALLANGIECH

the predatory and lawless habits displayed by these mountaineers.

The reign of James V was not alone distinguished by his personal adventures and pastimes, but is honourably remembered on account of wise laws made for the government of his people, and for restraining the crimes and violence which were frequently practised among them; especially those of assassination, burning of houses, and driving of cattle, the usual means and ready by which powerful chiefs avenged themselves of their feudal enemies.

## THE FLIGHT OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS, TO ENGLAND

[1568]

BY SIR WALTER SCOTT

[IN 1565, Mary, Queen of Scots, married her cousin Lord Darnley, but his debauchery soon aroused her regret for the act. Two years later, the house in which he lodged was blown up, and his lifeless body was found. There is little question that the Earl of Bothwell was the murderer. The favor that Mary had shown him and the fact that she married him almost immediately after his divorce from his young wife aroused suspicion that she was privy to the murder. The Scottish nobles rose against her, and she was taken to Edinburgh, and thence to an island in Lochleven. Her escape from this place to England is described in the following extract.

*The Editor.]*

“MAY I crave to know,” said Roland, “whether, if Your Grace were beyond the walls of the castle, you could find means of conveyance to the firm land, and protection when you are there?”

“Trust us for that, Roland,” said the queen; “for to that point our scheme is indifferent well laid.”

“Then, if Your Grace will permit me to speak my mind, I think I could be of some use in this matter.”

“As how, my good youth? Speak on,” said the queen, “and fearlessly.”

“My patron, the Knight of Avenel, used to compel the youth educated in his household to learn the use of

SACKING A CHURCH IN THE TIME OF  
JOHN KNOX

# SACKING A CHURCH IN THE TIME OF JOHN KNOX

BY JOHN PRESCOTT KNIGHT

(*English artist, 1803-1881*)

THE sacking of a church is thus described by David Hume:—

“Mounting the pulpit at Perth, during the present ferment of men’s minds, he [John Knox] declaimed with his usual vehemence against the idolatry and other abominations of the Church of Rome, and incited his audience to exert their utmost zeal for its subversion. A priest was so imprudent, after this sermon, as to open his repository of images and relics, and prepare himself to say mass. The audience, exalted to a disposition for any furious enterprise, were as much enraged as if the spectacle had not been quite familiar to them: they attacked the priest with fury, broke the images in pieces, tore the pictures, overthrew the altars, scattered about the sacred vases; and left no implement of idolatrous worship, as they termed it, entire or undefaced. They thence proceeded, with additional numbers and augmented rage, to the monasteries of the Gray and Black friars, which they pillaged in an instant: the Carthusians underwent the same fate: and the populace, not content with robbing and expelling the monks, vented their fury on the buildings which had been the receptacles of such abomination; and in a little time nothing but the walls of these edifices were left standing. The inhabitants of Coupar, in Fife, soon after imitated the example.”







## THE FLIGHT OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

axe and hammer, and working in wood and iron; he used to speak of old northern champions who forged their own weapons, and of the Highland captain, Donald nan Ord, or Donald of the Hammer, whom he himself knew, and who used to work at the anvil with a sledgehammer in each hand. Some said he praised this art because he himself was of churl's blood. However, I gained some practice in it, as the Lady Catherine Seyton partly knows; for since we were here I wrought her a silver brooch."

"Aye," replied Catherine, "but you should tell Her Grace that your workmanship was so indifferent that it broke to pieces next day, and I flung it away."

"Believe her not, Roland," said the queen; "she wept when it was broken, and put the fragments into her bosom. But for your scheme — could your skill avail to forge a second set of keys?"

"No, madam, because I know not the wards. But I am convinced I could make a set so like that hateful bunch which the lady bore off even now, that, could they be exchanged against them by any means, she would never dream she was possessed of the wrong."

"And the good dame, thank Heaven, is somewhat blind," said the queen; "but then for a forge, my boy, and the means of labouring unobserved?"

"The armourer's forge, at which I used sometimes to work with him, is the round vault at the bottom of the turret; he was dismissed with the warder for being supposed too much attached to George Douglas. The people are accustomed to see me busy there, and I warrant I shall find some excuse that will pass current with them for putting bellows and anvil to work."

## SCOTLAND

"The scheme has a promising face," said the queen; "about it, my lad, with all speed, and beware the nature of your work is not discovered."

"Nay, I will take the liberty to draw the bolt against chance visitors, so that I will have time to put away what I am working upon before I undo the door."

"Will not that of itself attract suspicion, in a place where it is so current already?" said Catherine.

"Not a whit," replied Roland; "Gregory the armourer, and every good hammerman, locks himself in when he is about some masterpiece of craft. Besides, something must be risked."

"Part we then to-night," said the queen, "and God bless you, my children! If Mary's head ever rises above water, you shall all rise along with her."

[Roland succeeds in making the keys without being discovered. The queen points out to him a tiny light in the house of one Blinkhoolie, a gardener who lives across the lake, and shows him how she can signal to her friends who are there awaiting her.]

The keys had, with the wonted ceremonial, been presented to the Lady Lochleven. She stood with her back to the casement, which, like that of the queen's apartment, commanded a view of Kinross, with the church, which stands at some distance from the town, and nearer to the lake, then connected with the town by straggling cottages. With her back to the casement, then, and her face to the table, on which the keys lay for an instant while she tasted the various dishes which were placed there, stood the Lady of Lochleven more provokingly intent than usual — so, at least, it seemed to her prisoners — upon the huge and heavy bunch of iron, the

## THE FLIGHT OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

implements of their restraint. Just when, having finished her ceremony as taster of the queen's table, she was about to take up the keys, the page, who stood beside her, and had handed her the dishes in succession, looked sidewise to the churchyard, and exclaimed he saw corpse-candles in the vault. The Lady of Lochleven was not without a touch, though a slight one, of the superstitions of the time; the fate of her sons made her alive to omens, and a corpse-light, as it was called, in the family burial-place boded death. She turned her head towards the casement — saw a distinct glimmering — forgot her charge for one second, and in that second were lost the whole fruits of her former vigilance. The page held the forged keys under his cloak, and with great dexterity exchanged them for the real ones. His utmost address could not prevent a slight clash as he took up the latter bunch. "Who touches the keys?" said the lady; and while the page answered that the sleeve of his cloak had stirred them, she looked round, possessed herself of the bunch which now occupied the place of the genuine keys, and again turned to gaze at the supposed corpse-candles.

"I hold these gleams," she said, after a moment's consideration, "to come not from the churchyard, but from the hut of the old gardener Blinkhoolie. I wonder what thrift that churl drives, that of late he hath ever had light in his house till the night grew deep. I thought him an industrious, peaceful man. If he turns resetter of idle companions and night-walkers, the place must be rid of him."

"He may work his baskets, perchance," said the page, desirous to stop the train of her suspicion.

## SCOTLAND

"Or nets, may he not?" answered the lady.

"Aye, madam," said Roland, "for trout and salmon."

"Or for fools and knaves," replied the lady; "but this shall be looked after to-morrow. I wish Your Grace and your company a good evening. Randal, attend us." And Randal, who waited in the antechamber after having surrendered his bunch of keys, gave his escort to his mistress as usual, while, leaving the queen's apartments, she retired to her own.

"To-morrow!" said the page, rubbing his hands with glee as he repeated the lady's last words; "fools look to to-morrow, and wise folk use to-night. May I pray you, my gracious liege, to retire for one half-hour, until all the castle is composed to rest? I must go and rub with oil these blessed instruments of our freedom. Courage and constancy, and all will go well, provided our friends on the shore fail not to send the boat you spoke of."

"Fear them not," said Catherine, "they are true as steel — if our dear mistress do but maintain her noble and royal courage."

"Doubt not me, Catherine," replied the queen; "a while since I was overborne, but I have recalled the spirit of my earlier and more sprightly days, when I used to accompany my armed nobles, and wish to be myself a man, to know what life it was to be in the fields with sword and buckler, jack and knapsack!"

"O, the lark lives not a gayer life, nor sings a lighter and gayer song, than the merry soldier," answered Catherine. "Your Grace shall be in the midst of them soon, and the look of such a liege sovereign will make each of your host worth three in the hour of need. But I must to my task."



## THE FLIGHT OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

"We have but brief time," said Queen Mary: "one of the two lights in the cottage is extinguished; that shows the boat is put off."

"They will row very slowly," said the page, "or kent where depth permits, to avoid noise. To our several tasks. I will communicate with the good father."

At the dead hour of midnight, when all was silent in the castle, the page put the key into the lock of the wicket which opened into the garden, and which was at the bottom of the staircase that descended from the queen's apartment. "Now, turn smooth and softly, thou good bolt," said he, "if ever oil softened rust!" and his precautions had been so effectual that the bolt revolved with little or no sound of resistance. He ventured not to cross the threshold, but exchanging a word with the disguised abbot, asked if the boat were ready.

"This half-hour," said the sentinel. "She lies beneath the wall, too close under the islet to be seen by the warder; but I fear she will hardly escape his notice in putting off again."

"The darkness," said the page, "and our profound silence, may take her off unobserved, as she came in. Hildebrand has the watch on the tower — a heavy-headed knave, who holds a can of ale to be the best head-piece upon a night-watch. He sleeps for a wager."

"Then bring the queen," said the abbot, "and I will call Henry Seyton to assist them to the boat."

On tiptoe, with noiseless step and suppressed breath, trembling at every rustle of their own apparel, one after another the fair prisoners glided down the winding stair, under the guidance of Roland Graeme, and were received at the wicket-gate by Henry Seyton and the churchman.

## SCOTLAND

The former seemed instantly to take upon himself the whole direction of the enterprise. "My lord abbot," he said, "give my sister your arm; I will conduct the queen, and that youth will have the honour to guide Lady Fleming."

This was no time to dispute the arrangement, although it was not that which Roland Graeme would have chosen. Catherine Seyton, who well knew the garden path, tripped on before like a sylph, rather leading the abbot than receiving assistance; the queen, her native spirit prevailing over female fear and a thousand painful reflections, moved steadily forward, by the assistance of Henry Seyton; while the Lady Fleming encumbered with her fears and her helplessness Roland Graeme, who followed in the rear, and who bore under the other arm a packet of necessaries belonging to the queen. The door of the garden, which communicated with the shore of the islet, yielded to one of the keys of which Roland had possessed himself, although not until he had tried several — a moment of anxious terror and expectation. The ladies were then partly led, partly carried, to the side of the lake, where a boat with six rowers attended them, the men couched along the bottom to secure them from observation. Henry Seyton placed the queen in the stern; the abbot offered to assist Catherine, but she was seated by the queen's side before he could utter his proffer of help; and Roland Graeme was just lifting Lady Fleming over the boatside when a thought suddenly occurred to him, and exclaiming, "Forgotten — forgotten! wait for me but one-half minute," he replaced on the shore the helpless lady of the bedchamber, threw the queen's packet into the boat, and sped back



## THE FLIGHT OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

through the garden with the noiseless speed of a bird on the wing.

"By Heaven, he is false at last!" said Seyton; "I ever feared it!"

"He is as true," said Catherine, "as Heaven itself, and that I will maintain."

"Be silent, minion," said her brother, "for shame, if not for fear. Fellows, put off, and row for your lives!"

"Help me — help me on board!" said the deserted Lady Fleming, and that louder than prudence warranted.

"Put off — put off!" cried Henry Seyton; "leave all behind, so the queen is safe."

"Will you permit this, madam?" said Catherine imploringly; "you leave your deliverer to death."

"I will not," said the queen. "Seyton, I command you to stay at every risk."

"Pardon me, madam, if I disobey," said the intractable young man; and with one hand lifting in Lady Fleming, he began himself to push off the boat.

She was two fathoms' length from the shore, and the rowers were getting her head round, when Roland Graeme, arriving, bounded from the beach, and attained the boat, overturning Seyton, on whom he alighted. The youth swore a deep but suppressed oath, and stopping Graeme as he stepped towards the stern, said, "Your place is not with high-born dames; keep at the head and trim the vessel. Now, give way — give way. Row, for God and the queen."

The rowers obeyed, and began to pull vigorously.

"Why did you not muffle the oars?" said Roland Graeme; "the dash must awaken the sentinel. Row, lads, and get out of reach of shot; for had not old Hildebrand,

## SCOTLAND

the warder, supped upon poppy-porridge, this whispering must have waked him."

"It was all thine own delay," said Seyton; "thou shalt reckon with me hereafter for that and other matters."

But Roland's apprehension was verified too instantly to permit him to reply. The sentinel, whose slumbering had withstood the whispering, was alarmed by the dash of the oars. His challenge was instantly heard. "A boat — a boat! bring to, or I shoot!" And, as they continued to ply their oars, he called aloud, "Treason! — treason!" rung the bell of the castle, and discharged his harquebuss at the boat. The ladies crowded on each other like startled wild-fowl, at the flash and report of the piece, while the men urged the rowers to the utmost speed. They heard more than one ball whizz along the surface of the lake, at no great distance from their little bark; and from the lights, which glanced like meteors from window to window, it was evident the whole castle was alarmed, and their escape discovered.

"Pull!" again exclaimed Seyton; "stretch to your oars, or I will spur you to the task with my dagger; they will launch a boat immediately."

"That is cared for," said Roland; "I locked the gate and wicket on them when I went back, and no boat will stir from the island this night, if doors of good oak and bolts of iron can keep men within stone walls. And now I resign my office of porter of Lochleven, and give the keys to the Kelpie's keeping."

As the heavy keys plunged into the lake, the abbot, who till then had been repeating his prayers, exclaimed, "Now, bless thee, my son! for thy ready prudence puts shame to us all."

## THE FLIGHT OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

"I knew," said Mary, drawing her breath more freely, as they were now out of reach of the musketry — "I knew my squire's truth, promptitude, and sagacity. I must have him dear friends with my no less true knights, Douglas and Seyton; but where, then, is Douglas?"

"Here, madam," answered the deep and melancholy voice of the boatman who sat next her, and who acted as steersman.

"Alas! was it you who stretched your body before me," said the queen, "when the balls were raining around us?"

"Believe you," said he in a low tone, "that Douglas would have resigned to any one the chance of protecting his queen's life with his own?"

The dialogue was here interrupted by a shot or two from one of those small pieces of artillery called falconets, then used in defending castles. The shot was too vague to have any effect, but the broader flash, the deeper sound, the louder return which was made by the midnight echoes of Bennarty terrified and imposed silence on the liberated prisoners. The boat was alongside of a rude quay or landing-place, running out from a garden of considerable extent, ere any of them again attempted to speak. They landed, and while the abbot returned thanks aloud to Heaven, which had thus far favoured their enterprise, Douglas enjoyed the best reward of his desperate undertaking, in conducting the queen to the house of the gardener.

[Mary here learns that the "gardener" was formerly a well-known abbot. He gives her his blessing, horses are brought up, and soon the queen and her friends are at the

## SCOTLAND

castle of Seyton. Within a few days, some six thousand men gather around her banner. Battle follows, Mary's troops are routed, and she herself has to flee for her life. It is decided that she shall appeal to the hospitality of Queen Elizabeth of England, and a message to that effect has been sent to the English warden.]

At this moment a bugle sounded loudly from the beach.

"It is the death-blast to Queen Mary's royalty!" said Ambrosius: "the English warden's answer has been received — favourable, doubtless, for when was the door of the trap closed against the prey which it was set for? Droop not, Roland, this matter shall be sifted to the bottom; but we must not now leave the queen. Follow me; let us do our duty, and trust the issue with God. Farewell, good father; I will visit thee again soon."

He was about to leave the garden followed by Roland, with half-reluctant steps. The ex-abbot resumed his spade.

"I could be sorry for these men," he said; "aye, and for that poor queen, but what avail earthly sorrows to a man of fourscore? And it is a rare dropping morning for the early colewort."

"He is stricken with age," said Ambrosius, as he dragged Roland down to the sea-beach; "we must let him take his time to collect himself. Nothing now can be thought on but the fate of the queen."

They soon arrived where she stood, surrounded by her little train, and by her side the sheriff of Cumberland, a gentleman of the house of Lowther, richly dressed, and accompanied by soldiers. The aspect of the queen exhibited a singular mixture of alacrity and reluctance to

## THE FLIGHT OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

depart. Her language and gestures spoke hope and consolation to her attendants, and she seemed desirous to persuade even herself that the step she adopted was secure, and that the assurance she had received of kind reception was altogether satisfactory; but her quivering lip and unsettled eye betrayed at once her anguish at departing from Scotland and her fears of confiding herself to the doubtful faith of England.

"Welcome, my lord abbot," she said, speaking to Ambrosius, "and you, Roland Avenel, we have joyful news for you: our loving sister's officer proffers us, in her name, a safe asylum from the rebels who have driven us from our own; only it grieves me we must here part from you for a short space."

"Part from us, madam!" said the abbot. "Is your welcome in England, then, to commence with the abridgment of your train and dismissal of your counsellors?"

"Take it not thus, good father," said Mary; "the warden and the sheriff, faithful servants of our royal sister, deem it necessary to obey her instructions in the present case, even to the letter, and can only take upon them to admit me with my female attendants. An express will instantly be despatched from London, assigning me a place of residence; and I will speedily send to all of you whenever my court shall be formed."

"Your court formed in England! and while Elizabeth lives and reigns?" said the abbot; "that will be when we shall see two suns in one heaven."

"Do not think so," replied the queen; "we are well assured of our sister's good faith. Elizabeth loves fame; and not all that she has won by her power and her wisdom will equal that which she will acquire by extending

## SCOTLAND

her hospitality to a distressed sister; not all that she may hereafter do of good, wise, and great, would blot out the reproach of abusing, our confidence. Farewell, my page, — now, my knight, — farewell for a brief season. I will dry the tears of Catherine, or I will weep with her till neither of us can weep longer.” She held out her hand to Roland, who, flinging himself on his knees, kissed it with much emotion. He was about to render the same homage to Catherine, when the queen, assuming an air of sprightliness, said, “Her lips, thou foolish boy! and, Catherine, coy it not; these English gentlemen should see that, even in our cold clime, beauty knows how to reward bravery and fidelity!”

“We are not now to learn the force of Scottish beauty, or the mettle of Scottish valour,” said the sheriff of Cumberland courteously. “I would it were in my power to bid these attendants upon her who is herself the mistress of Scottish beauty as welcome to England as my poor cares would make them. But our queen’s orders are positive in case of such an emergency, and they must not be disputed by her subjects. May I remind Your Majesty that the tide ebbs fast?”

The sheriff took the queen’s hand, and she had already placed her foot on the gangway by which she was to enter the skiff, when the abbot, starting from a trance of grief and astonishment at the words of the sheriff, rushed into the water, and seized upon her mantle.

“She foresaw it! — she foresaw it!” he exclaimed — “she foresaw your flight into her realm; and, foreseeing it, gave orders you should be thus received. Blinded, deceived, doomed princess! your fate is sealed when you quit this strand. Queen of Scotland, thou shalt not leave



## THE FLIGHT OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

thine heritage!" he continued, holding a still firmer grasp upon her mantle; "true men shall turn rebels to thy will, that they may save thee from captivity or death. Fear not the bills and bows whom that gay man has at his beck; we will withstand him by force. O, for the arm of my war-like brother! Roland Avenel, draw thy sword!"

The queen stood irresolute and frightened — one foot upon the plank, the other on the sand of her native shore, which she was quitting for ever.

"What needs this violence, sir priest?" said the sheriff of Cumberland. "I came hither at your queen's command, to do her service; and I will depart at her least order, if she rejects such aid as I can offer. No marvel is it if our queen's wisdom foresaw that such chance as this might happen amidst the turmoils of your unsettled state; and, while willing to afford fair hospitality to her royal sister, deemed it wise to prohibit the entrance of a broken army of her followers into the English frontier."

"You hear," said Queen Mary, gently unloosing her robe from the abbot's grasp, "that we exercise full liberty of choice in leaving this shore; and, questionless, the choice will remain free to us in going to France, or returning to our own dominions, as we shall determine. Besides, it is too late. Your blessing, father, and God speed thee!"

"May He have mercy on thee, princess, and speed thee also!" said the abbot, retreating. "But my soul tells me I look on thee for the last time."

The sails were hoisted, the oars were plied, the vessel went freshly on her way through the firth which divides the shores of Cumberland from those of Galloway; but

## SCOTLAND

not till the vessel diminished to the size of a child's frigate did the doubtful and dejected and dismissed followers of the queen cease to linger on the sands; and long, long could they discern the kerchief of Mary, as she waved the oft-repeated signal of adieu to her faithful adherents and to the shores of Scotland.



## THE FATE OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

[1587]

BY SIR WALTER SCOTT

QUEEN ELIZABETH had two courses in her power, which might be more or less generous, but were alike just and lawful. She might have received Queen Mary honourably, and afforded her the succour she petitioned for; or, if she did not think that expedient, she might have allowed her to remain in her dominions, at liberty to depart from them freely, as she had entered them voluntarily.

But Elizabeth, great as she was upon other occasions of her reign, acted on the present from mean and envious motives. She considered the Scottish Queen, not as a sister and friend in distress, but as an enemy, over whom circumstances had given her power, and determined upon reducing her to the condition of a captive.

Mary was no subject of hers, nor, according to the laws of nations, had the English Queen any right to act as umpire in the quarrel between the Scottish sovereign and her subjects. But she extorted in the following manner a sort of acquiescence in her right to decide, from the Scottish Queen.

The messengers of Queen Elizabeth informed Mary that their mistress regretted extremely that she could not at once admit her to her presence, nor give her the affectionate reception which she longed to afford her, until her visitor stood clear, in the eyes of the world,

## SCOTLAND

of the scandalous accusations of her Scottish subjects. Mary at once undertook to make her innocence evident to Elizabeth's satisfaction; and this the Queen of England pretended to consider as a call upon herself to act as umpire in the quarrel betwixt Mary and the party by which she had been deposed and exiled. It was in vain that Mary remonstrated, that, in agreeing to remove Elizabeth's scruples, she acted merely out of respect to her opinion, and a desire to conciliate her favour, but not with the purpose of constituting the English Queen her judge in a formal trial. Elizabeth was determined to keep the advantage which she had attained, and to act as if Mary had, of her full free will, rendered her rival the sole arbiter of her fate.

The Queen of England accordingly appointed commissioners to hear the parties, and consider the evidence which was to be laid before them by both sides. The Commission met at York in October, 1568.

At the end of five months' investigation, the Queen of England informed both parties that she had, on the one hand, seen nothing which induced her to doubt the worth and honour of the Earl of Murray, while, on the other hand, he had, in her opinion, proved nothing of the criminal charges which he had brought against his sovereign. She was, therefore, she said, determined to leave the affairs of Scotland as she had found them.

To have treated both parties impartially, as her sentence seemed intended to imply her desire to do, the queen ought to have restored Mary to liberty. But while Murray was sent down with the loan of a large sum of money, Mary was retained in that captivity which was only to end with her life.

## THE FATE OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

Elizabeth continued to treat Mary as guilty, though she declined to pronounce her so; and to use her as her subject, though she was an independent sovereign who had chosen England for a retreat, in the hope of experiencing that hospitable protection which would have been given to the meanest Scottish subject, who, flying from the laws of his own country, sought refuge in the sister kingdom.

Always demanding her liberty, and always having her demand evaded or refused, Mary was transported from castle to castle, and placed under the charge of various keepers, who incurred Elizabeth's most severe resentment when they manifested any of that attention to soften the rigours of the poor queen's captivity, which mere courtesy and compassion for fallen greatness sometimes prompted.

During this severe captivity on the one part, and the greatest anxiety, doubt, and jealousy, on the other, the two queens still kept up a sort of correspondence. In the commencement of this intercourse, Mary endeavoured by the force of argument, by the seductions of flattery, and by appeals to the feelings of humanity, to soften towards her the heart of Elizabeth. She tried also to bribe her rival into a more humane conduct towards her, by offering to surrender her crown and reside abroad, if she could but be restored to her personal freedom. But Elizabeth had injured the Queen of Scotland too deeply to venture the consequences of her resentment, and thought herself, perhaps, compelled to continue the course she had commenced, from the fear that, once at liberty, Mary might have pursued measures of revenge, and that she herself would find it impossible to devise

## SCOTLAND

any mode of binding the Scottish Queen to perform, when at large, such articles as she might consent to when in bondage. Elizabeth had cause to regard the Queen of Scots with fear, as well as envy and hatred. The Catholic party in England were still very strong, and they considered the claim of Mary to the throne of England, as descended from the Princess Margaret, daughter of Henry VII, to be preferable to that of the existing queen, who was, in their judgment, illegitimate, as being the heir of an illegal marriage betwixt Henry VIII and Anne Bullen, and various plots were entered into among the Papists for dethroning Elizabeth, and transferring the kingdom of England to Mary, a sovereign of their own religion, and in their eyes the lawful successor to the crown.

As fast as one of these conspiracies was discovered, another seemed to form itself, and, coming so closely the one after the other, produced one of the most extraordinary laws that was ever passed in England; declaring, that if any rebellion, or any attempt against Queen Elizabeth's person, should be meditated by, or for, any person pretending a right to the crown, the queen might grant a commission of twenty-five persons, who should have power to examine into, and pass sentence upon, such offences; and, after judgment given, a proclamation was to be issued, depriving the persons in whose behalf the plots or rebellion had been made, of all right to the throne; and it was enacted that they might be prosecuted to the death. The hardship of this enactment consisted in its rendering Mary, against whom it was levelled, responsible for the deeds of others, as well as for her own actions; so that if the Catholics arose in rebellion,

## THE FATE OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

although without warrant from Mary, or even against her inclination, she was nevertheless rendered liable to lose her right of succession to the crown, and, indeed, to forfeit her life. Nothing short of the zeal of the English Government for the Reformed religion, and for the personal safety of Elizabeth, could have induced them to consent to a law so unjust and so oppressive.

This act was passed in 1585, and in the following year a pretext was found for making it the ground of proceedings against Mary. Anthony Babington, a young gentleman of fortune and of talents, but a zealous Catholic, and a fanatical enthusiast for the cause of the Scottish Queen, had associated with himself five resolute friends and adherents, all men of condition, in the desperate enterprise of assassinating Queen Elizabeth, and setting Mary at liberty. But their schemes were secretly betrayed to Walsingham, the celebrated Minister of the Queen of England. They were suffered to proceed as far as was thought safe, then seized, tried, and executed.

It was next resolved upon, that Mary should be brought to trial for her life, under pretence of her having encouraged Babington and his companions in their desperate purpose. She was removed to the castle of Fotheringay, and placed under two keepers, Sir Amias Paulet and Sir Drew Drury, whose well-known hatred of the Catholic religion was supposed to render them inclined to treat their unfortunate captive with the utmost rigour. Her private cabinet was broken open and stripped of its contents, her most sacred papers were seized upon and examined, her principal domestics were removed from her person, her money and her jewels were taken from her. Queen Elizabeth then proceeded

## SCOTLAND

to name commissioners, in terms of the Act of Parliament which I have told you of. They were forty in number, of the most distinguished of her statesmen and nobility, and were directed to proceed to the trial of Mary for her alleged accession to Babington's conspiracy.

On the 14th October, 1586, these commissioners held their court in the great hall of Fotheringay Castle.

The evidence which was brought to convict the Queen of Scotland was such as would not now affect the life of the meanest criminal; yet the commission had the cruelty and meanness to declare Mary guilty of having been accessory to Babington's conspiracy, and of having contrived and endeavoured the death of Queen Elizabeth, contrary to the statute made for security of the queen's life. And the Parliament of England approved of and ratified this iniquitous sentence.

At any other period in the English history, it is probable that a sovereign attempting such an action as Elizabeth meditated, might have been interrupted by the generous and manly sense of justice and humanity peculiar to a free and high-minded people like those of England. But the despotic reign of Henry VIII had too much familiarized the English with the sight of blood of great persons, and even of queens, poured forth by the blow of the executioner, upon the slightest pretences; and the idea that Elizabeth's life could not be in safety while Mary existed, was, in the deep sentiment of loyalty and affection which they entertained for their queen (and which the general tenor of her reign well deserved), strong enough to render them blind to the gross injustice exercised upon a stranger and a Catholic.

Yet, with all the prejudices of her subjects in her own



## THE FATE OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

favour, Elizabeth would fain have had Mary's death take place in such a way as that she herself should not appear to have any hand in it. Her ministers were employed to write letters to Mary's keepers, insinuating what a good service they would do to Elizabeth and the Protestant religion if Mary could be privately assassinated. But these stern guardians, though strict and severe in their conduct towards the queen, would not listen to such persuasions; and well was it for them that they did not, for Elizabeth would certainly have thrown the whole blame of the deed upon their shoulders, and left them to answer it with their lives and fortunes. She was angry with them, nevertheless, for their refusal, and called Paulet a precise fellow, loud in boasting of his fidelity, but slack in giving proof of it.

As, however, it was necessary, from the scruples of Paulet and Drury, to proceed in all form, Elizabeth signed a warrant for the execution of the sentence pronounced on Queen Mary, and gave it to Davison, her Secretary of State, commanding that it should be sealed with the great seal of England.

Mary received the melancholy intelligence with the utmost firmness. "The soul," she said, "was undeserving of the joys of heaven which would shrink from the blow of an executioner. She had not," she added, "expected that her kinswoman would have consented to her death, but submitted not the less willingly to her fate." She earnestly requested the assistance of a priest; but this favour, which is granted to the worst criminals, and upon which Catholics lay particular weight, was cruelly refused. The queen then wrote her last will, and short and affectionate letters of farewell to her relations in

## SCOTLAND

France. She distributed among her attendants such valuables as had been left her, and desired them to keep them for her sake. This occupied the evening before the day appointed for the fatal execution.

On the 8th February, 1587, the queen, still maintaining the same calm and undisturbed appearance which she had displayed at her pretended trial, was brought down to the great hall of the castle, where a scaffold was erected, on which were placed a block and a chair, the whole being covered with black cloth. The Master of her Household, Sir Andrew Melville, was permitted to take a last leave of the mistress whom he had served long and faithfully. He burst into loud lamentations, bewailing her fate, and deploring his own in being destined to carry such news to Scotland. "Weep not, my good Melville," said the queen, "but rather rejoice; for thou shalt this day see Mary Stuart relieved from all her sorrows." She obtained permission, with some difficulty, that her maids should be allowed to attend her on the scaffold. It was objected to, that the extravagance of their grief might disturb the proceedings; she engaged for them that they would be silent.

When the queen was seated in the fatal chair, she heard the death-warrant read by Beale, the clerk to the Privy Council, with an appearance of indifference; nor did she seem more attentive to the devotional exercises of the Dean of Peterborough, in which, as a Catholic, she could not conscientiously join. She implored the mercy of Heaven, after the form prescribed by her own Church. She then prepared herself for execution, taking off such parts of her dress as might interfere with the deadly blow. The executioners offered their assistance, but she



## THE FATE OF MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

modestly refused it, saying, she had neither been accustomed to undress before so many spectators, nor to be served by such grooms of the chamber. She quietly chid her maids, who were unable to withhold their cries of lamentation, and reminded them that she had engaged for their silence. Last of all, Mary laid her head on the block, which the executioner severed from her body with two strokes of his axe. The headsman held it up in his hand, and the Dean of Peterborough cried out, "So perish all Queen Elizabeth's enemies!" No voice, save that of the Earl of Kent, could answer "Amen": the rest were choked with sobs and tears.

Thus died Queen Mary, aged a little above forty-four years. She was eminent for beauty, for talents, and accomplishments, nor is there reason to doubt her natural goodness of heart, and courageous manliness of disposition. Yet she was, in every sense, one of the most unhappy princesses that ever lived, from the moment when she came into the world, in an hour of defeat and danger, to that in which a bloody and violent death closed a weary captivity of eighteen years.

.



IV  
A CENTURY OF UNREST

## HISTORICAL NOTE

WHEN the time of civil war between Charles I and the forces of Cromwell had come, the Scots as Presbyterians naturally united with the Parliament rather than the king; but when Charles II was restored to the throne, he set to work to establish episcopacy in Scotland. The Scotch Presbyterians, known as Covenanters, were savagely persecuted; but in 1690, under William and Mary, the Presbyterian Church became the State Church.

Scotland and England were in reality hardly better friends than they had been in the days of Bannockburn or Flodden Field; and laws passed in Scotland made it evident that on the death of Queen Anne, her successor would not be accepted as ruler of Scotland. In retaliation England passed laws that caused great commercial loss to the Scots. The only way to secure for each country what it most wanted was to unite the two under one Parliament. This was done in 1707. Since then, the history of Scotland has been a part of that of Great Britain.

By the terms of this Union, it was agreed that on the death of Queen Anne, she should be succeeded by Sophia, a niece of Charles I. As Sophia died before Anne, Sophia's son George was made king. The Jacobites (supporters of the House of Stuart) had hoped that the line of James II would be restored, and that his son James Edward (the Pretender) would be placed upon the throne. The Jacobites were chiefly in Scotland, as the Stuarts were a Scottish family. In 1715, there was an uprising of the Scotch Jacobites, but they were defeated at the battle of Sheriffmuir and the rebellion was easily suppressed. A second uprising in 1745 at first met with some success, but the rebels were finally dispersed by the defeat of Culloden. This was the last battle fought in Great Britain.

## WHY JENNY GEDDES THREW HER STOOL AT THE DEAN

BY "GRACE GREENWOOD" (SARA J. LIPPINCOTT)

ST. GILES'S CATHEDRAL, or the High Church, as it is now called, is not a very beautiful building, but it has a venerable look, and has many interesting historical associations. It was here that James VI took leave of his Scottish subjects as he was about to proceed to England, to succeed Elizabeth; and it is recorded that the people actually wept at losing him. But in St. Giles's Cathedral occurred a yet more important event than this royal farewell. Here, on the 13th of October, 1643, was sworn to and subscribed by the Committee of Estates in Parliament, the Commission of the Church, and the English Commission, the "Solemn League and Covenant" between the English Puritans and the Scottish Presbyterians. Another league, called the "National Covenant," had six years before been adopted by the Scottish people alone, as a defense against the encroachments of Prelacy, or Episcopacy.

The Reformation in Scotland was much more thorough and hearty than in England. Some of the reformers were too stern, hard, and uncharitable; but they had a stern, hard work to do, and so much persecution to endure, that it is little wonder they could not keep themselves in a very amiable frame of mind. Most of them were honest and earnest men, who had the good of their country and the glory of God at heart. The forms and

## SCOTLAND

titles of the English Church were not very different from those of the Church of Rome, though the king was declared its head, instead of the Pope. But the Kirk of Scotland was as opposite as possible to the Church of Rome, in its forms and government. The Presbyterian system was simple and strictly republican. The affairs of the kirk were administered by representatives, meeting in assemblies, and elected by votes, and no great head of the Church was acknowledged, except Christ himself. The Scottish people went out in a great body from the Church of Rome, because their consciences condemned its corruptions, and their proud spirits rebelled against its tyranny. The English people were mostly *driven* out, by their hot-headed king, Henry VIII, who had taken a spite against the Pope; and for many years they secretly longed to get back, and clung for dear life to as many of the Romish forms and ceremonies as their pope-kings would allow them. So it could hardly be expected that there would be much sympathy between the English and Scotch Protestants, though there was really very little difference between the doctrines they professed. King James VI, who was never more than half a man, showed no affection or gratitude toward the Protestant clergy, through whose power he had been placed on his poor mother's throne. The stern old Presbyterian preachers were little to his taste. They refused to flatter him, but bolted out their disagreeable truths, and thundered forth their rough reproofs and admonitions to his face. On one occasion, when an uncommonly free-spoken divine was preaching before him, the storm of pious rebuke came so hot and heavy that the king, jumping to his feet, called out

## JENNY GEDDES AND THE DEAN

angrily: "Speak sense, mon, or come down fra the pulpit!"

The minister grew very red in the face, but answered, with becoming spirit: "I tell thee, mon, I will neither speak sense nor come down fra the pulpit."

When, in 1603, James was called to the English throne, he determined to unite the religions as well as the governments of the two nations; and disliking Presbyterianism, he resolved that it should be made to yield to Episcopacy, and that Scotland should "conform" to England. His first tyrannical act was to punish by banishment, and in other ways, six clergymen, for holding a general assembly without his leave. He next caused measures to be passed by the Parliament at Perth, restoring the order of bishops, which the kirk had abolished. Then, by threats and bribery, he effected the passage of laws introducing the rites and ceremonies of the English service into the Scottish Church. The day when Parliament ratified these new laws, called the Five Articles of Perth, was long after spoken of as "the Black Saturday." Alas! Scotland had many such black days! The larger part of the clergy and laity refused to accept the new forms of worship, and were cruelly punished for nonconformity.

In 1625, James VI died, and was succeeded by his son, Charles I, who was put to death by Cromwell and his party, in 1649. He had some amiable, manly qualities, — he was a good husband and father, which is more than could be said of many of the Stuart family, — but he was not a good king, and he has been pitied more than he deserved, I think, — chiefly because he was an elegant, accomplished prince, — dignified, melancholy, handsome, and wore his hair in long, glossy curls

## SCOTLAND

over his shoulders. It is very hard to lose one's head, even if it has never been anointed and worn a crown; but Charles put his to no good use, and by his foolish acts seemed bent on getting rid of it. He was rash, obstinate, unreliable, and despotic. One of his most foolish and fatal undertakings was to carry out his father's plan of making the Scots conform to Episcopacy. He ordered his English bishops to prepare a liturgy, or Book of Common Prayer, for the Scottish Church, and sent down his most royal commands that it should be universally adopted by the clergy and people.

Sunday, July 23, 1637, was the day appointed for the introduction of the new service-book into the churches of Edinburgh. A multitude of people, including all the great lords and magistrates of the city, assembled at the High Church of St. Giles. The Dean of Edinburgh was to officiate, and at the time set for the service, he came out of the vestry, dressed in his surplice, and trying to look solemn and priest-like, but evidently feeling not a little nervous and awkward. He passed to the reading-desk, and began reading the service, in a loud but rather unsteady voice, while the people looked on silently, — some curious and wondering as though at a show, but the greater part sullen and indignant. Among those who showed most horror and anger was an old woman by the name of Jenny Geddes. She was not learned, nor great, — she was only the keeper of a greengrocer's stall in High Street, — but she was a dame of spirit, and a stanch Presbyterian, who hated Episcopacy next to Romanism, and Romanism next to the Evil One himself. This morning she sat on a little stool, near the desk, — but sat very uneasily from the first, — boiling over



## JENNY GEDDES AND THE DEAN

with indignation. When the dean came out in his robes, she tossed her nose in the air with disgust, and muttered something about "Popish rags." Then she drummed impatiently with her foot, fidgeted, and frowned, and took snuff, and glowered at him with her twinkling black eyes. At length, when he came to announce the collect for the day, it seemed she could control herself no longer, but springing to her feet, she caught up her stool and flung it at the poor dean's head, calling out at the top of her shrill voice: "Deil colick the wame o' thee, thou fause thief! dost thou say the mass at my lug?" which, translated into plain English, means, I am sorry to say, something very like this: "The Evil One give thee the colic, thou false thief! dost thou dare to say the mass in my ears?" A very kind and impolite wish, certainly; but those were rude times, and Dame Janet was very much excited. The throwing of her stool was the signal for a general uproar. All the women of the congregation rushed toward the desk, threatening to tear the surplice from the dean's shoulders; but he very prudently slipped it off, and while they were ripping and rending it to pieces, made his escape, and ran like a frightened hare till he reached his covert, the deanery. Then the Bishop of Edinburgh mounted the pulpit to call the people to order; but he soon dismounted, for he was not only saluted by cries of "A Pope! a Pope!" and other hard names, but by a regular storm of stools, and even stones! for the men, grown as courageous and excited as the women, were all up in arms, and chose rather to fight than to pray in the new way.

This riot was the beginning of a stout and universal resistance to the introduction of the service-book. The

## SCOTLAND

king was as obstinate as his subjects, and sent commands to the magistrates to punish the rioters severely, and enforce the reading of the Liturgy. Then the people banded together, and drew up and signed the great "National Covenant," by which they bound themselves to oppose Episcopacy and defend Presbyterianism with their lives. Hundreds of thousands eagerly signed this covenant, though they knew it might expose them to persecution, and even to martyrdom. Some signed it with one hand raised to heaven and tears streaming down their cheeks, — and some drew blood from their arms and dipped their pens in it, to make their oaths more solemn. Such a people as this were a match for any tyrant, as King Charles found to his cost. After declaring war against his rebellious Scottish subjects, and fighting several battles with the Covenanters, he was obliged to abandon his purpose, and make to them some important concessions. It was to a Scottish army that he finally surrendered himself, and, I regret to say, it was a Scottish army that sold him to the English Parliament.

When Charles I was put to death, the Parliament of Scotland resolved to support his son, Charles II, provided he would sign the Covenant. This he did, though he hated Presbyterianism even more than his father and grandfather had done. He said it was "not the religion for a gentleman," — a singular objection for a prince to make, who, it seemed, did not think any folly or vice ungentlemanly.

Charles signed the Covenant for nothing; his Scottish army was not strong enough to contend with the English forces, and he was obliged to retire to the Continent,

## JENNY GEDDES AND THE DEAN

and there remain till after the death of the great Protector, Cromwell. That old lion out of the way, he came back to England, and ascended the throne; and the people rejoiced as though this had been a happy event, and not, what it proved, a heavy misfortune.

## GATHERING SONG OF DONALD THE BLACK

BY SIR WALTER SCOTT

[THE division of the northern part of Scotland into valleys led to the formation of the inhabitants into small, isolated groups that had little to do with one another. Some man of wealth or of unusual ability became chief of each group, and the group received the name of "klaan" (clan) or "children." The marriages of each clan generally occurred within itself. Moreover, it was believed that both chief and followers were descended from some common ancestor. Thus the feeling of devotion to a leader was strengthened by the ties of relationship, and the clan followed its chief's banner as if it had been that of a father. The "plaid" was a piece of cloth two yards by four. Each clan had a plaid of a special arrangement of colors. This plaid was wrapped about the body in graceful folds, girded in at the waist, and fastened with a silver clasp upon the breast. The clan were sometimes called to warfare by the pibroch of the chief, a wild, irregular strain performed upon the bagpipe; sometimes by a messenger who bore the fiery cross, a cross of wood whose extremities were set on fire.

*The Editor.]*

PIBROCH of Donuil Dhu,  
Pibroch of Donuil,  
Wake thy wild voice anew,  
Summon Clan Conuil.  
Come away, come away,  
Hark to the summons!  
Come in your war-array,  
Gentles and commons.

## GATHERING SONG OF DONALD THE BLACK

Come from deep glen, and  
From mountains so rocky;  
The war-pipe and pennon  
Are at Inverlochy.  
Come every hill-plaid, and  
True heart that wears one.  
Come every steel blade, and  
Strong hand that bears one.

Leave untended the herd,  
The flock without shelter;  
Leave the corpse uninterr'd,  
The bride at the altar;  
Leave the deer, leave the steer,  
Leave nets and barges:  
Come with your fighting gear,  
Broadsword and targes.

Come as the winds come, when  
Forests are rended,  
Come as the waves come, when  
Navies are stranded:  
Faster come, faster come,  
Faster and faster,  
Chief, vassal, page and groom,  
Tenant and master.

Fast they come, fast they come;  
See how they gather!  
Wide waves the eagle plume  
Blended with heather.

## SCOTLAND

Cast your plaids, draw your blades,  
Forward each man set!  
Pibroch of Donuil Dhu  
Knell for the onset!

## THE EXECUTION OF MONTROSE

[1650]

BY WILLIAM E. AYTOUN

[MONTROSE was a Scottish statesman who served first in the Presbyterian army and later in that of King Charles. In behalf of the king, he made a descent upon Scotland, was taken prisoner by the Presbyterians, and executed.

*The Editor.]*

HE is coming, he is coming!  
Like a bridegroom from his room,  
Came the hero from his prison  
To the scaffold and the doom.  
There was glory on his forehead,  
There was luster in his eye,  
And he never walked to battle  
More proudly than to die:  
There was color in his visage,  
Though the cheeks of all were wan,  
And they marveled as they saw him pass,  
That great and goodly man!

He mounted up the scaffold,  
And he turned him to the crowd;  
But they dared not trust the people,  
So he might not speak aloud.  
But he looked upon the heavens,  
And they were clear and blue,

## SCOTLAND

And in the liquid ether  
The eye of God shone through:  
Yet a black and murky battlement  
Lay resting on the hill,  
As though the thunder slept within —  
All else was calm and still.

The grim Geneva ministers  
With anxious scowl drew near,  
As you have seen the ravens flock  
Around the dying deer.  
He would not deign them word nor sign,  
But alone he bent the knee;  
And veiled his face for Christ's dear grace  
Beneath the gallows-tree.  
Then radiant and serene he rose,  
And cast his cloak away;  
For he had ta'en his latest look  
Of earth, and sun, and day.

A beam of light fell o'er him,  
Like a glory round the shriven,  
And he climbed the lofty ladder  
As it were the path to heaven.  
Then came a flash from out the cloud,  
And a stunning thunder roll,  
And no man dared to look aloft,  
For fear was on every soul.  
There was another heavy sound,  
A hush and then a groan;  
And darkness swept across the sky —  
The work of death was done!



## THE BURIAL MARCH OF DUNDEE

[1689]

BY WILLIAM E. AYTOUN

[DUNDEE, or Claverhouse, was a Scottish soldier noted for his cruel enforcement of the laws enacted against the Scottish Covenanters. In 1689, he stirred up some of the clans to fight against William III of England. They routed the English at Killiecrankie, but Dundee fell in the fight.

*The Editor.*]

ON the heights of Killiecrankie  
Yester-morn our army lay:  
Slowly rose the mist in columns  
From the river's broken way;  
Hoarsely roared the swollen torrent,  
And the pass was wrapped in gloom.  
When the clansmen rose together  
From their lair amidst the broom.  
Then we belted on our tartans,  
And our bonnets down we drew,  
And we felt our broadswords' edges,  
And we proved them to be true;  
And we prayed the prayer of soldiers,  
And we cried the gathering cry,  
And we clasped the hands of kinsmen,  
And we swore to do or die!  
Then our leader rode before us  
On his war-horse black as night —

## SCOTLAND

Well the Cameronian rebels  
Knew that charger in the fight! —  
And a cry of exultation  
From the bearded warriors rose;  
For we loved the house of Claver'se,  
And we thought of good Montrose.  
And he raised his hand for silence —  
“Soldiers I have sworn a vow:  
Ere the evening-star shall glisten  
On Schehallion's lofty brow,  
Either we shall rest in triumph,  
Or another of the Graemes  
Shall have died in battle-harness  
For his Country and King James!  
Think upon the Royal Martyr —  
Think of what his race endure —  
Think on him whom butchers murder'd  
On the field of Magus Muir: —  
By his sacred blood I charge ye,  
By the ruin'd hearth and shrine —  
By the blighted hopes of Scotland,  
By your injuries and mine —  
Strike this day as if the anvil  
Lay beneath your blows the while,  
Be they Covenanting traitors,  
Or the brood of false Argyle!  
Strike! and drive the trembling rebels  
Backwards o'er the stormy Forth;  
Let them tell their pale Convention  
How they fared within the North.  
Let them tell that Highland honor  
Is not to be bought nor sold,

## THE BURIAL MARCH OF DUNDEE

That we scorn their prince's anger,  
As we loathe his foreign gold.  
Strike! and when the fight is over,  
If ye look in vain for me,  
Where the dead are lying thickest,  
Search for him that was Dundee!"

. . . . .

And the evening-star was shining  
On Schehallion's distant head,  
When we wiped our bloody broadswords,  
And returned to count the dead.  
There we found him gashed and gory,  
Stretch'd upon the cumbered plain,  
As he told us where to seek him,  
In the thickest of the slain.  
And a smile was on his visage,  
For within his dying ear  
Pealed the joyful note of triumph,  
And the clansmen's clamorous cheer:  
So, amidst the battle's thunder,  
Shot, and steel, and scorching flame,  
In the glory of his manhood  
Passed the spirit of the Graeme!  
Open wide the vaults of Athol,  
Where the bones of heroes rest —  
Open wide the hallowed portals  
To receive another guest!  
Last of Scots, and last of freemen —  
Last of all that dauntless race  
Who would rather die unsullied  
Than outlive the land's disgrace!

## SCOTLAND

O thou lion-hearted warrior!  
Reck not of the after-time:  
Honor may be deemed dishonor,  
Loyalty be called a crime.  
Sleep in peace with kindred ashes  
Of the noble and the true,  
Hands that never failed their country,  
Hearts that never baseness knew.  
Sleep! — and till the latest trumpet  
Wakes the dead from earth and sea,  
Scotland shall not boast a braver  
Chieftain than our own Dundee!

## THE MASSACRE OF GLENCOE

[1692]

BY P. HUME BROWN

THOUGH the Highlanders had been defeated at Dunkeld by the Cameronians, they were still in a very restless state, and it was feared that another rebellion might break out. It was in the West Highlands, and especially in Argyleshire, where it seemed most likely that the rebellion would take place. The reason of this was that almost all the clans in that part of the country hated the Earl of Argyle, and, as he was a supporter of William, this made the chiefs, who were his enemies, take the side of James. What the Government feared was that a French force would land in the Highlands, and then many of the clans would be certain to join it, and there would be another civil war. General Mackay, therefore, was sent to the West Highlands, with a body of soldiers, and, to overawe the chiefs, he built a fort at Inverlochy, which he called Fort William, after the name of the king.

But the Government was anxious to make sure that the chiefs would not again rise as they had done under Dundee. The first plan that was tried was one which had often been tried before. A sum of money, amounting to £12,000, was distributed among the chiefs, to bribe them to be loyal to William. This did very little good, however. Some of the chiefs refused to take the bribe, and others accepted it, but became no more loyal than before.

## SCOTLAND

Then, in the year 1691, the Government took a step which was to lead to a frightful crime. It proclaimed that, if the chiefs did not take the oath of allegiance to William by the 1st of January, 1692, they would be treated as outlaws, and their lands would become the property of the king. By the appointed day all the chiefs had taken the oath except one—Alexander Macdonald, chief of the clan of Macdonald, that inhabited the valley of Glencoe, in the north of Argyleshire. He meant to take the oath, but he foolishly put it off till it was too late. On the appointed day he went to Fort William, but the officer there told him that he could not receive his oath, and that the nearest place where it could be taken was Inveraray. Inveraray was at the other end of Argyleshire; the roads were deep in snow; and Macdonald was an old man and unable to travel swiftly. When he arrived at Inveraray, it was five days after the appointed time. However, he did take the oath, and that should have saved him and his clan.

Now, the person who had most power in Scotland at this time was Sir John Dalrymple, the Secretary of State, and he was determined to teach the Highland chiefs such a lesson as would keep them quiet ever afterwards. He got William, therefore, to sign what were called "Letters of Fire and Sword" against the clan Macdonald, without telling him that the chief had taken the oath. These letters of "fire and sword" had been quite common in Scotland, and what they meant was that the persons against whom they were directed should be treated as rebels, and hunted down till they were either slain or taken prisoners.

One day, not a month after Macdonald had taken the

## THE MASSACRE OF GLENCOE

oath, a troop of one hundred and twenty soldiers appeared in the valley of Glencoe. Most of them were Highlanders, and they were commanded by two men, Major Duncanson and Captain Glenlyon, both of whom belonged to the clan of the Campbells, who were the deadly enemies of the Macdonalds. The soldiers were hospitably received by the Macdonalds, and for about a fortnight the strangers and their hosts lived in the friendliest way together. At last, when their plans were ready, the officers gave the orders which they had received from Dalrymple. One morning about five o'clock, the old chief was shot as he was getting out of bed, and his wife immediately met the same fate. The plan had been that every Macdonald should be massacred, but, as it was a dark winter morning, many escaped among the neighboring hills. Thirty-eight, however, were slain, and among them were two children, two women, and an old man of eighty. This was the "Massacre of Glencoe," one of the most frightful crimes in the history of Scotland. Instead of helping William, as Dalrymple had intended, it made his enemies still more bitter against him, though, of course, William had never thought that the letters of fire and sword would be carried out in such a cruel and treacherous way.

## A RESCUE AT THE BATTLE OF PRESTONPANS

[1745]

BY SIR WALTER SCOTT

[IN 1745, Charles Edward, "the Young Pretender," entered Scotland hoping to win the support of the Highland clans. In this he succeeded to some extent, and defeated a small English force at Prestonpans. The rescue of an English officer in the manner described really occurred in this engagement. The story was told to Scott when he was a boy of fifteen.

*The Editor.]*

WHEN Fergus Mac-Ivor and his friend had slept for a few hours, they were awakened, and summoned to attend the prince. The distant village clock was heard to toll three as they hastened to the place where he lay. He was already surrounded by his principal officers and the chiefs of clans. A bundle of pease-straw, which had been lately his couch, now served for his seat. Just as Fergus reached the circle, the consultation had broken up. "Courage, my brave friends!" said the Chevalier, "and each one put himself instantly at the head of his command; a faithful friend has offered to guide us by a practicable, though narrow and circuitous route, which, sweeping to our right, traverses the broken ground and morass, and enables us to gain the firm and open plain, upon which the enemy are lying. This difficulty sur-



## A RESCUE AT PRESTONPANS

mounted, Heaven and your good swords must do the rest."

The proposal spread unanimous joy, and each leader hastened to get his men into order with as little noise as possible. The army, moving by its right from off the ground on which they had rested, soon entered the path through the morass, conducting their march with astonishing silence and great rapidity. The mist had not risen to the higher grounds, so that for some time they had the advantage of starlight. But this was lost as the stars faded before approaching day, and the head of the marching column, continuing its descent, plunged as it were into the heavy ocean of fog, which rolled its white waves over the whole plain, and over the sea by which it was bounded. Some difficulties were now to be encountered, inseparable from darkness, — a narrow, broken, and marshy path, and the necessity of preserving union in the march. These, however, were less inconvenient to Highlanders, from their habits of life, than they would have been to any other troops, and they continued a steady and swift movement.

As the clan of Ivor approached the firm ground, following the track of those who preceded them, the challenge of a patrol was heard through the mist, though they could not see the dragoon by whom it was made — "Who goes there?"

"Hush!" cried Fergus, "hush! — Let none answer, as he values his life. — Press forward!" And they continued their march with silence and rapidity.

The patrol fired his carabine upon the body, and the report was instantly followed by the clang of his horse's feet as he galloped off. "*Hylax in limine latrat*," said

## SCOTLAND

the Baron of Bradwardine, who heard the shot; "that loon will give the alarm."

The clan of Fergus had now gained the firm plain, which had lately borne a large crop of corn. But the harvest was gathered in, and the expanse was unbroken by tree, bush, or interruption of any kind. The rest of the army were following fast, when they heard the drums of the enemy beat the *general*. Surprise, however, had made no part of their plan, so they were not disconcerted by this intimation that the foe was upon his guard and prepared to receive them. It only hastened their dispositions for the combat, which were very simple.

The Highland army, which now occupied the eastern end of the wide plain, or stubble-field, so often referred to, was drawn up in two lines, extending from the morass towards the sea. The first was destined to charge the enemy, the second to act as a reserve. The few horse, whom the prince headed in person, remained between the two lines. The Adventurer had intimated a resolution to charge in person at the head of his first line; but his purpose was deprecated by all around him, and he was with difficulty induced to abandon it.

Both lines were now moving forward, the first prepared for instant combat. The clans of which it was composed, formed each a sort of separate phalanx, narrow in front, and in depth ten, twelve, or fifteen files, according to the strength of the following. The best-armed and best-born, for the words were synonymous, were placed in front of each of these irregular subdivisions. The others in the rear shouldered forward the front, and by their pressure added both physical im-

## A RESCUE AT PRESTONPANS

pulse, and additional ardour and confidence, to those who were first to encounter the danger.

“Down with your plaid, Waverley,” cried Fergus, throwing off his own; “we’ll win silks for our tartans before the sun is above the sea.”

The clansmen on every side stript their plaids, prepared their arms, and there was an awful pause of about three minutes, during which the men, pulling off their bonnets, raised their faces to heaven, and uttered a short prayer; then pulled their bonnets over their brows, and began to move forward at first slowly. Waverley felt his heart at that moment throb as it would have burst from his bosom. It was not fear, it was not ardour, —it was a compound of both, a new and deeply energetic impulse, that with its first emotion chilled and astounded, then fevered and maddened his mind. The sounds around him combined to exalt his enthusiasm; the pipes played, and the clans rushed forward, each in its own dark column. As they advanced they mended their pace, and the muttering sounds of the men to each other began to swell into a wild cry.

At this moment the sun, which was now risen above the horizon, dispelled the mist. The vapours rose like a curtain, and showed the two armies in the act of closing. The line of the regulars was formed directly fronting the attack of the Highlanders; it glittered with the appointments of a complete army, and was flanked by cavalry and artillery. But the sight impressed no terror on the assailants.

“Forward, sons of Ivor,” cried their chief, “or the Camerons will draw the first blood!” — They rushed on with a tremendous yell.

## SCOTLAND

The rest is well known. The horse, who were commanded to charge the advancing Highlanders in the flank, received an irregular fire from their fusees as they ran on, and, seized with a disgraceful panic, wavered, halted, disbanded, and galloped from the field. The artillerymen, deserted by the cavalry, fled after discharging their pieces, and the Highlanders, who dropped their guns when fired, and drew their broadswords, rushed with headlong fury against the infantry.

It was at this moment of confusion and terror, that Waverley remarked an English officer, apparently of high rank, standing alone and unsupported by a field-piece, which, after the flight of the men by whom it was wrought, he had himself levelled and discharged against the clan of Mac-Ivor, the nearest group of Highlanders within his aim. Struck with his tall, martial figure, and eager to save him from inevitable destruction, Waverley outstripped for an instant even the speediest of the warriors, and, reaching the spot first, called to him to surrender. The officer replied by a thrust with his sword, which Waverley received in his target, and in turning it aside the Englishman's weapon broke. At the same time the battle-axe of Dugald Mahony was in the act of descending upon the officer's head. Waverley intercepted and prevented the blow, and the officer, perceiving further resistance unavailing, and struck with Edward's generous anxiety for his safety, resigned the fragment of his sword, and was committed by Waverley to Dugald, with strict charge to use him well, and not to pillage his person, promising him, at the same time, full indemnification for the spoil.

On Edward's right, the battle for a few minutes raged

## A RESCUE AT PRESTONPANS

fierce and thick. The English infantry, trained in the wars in Flanders, stood their ground with great courage. But their extended files were pierced and broken in many places by the close masses of the clans; and in the personal struggle which ensued, the nature of the Highlanders' weapons, and their extraordinary fierceness and activity, gave them a decided superiority over those who had been accustomed to trust much to their array and discipline, and felt that the one was broken and the other useless. Waverley, as he cast his eyes towards the scene of smoke and slaughter, observed Colonel Gardiner, deserted by his own soldiers in spite of all his attempts to rally them, yet spurring his horse through the field to take the command of a small body of infantry, who, with their backs arranged against the wall of his own park, (for his house was close by the field of battle,) continued a desperate and unavailing resistance. Waverley could perceive that he had already received many wounds, his clothes and saddle being marked with blood. To save this good and brave man, became the instant object of his most anxious exertions. But he could only witness his fall. Ere Edward could make his way among the Highlanders, who, furious and eager for spoil, now thronged upon each other, he saw his former commander brought from his horse by the blow of a scythe, and beheld him receive, while on the ground, more wounds than would have let out twenty lives. When Waverley came up, however, perception had not entirely fled. The dying warrior seemed to recognise Edward, for he fixed his eye upon him with an upbraiding, yet sorrowful look, and appeared to struggle for utterance. But he felt that death was dealing closely with him, and resigning his

## SCOTLAND

purpose, and folding his hands as if in devotion, he gave up his soul to his Creator. The look with which he regarded Waverley in his dying moments did not strike him so deeply at that crisis of hurry and confusion, as when it recurred to his imagination at the distance of some time.

Loud shouts of triumph now echoed over the whole field. The battle was fought and won, and the whole baggage, artillery, and military stores of the regular army remained in possession of the victors. Never was a victory more complete. Scarce any escaped from the battle, excepting the cavalry, who had left it at the very onset, and even these were broken into different parties, and scattered all over the country.

THE ORDER OF RELEASE



## THE ORDER OF RELEASE

BY SIR JOHN EVERETT MILLAIS

(*English painter, 1829-1896*)

IN 1745, Charles Edward Stuart, the Young Pretender, grandson of James II, the deposed king of England, landed in the Highlands of Scotland. The clans rallied about him and at Prestonpans he met and defeated a small English army. After besieging Edinburgh in vain, he set out at the head of a motley force of six thousand men on an invasion of England. When within two days' march of London the coldness of his reception and the desertion of his soldiers forced him to turn back, and soon after his army was destroyed at the battle of Culloden. A price of thirty thousand pounds was placed by the English Government on the head of the Young Pretender, but after hiding for five months among the Scottish islands he managed to escape to France.

The picture shows a Highlander, who has been wounded and imprisoned in this rebellion, delivered by an order of release brought by his wife. Carrying her baby on her left arm, she presents the order to the jailer, who with keys in his hand narrowly scans the paper. The prisoner's collie dog jumps up and fawns on him, as, overcome with emotion at his unexpected release, he lets his head fall on his wife's shoulder.







# HOW FLORA MACDONALD SAVED PRINCE CHARLIE

[1745]

BY CHARLES SANFORD TERRY

THE moment was instinct with the need of action prompt and decisive. O'Neil bluntly formulated his plan, that Flora should somehow convey the prince to her mother's home in Skye. The scheme was hazardous, but Flora thought rather of the suspicion which would fall upon her chief, Sir Alexander Macdonald, then attending Cumberland. O'Neil persisted, and dwelt upon "the honor and immortality that would redound to her." Charles also assured her of his undying gratitude, and at length the brave girl consented. They parted in the early morning, she to Nunton (Clanranald's home) to make preparations, Charles and O'Neil to their old haunt in Coradale.

In what imminent danger her prince stood was apparent to Flora from an incident on her way to Nunton. She and her attendant, Neil Maceachain, had not proceeded far when they were challenged by a party of militia, and, having no passport, were detained in custody. By good fortune, her stepfather was captain of the company, and when he arrived next day (June 22) she told him the dangerous scheme to which she had committed herself. Details of it had no doubt been discussed already near Milton: Charles was to go under the disguise of "Betty Burke"—in one of his narratives O'Neil

## SCOTLAND

seems to suggest that it was Charles's own idea — and Betty, "a good spinster," was to accompany Flora to Armadale, where Mrs. Macdonald had "much lint to spin." The scheme was a bold one, but plausible. Passports, however, were needed, and Flora begged her stepfather to grant them. He complied readily, for at heart he was a Jacobite, and set her at liberty. So with passports for herself, Betty Burke, and Neil Maceachain, and a letter from Captain Macdonald to his wife recommending the virtues of that paragon among spinsters, Betty Burke, Flora continued her journey to Nunton.

Meanwhile, Charles and O'Neil had reached the shelter of Coradale. On the 22d they received a message from Flora that all was well. Neil no doubt was the bearer, and he would report the good news of the passports. But the hours passed, and no signal came from Flora. Charles became irritable and anxious, as Neil has left on record. O'Neil even declares that he had made up his mind to surrender. That his buoyant nature should have bowed before a position seemingly hopeless may be forgiven him. Action was the blood of him, suspense a weariness. For a moment the scheme agreed upon was in danger of breaking down entirely. An alternative — that Hugh Macdonald of Balshair should pilot the prince northward — was proposed from Nunton and abandoned. Betty Burke perforce donned her petticoats. On the 23d Neil managed to transport Charles and O'Neil to Wiay. Next day found them on Benbecula scouting cautiously towards Rossinish, the rendezvous. They reached it at midnight. Three more days of heart-eating anxiety passed slowly. At length all was ready, and on the 27th, Flora, Lady Clanranald, and a Mrs.

## FLORA MACDONALD AND PRINCE CHARLIE

Macdonald, escorted by O'Neil, proceeded to Rossinish. They found Charles, the prey of myriad midges, in a tiny hut cooking his dinner, "the heart, liver, kidneys, etc., of a bullock or sheep," upon a wooden spit. The fare was not regal, but with Flora on his right hand and Lady Clanranald on his left, "all dined very heartily." Dinner ended, there was some "jocose drollery," regarding Betty Burke and her clothing. Lady Clanranald begged Charles to try on his unaccustomed gear, and "with some tears for the occasion," dressed him in his new habit, a coarse calico gown, quilted petticoat of light color, a dun-colored woolen cloak, with a hood made (Irish fashion) to cover the "lang, odd hussie's" boyish face and bristly chin. A note of warning broke up the feast. Captain John Fergusson and an advanced section of Campbell's men were already at Nunton. The party scattered, Lady Clanranald to Nunton to explain her absence, the rest to Loch Uskavagh. Fresh alarms disturbed them there. "Very wet and wearied," they had made a fire upon a rock to warm them until nightfall. But the blaze was observed, and soon four armed wherries were making for the shore. Extinguishing the fire, Charles and his party made for the heather, and lay concealed there until the evening. By eight o'clock (June 28) the coast was clear, and the moment of departure at hand. O'Neil begged to be allowed to accompany his master. Flora refused. She had no pass for him, and objected that he knew no Gaelic, and had a "foreign air" likely to compromise them. Sadly he saw them depart, for Flora, one gathers, took some of his heart with her. He was made prisoner soon after, and so remained until February, 1747.

## SCOTLAND

It was a clear summer evening when Charles set sail from Loch Uskavagh "over the sea to Skye." But the fair promise was not fulfilled. About a league from shore the sea became rough and the wind blew half a gale. With Benbecula and its dangers behind him, Charles "seemed to be in good spirits," and watched over the sleeping Flora while he sang songs to hearten his crew. With the morning the sea grew calm, and the Point of Vaternish rose before them. Their ubiquitous enemy was awaiting them. Three boats lay moored near the shore. A shot whistled over them, a summons to bring to. Bending to their oars, the boatmen drove their boat into a friendly creek. There they rested and breakfasted, and, no pursuer being in sight, brought their charge in safety to Kilbride.

The first stage of the adventure was over, but other help was needed for its accomplishment. Not far northward of Kilbride lay Monkstat, or Mugstot, Lady Margaret Macdonald's home. Thither Flora went with Neil, leaving Charles upon the shore. Her arrival was sadly ill-timed. The militia were not far distant, and their commander, Lieutenant Macleod, was in the house. Leaving Flora to hold him in conversation, Lady Margaret left the room. Her husband was with Cumberland, somewhat under suspicion already, and Cumberland's elusive quarry was on the threshold of her house. The situation was unnerving. By good fortune her husband's factor, Macdonald of Kingsburgh, happened to be with her. Captain Donald Roy Macdonald also came at a hasty summons. Walking to and fro in the garden, under the eye of the unsuspecting lieutenant, they concocted their plan. Charles must be smuggled to

## FLORA MACDONALD AND PRINCE CHARLIE

Raasa. Kingsburgh undertook to see him to Portree, and Donald Roy went off to find young Macleod of Raasa and to procure a boat. That arranged, Lady Margaret returned to her visitors. The comedy was not yet played out. She pressed Flora to stay with her, she had so often promised herself, and so forth. Flora, ignorant of the garden plot, declined; the "troublesome times" called her to her mother at Armadale, and she must travel thither without delay. So after dinner she went, and with her Neil, Mrs. John Macdonald of Kirkbost, and her maid, an embarrassing addition to the party.

Meanwhile Charles had been told of the new plan for his safety. Kingsburgh had sent a message by Neil, bidding him conduct the prince to a hill on the road at the back of Monkstat. Kingsburgh joined him there later and brought refreshment, a little wine and a few biscuits. An hour before sunset they started, taking the road towards Kingsburgh's house. Flora and her companions came up soon after. Stalking along the road Betty Burke presented a strange figure. Mrs. Macdonald's maid observed her with some contempt. Never had she seen, she declared, such an "impudent-looking woman"! And how awkwardly she managed her skirts! Flora was in an agony of fear, and hastily drew her companion and her inquisitive maid to the front. Soon they left her, and trudging on through the rain and darkness midnight brought the fugitive to the shelter of Kingsburgh's home.

Mrs. Macdonald was already in her *robe de nuit*, when a message from Kingsburgh told her that "Milton's daughter" was her guest. "Give my service to



## SCOTLAND

her," she answered from her room, "and tell her to make free with anything in the house; for I am very sleepy, and cannot see her this night." Soon her daughter, wide-eyed and wondering, burst in upon her. "Mother," she panted, "father has brought in a very odd, muckle, ill-shaken-up wife as ever I saw! I never saw the like of her, and he has gone into the hall with her." On the heels of his daughter came Kingsburgh himself, clamoring for supper. "Pray, goodman," said his wife, "what company is this you have brought with you?" "That you shall know in good time," answered Kingsburgh, "only make haste and get some supper." Mrs. Macdonald, suspicious but compliant, sent her daughter to the hall for her keys. But "the muckle woman" was striding up and down the hall in a manner terrifying to behold. The girl saw her and fled. Presently Mrs. Macdonald appeared. As she told Bishop Forbes in after-days, "I saw such an odd muckle trollup of a carlin making lang wide steps through the hall, that I could not like her appearance at all." "What a lang, odd hussie is this?" she whispered to Kingsburgh aside. He would not satisfy her curiosity, and demanded supper. Charles, in fact, betrayed himself. As she returned to the hall from her larder he came forward and saluted his hostess with a bristly kiss. At once she divined half the mystery; "the lang hussie" was a man in disguise. "My dear," said Kingsburgh, "it is the prince." Fear for her goodman and their home, and anxiety over the meagerness of her larder, tore her equally. But she refused to sit down with royalty. "I know not how to behave before majesty," she objected. Again Kingsburgh reassured her, and at length, the comic prelude over, all



## FLORA MACDONALD AND PRINCE CHARLIE

fell-to to supper. No need had Mrs. Macdonald to apologize for her fare. Betty Burke ate heartily. Roasted eggs, collops, bread and butter, and a comprehensive "etc.," lingered in Mrs. Macdonald's memory as the successive courses of that memorable repast. As to drink, "the deel a drap did he want in's weam of twa bottles of sma' beer," she recalled. "God do him good o't," she added piously, "for well I wat he had my blessing to gae down wi't." After supper Charles called for brandy, and pledged his host and hostess. Then he asked for tobacco, taking a broken pipe from his pouch. Kingsburgh found a clean pipe and tobacco to fill it. The hour was towards daylight when they went to bed . . . .

Meanwhile at Portree, Roy Macdonald had been making arrangements for the voyage to Raasa. The day was far advanced when Charles and his party marched thither. He left Kingsburgh's house in his female gear, but with the resolution to abandon it at the first opportunity. The disguise, in fact, rather drew attention to its wearer than screened him from it; for, as Kingsburgh remarked, Charles's feminine airs were "all so man-like." In a wood, not far from Kingsburgh, Betty Burke shed her "bucklings." At Portree, Roy Macdonald, Young Raasa, and Captain Malcolm Macleod were waiting for the prince at the inn. He was wet to the skin when he arrived, "having on a plaid without breeches, trews, or even philibeg." Roy Macdonald offered his kilt. Then he "fell heartily to the meat," and after his meal called for tobacco, a quarter of a pound at fourpence halfpenny, and smoked a pipe before his departure. The moment of farewell had come. Charles

## SCOTLAND

bade good-bye to Kingsburgh and Neil Maceachain. Then turning to Flora he said: "For all that has happened, I hope, madam, we shall meet in St. James's yet." So he and his new guardians made their way to the boat. At his belt on one side he carried a bottle of Portree whiskey, on the other, a bottle of Kingsburgh's brandy and four shirts. In a napkin he took with him a "cold hen," also from Kingsburgh's larder. In his pocket was a lump of sugar. On his way to the boat he took the sugar from his pocket and gave it to Roy Macdonald for Flora, "for I am afraid," he said, "she will get no sugar where she is going" — "Our Lady," he called her. Roy handed the sugar to Malcolm Macleod, for the prince's need was likely to be greater than Flora's, though he was to win through to freedom and she to captivity. His last thought was of Flora. "Tell nobody, no, not our lady, which way I am gone," he directed Roy Macdonald. At the dawning of the day (July 1) he sailed from Skye.

[Flora Macdonald was arrested and kept as a prisoner for several months; but was then set free under the Indemnity Act of 1747. In 1774, she and her husband came to North Carolina, but returned to Scotland at the time of the American Revolution.

*The Editor.]*

# IRELAND

## I

### THE GOLDEN AGE OF ERIN

## HISTORICAL NOTE

IRELAND was invaded by race after race, and last of all, about the year 1000 B.C., by the Milesians, or Gaels, who are thought to have come from Gaul or Spain. At the time of their coming Ireland was held by a race of hunters known in legend as the Dedannans. The Milesians introduced agriculture and an elaborate legal system known as the Brehon Laws. Even in those earliest days poetry and music were cultivated in Ireland and beauty of scenery was appreciated. The five kingdoms into which Ireland was divided were almost constantly at war with one another, but about the second century A.D. the central kingdom of Meath became predominant, and under the semi-legendary King Cormac, who is said to have held high court at Tara in the third century A.D., pagan Ireland reached its highest glory.

At some time during the fifth century, St. Patrick preached Christianity in the land and founded churches and schools. St. Columba established a school at Iona in 563, and thence missionaries bore their message through the Scottish Lowlands and the north of England. For at least two centuries, Ireland led all western Europe in learning, and was justly called "the Island of Saints and Scholars."

The progress of Ireland was broken in upon by the savage attacks of the Northmen, which began at the end of the eighth century. Unfortunately there was too much rivalry among the Irish chiefs for them to unite readily against even so dangerous a foe; but at length, by the efforts of the three kings, Niall, Malachi, and Brian Boru, the power of the invaders was weakened; and finally, in 1014, Brian Boru met them at Clontarf, and defeated them so thoroughly that never again did they attempt a raid upon the country. After the defeat of the Northmen, warfare between the Irish chiefs was so constant that a chronicler described the island as a "trembling sod." In the twelfth century, one Dermot, king of Leinster, was driven from his throne. By permission of Henry II of England, the Norman Earl of Pembroke, known as Strongbow, came to his aid, married his daughter Eva, and later claimed the crown of Leinster. Thus it was that the Normans first entered the land.

## OISIN IN TIR NA N-OG<sup>1</sup>

### AN IRISH FOLK-STORY

[THE following is a good example of the folk-story of Ireland. It is a fascinating commingling of the real and fictitious. Fin MacCumhail, St. Patrick, the Jews, and the Druids abide together in the utmost harmony. Whether their home is pictured as in the fabled country of youth, or on the very substantial hill called Knock an Ar, is entirely immaterial. There is unrestrained fancy and a wild luxuriance of imagination. The narrative roams on from one incident to another with little attempt at definite construction. The "ending" may be the climax of some episode of the story, but often it provides nothing by way of climax to the tale as a whole.

This tale of Oisín (Ossian) is one of the folk-tales collected by Jeremiah Curtin in Ireland in 1887, taken from the lips of Gaelic-speaking persons.

*The Editor.]*

THERE was a king in Tir na n-Og (the Land of Youth) who held the throne and crown for many a year against all comers; and the law of the kingdom was that every seventh year the champions and best men of the country should run for the office of king.

Once in seven years they all met at the front of the palace and ran to the top of a hill two miles distant. On the top of the hill was a chair, and the man that sat first in the chair was king of Tir na n-Og for the next seven years. After he had ruled for ages, the king became anxious; he was afraid that some one might sit in the

<sup>1</sup> From *Myths and Folklore of Ireland*. Copyright (U. S. A.), 1889, by Jeremiah Curtin.

## IRELAND

chair before him, and take the crown off his head. So he called up his druid one day and asked: "How long shall I keep the chair to rule this land, and will any man sit in it before me and take the crown off my head?"

"You will keep the chair and the crown forever," said the druid, "unless your own son-in-law takes them from you."

The king had no sons and but one daughter, the finest woman in Tir na n-Og; and the like of her could not be found in Erin or any kingdom in the world. When the king heard the words of the druid, he said: "I'll have no son-in-law, for I'll put the daughter in a way no man will marry her."

Then he took a rod of druidic spells, and calling the daughter up before him, he struck her with the rod, and put a pig's head on her in place of her own.

Then he sent the daughter away to her own place in the castle, and turning to the druid said: "There is no man that will marry her now."

When the druid saw the face that was on the princess with the pig's head that the father gave her, he was very sorry that he had given such information to the king: and sometime after he went to see the princess.

"Must I be this way forever?" asked she of the druid.

"You must," said he, "till you marry one of the sons of Fin MacCumhail in Erin. If you marry one of Fin's sons, you'll be freed from the blot that is on you now, and get back your own head and countenance."

When she heard this she was impatient in her mind, and could never rest till she left Tir na n-Og and came

## OISIN IN TIR NA N-OG

to Erin. When she had inquired, she heard that Fin and the Fenians of Erin were at that time living on Knock an Ar, and she made her way to the place without delay and lived there a while; and then she saw Oisin, he pleased her; and when she found out that he was a son of Fin MacCumhail, she was always making up to him and coming towards him. And it was usual for the Fenians in those days to go out hunting on the hills and mountains and in the woods of Erin; and when one of them went, he always took five or six men with him to bring home the game.

On a day Oisin set out with his men and dogs to the woods; and he went so far and killed so much game that when it was brought together, the men were so tired, weak, and hungry that they could n't carry it, but went away home and left him with the three dogs, Bran, Sciolán, and Buglén, to shift for himself.

Now, the daughter of the King of Tir na n-Og, who was herself the Queen of Youth, followed closely in the hunt all that day, and when the men left Oisin she came up to him; and as he stood looking at the great pile of game and said, "I am very sorry to leave behind anything that I've had the trouble of killing," she looked at him and said, "Tie up a bundle for me, and I'll carry it to lighten the load off you."

Oisin gave her a bundle of the game to carry, and took the remainder himself. The evening was very warm and the game heavy, and after they had gone some distance, Oisin said, "Let us rest a while." Both threw down their burdens, and put their backs against a great stone that was by the roadside. The woman was heated and out of breath, and opened her dress to cool herself.



## IRELAND

Then Oisín looked at her and saw her beautiful form and her white bosom.

"Oh, then," said he, "it's a pity you have the pig's head on you; for I have never seen such an appearance on a woman in all my life before."

"Well," said she, "my father is the King of Tir na n-Og, and I was the finest woman in his kingdom and the most beautiful of all, till he put me under a druidic spell and gave me the pig's head that's on me now in place of my own. And the druid of Tir na n-Og came to me afterwards, and told me that if one of the sons of Fin MacCumhail would marry me, the pig's head would vanish, and I should get back my face in the same form as it was before my father struck me with the druid's wand. When I heard this, I never stopped till I came to Erin, where I found your father and picked you out among the sons of Fin MacCumhail, and followed you to see would you marry me and set me free."

"If that is the state you are in, and if marriage with me will free you from the spell, I'll not leave the pig's head on you long."

So they got married without delay, not waiting to take home the game or to lift it from the ground. That moment the pig's head was gone, and the king's daughter had the same face and beauty that she had before her father struck her with the druidic wand.

"Now," said the Queen of Youth to Oisín, "I cannot stay here long, and unless you come with me to Tir na n-Og we must part."

"Oh," said Oisín, "wherever you go I'll go, and wherever you turn I'll follow."

Then she turned and Oisín went with her, not going



## OISIN IN TIR NA N-OG

back to Knock an Ar to see his father or his son. That very day they set out for Tir na n-Og and never stopped till they came to her father's castle; and when they came, there was a welcome before them, for the king thought his daughter was lost. That same year there was to be a choice of a king; and when the appointed day came at the end of the seventh year, all the great men and the champions, and the king himself, met together at the front of the castle to run and see who should be first in the chair on the hill; but before a man of them was halfway to the hill, Oisín was sitting above in the chair before them. After that time no one stood up to run for the office against Oisín, and he spent many a happy year as king in Tir na n-Og. At last he said to his wife, "I wish I could be in Erin to-day to see my father and his men."

"If you go," said his wife, "and set foot on the land of Erin, you'll never come back here to me, and you'll become a blind old man. How long do you think it is since you came here?"

"About three years," said Oisín.

"It is three hundred years," said she, "since you came to this kingdom with me. If you must go to Erin, I'll give you this white-faced steed to carry you; but if you come down from the steed or touch the soil of Erin with your foot, the steed will come back that minute, and you'll be where he left you, a poor old man."

"I'll come back, never fear," said Oisín. "Have I not good reason to come back? But I must see my father and my son and my friends in Erin once more; I must have even one look at them."

## IRELAND

She prepared the steed for Oisín and said, "This steed will carry you wherever you wish to go."

Oisín never stopped till the steed touched the soil of Erin; and he went on till he came to Knock Patrick in Munster, where he saw a man herding cows. In the field, where the cows were grazing, there was a broad flat stone.

"Will you come here," said Oisín to the herdsman, "and turn over this stone?"

"Indeed, then, I will not," said the herdsman; "for I could not lift it, nor twenty men more like me."

Oisín rode up to the stone, and, reaching down, caught it with his hand and turned it over. Underneath the stone was the great horn of the Fenians (*borabu*), which circled round like a seashell, and it was the rule that when any of the Fenians of Erin blew the *borabu*, the others would assemble at once from whatever part of the country they might be in at the time.

"Will you bring this horn to me?" asked Oisín of the herdsman.

"I will not," said the herdsman; "for neither I nor many more like me could raise it from the ground."

With that Oisín moved near the horn, and reaching down took it in his hand; but so eager was he to blow it, that he forgot everything, and slipped in reaching till one foot touched the earth. In an instant the steed was gone, and Oisín lay on the ground a blind old man. The herdsman went to St. Patrick, who lived near by, and told him what had happened.

St. Patrick sent a man and a horse for Oisín, brought him to his own house, gave him a room by himself, and sent a boy to stay with him to serve and take care of

## OISIN IN TIR NA N-OG

him. And St. Patrick commanded his cook to send Oisín plenty of meat and drink, to give him bread and beef and butter every day.

Now Oisín lived a while in this way. The cook sent him provisions each day, and St. Patrick himself asked him all kinds of questions about the old times of the Fenians of Erin. Oisín told him about his father, Fin MacCumhail, about himself, his son Osgar, Goll MacMorna, Conan Maol, Diarmuid, and all the Fenian heroes; how they fought, feasted, and hunted, how they came under druidic spells, and how they were freed from them.

At the same time St. Patrick was putting up a great building; but what his men used to put up in the day-time was leveled at night, and St. Patrick lamented over his losses in the hearing of Oisín. Then Oisín said in the hearing of St. Patrick, "If I had my strength and my sight, I'd put a stop to the power that is leveling your work."

"Do you think you'd be able to do that," said St. Patrick, "and let my building go on?"

"I do, indeed," said Oisín.

So St. Patrick prayed to the Lord, and the sight and strength came back to Oisín. He went to the woods and got a great club and stood at the building on guard.

What should come in the night but a great beast in the form of a bull, which began to uproot and destroy the work. But if he did Oisín faced him, and the battle began hot and heavy between the two; but in the course of the night Oisín got the upper hand of the bull and left him dead before the building. Then he stretched out on the ground himself and fell asleep.

## IRELAND

Now, St. Patrick was waiting at home to know how would the battle come out, and thinking Oisín too long away he sent a messenger to the building; and when the messenger came he saw the ground torn up, a hill in one place and a hollow in the next. The bull was dead and Oisín sleeping after the desperate battle. He went back and told what he saw.

“Oh,” said St. Patrick, “it’s better to knock the strength out of him again; for he’ll kill us all if he gets vexed.”

St. Patrick took the strength out of him, and when Oisín woke up he was a blind man and the messenger went out and brought him home.

Oisín lived on for a time as before. The cook sent him his food, the boy served him, and St. Patrick listened to the stories of the Fenians of Erin.

St. Patrick had a neighbor, a Jew, a very rich man, but the greatest miser in the kingdom, and he had the finest haggart (hay-yard) of corn in Erin. Well, the Jew and St. Patrick got very intimate with one another, and so great became the friendship of the Jew for St. Patrick at last, that he said he’d give him, for the support of his house, as much corn as one man could thrash out of the haggart in a day.

When St. Patrick went home after getting the promise of the corn, he told in the hearing of Oisín about what the Jew had said.

“Oh, then,” said Oisín, “if I had my sight and strength, I’d thrash as much corn in one day as would do your whole house for a twelvemonth and more.”

“Will you do that for me?” said St. Patrick.

“I will,” said Oisín.

## OISIN IN TIR NA N-OG

St. Patrick prayed again to the Lord, and the sight and strength came back to Oisín. He went to the woods next morning at daybreak, Oisín did, pulled up two fine ash trees and made a flail of them. After eating his breakfast he left the house and never stopped till he faced the haggart of the Jew. Standing before one of the stacks of wheat he hit it a wallop of his flail and broke it asunder. He kept on in this way till he slashed the whole haggart to and fro, — and the Jew running like mad up and down the highroad in front of the haggart, tearing the hair from his head when he saw what was doing to his wheat, and the face gone from him entirely, he was so in dread of Oisín.

When the haggart was thrashed clean, Oisín went to St. Patrick and told him to send his men for the wheat; for he had thrashed out the whole haggart. When St. Patrick saw the countenance that was on Oisín, and heard what he had done, he was greatly in dread of him, and knocked the strength out of him again, and Oisín became an old blind man as before.

St. Patrick's men went to the haggart and there was so much wheat they did n't bring the half of it away with them and they did n't want it.

Oisín again lived for a while as before, and then he was vexed because the cook did n't give him what he wanted. He told St. Patrick that he was n't getting enough to eat. Then St. Patrick called up the cook before himself and Oisín and asked her what she was giving Oisín to eat. She said: "I give him at every meal what bread is baked on a large griddle and all the butter I make in one churn and a quarter of beef besides."

"That ought to be enough for you," said St. Patrick.

## IRELAND

"Oh, then," said Oisín, turning to the cook, "I have often seen the leg of a blackbird bigger than the quarter of beef you give me, I have often seen an ivy leaf bigger than the griddle on which you bake the bread for me, and I have often seen a single rowan (mountain ash) berry bigger than the bit of butter you give me to eat."

"You lie!" said the cook, "you never did."

Oisín said not a word in answer.

Now, there was a hound in the place that was going to have her first whelps, and Oisín said to the boy who was tending him: "Do you mind and get the first whelp she'll have and drown the others."

Next morning the boy found three whelps, and coming back to Oisín, said: "There are three whelps and 't is unknown which of them is the first."

At St. Patrick's house they had slaughtered an ox the day before, and Oisín said: "Go now and bring the hide of the ox and hang it up in this room." When the hide was hung up, Oisín said, "Bring here the three whelps and throw them up against the hide." The boy threw up one of the whelps against the oxhide. "What did he do?" asked Oisín.

"What did he do," said the boy, "but fall to the ground."

"Throw up another," said Oisín. The boy threw another. "What did he do?" asked Oisín.

"What did he do but fall the same as the first."

The third whelp was thrown and he held fast to the hide, — did n't fall. "What did he do?" asked Oisín.

"Oh," said the boy, "he kept his hold."

"Take him down," said Oisín; "give him to the



## OISIN IN TIR NA N-OG

mother: bring both in here; feed the mother well and drown the other two."

The boy did as he was commanded, and fed the two well, and when the whelp grew up the mother was banished, the whelp chained up and fed for a year and a day, And when the year and a day were spent, Oisín said, "We'll go hunting to-morrow, and we'll take the dog with us."

They went next day, the boy guiding Oisín, holding the dog by a chain. They went first to the place where Oisín had touched earth and lost the magic steed from Tir na n-Og. The *borabu* of the Fenians of Erin was lying on the ground there still. Oisín took it up and they went on to Glen na Smuile (Thrushes' Glen). When at the edge of the glen Oisín began to sound the *borabu*. Birds and beasts of every kind came hurrying forward. He blew the horn till the glen was full of them from end to end.

"What do you see now?" asked he of the boy.

"The glen is full of living things."

"What is the dog doing?"

"He is looking ahead and his hair is on end."

"Do you see anything else?"

"I see a great bird all black settling down on the north side of the glen."

"That's what I want," said Oisín; "what is the dog doing now?"

"Oh, the eyes are coming out of his head, and there is n't a rib of hair on his body that is n't standing up."

"Let him go now," said Oisín. The boy let slip the chain and the dog rushed through the glen killing everything before him. When all the others were dead, he turned to the great blackbird and killed that. Then he

## IRELAND

faced Oisín and the boy and came bounding toward them with venom and fierceness. Oisín drew out of his bosom a brass ball and said: "If you don't throw this into the dog's mouth, he'll destroy us both; knock the dog with the ball or he'll tear us to pieces."

"Oh," said the boy, "I'll never be able to throw the ball, I'm so in dread of the dog."

"Come here at my back, then," said Oisín, "and straighten my hand towards the dog." The boy directed the hand and Oisín threw the ball into the dog's mouth and killed him on the spot.

"What have we done?" asked Oisín.

"Oh, the dog is knocked," said the boy.

"We are all right, then," said Oisín, "and do you lead me now to the blackbird of the carn, I don't care for the others."

They went to the great bird, kindled a fire and cooked all except one of its legs. Then Oisín ate as much as he wanted and said; "I've had a good meal of my own hunting, and it's many and many a day since I have had one. Now let us go on farther."

They went into the woods, and soon Oisín asked the boy: "Do you see anything wonderful?"

"I see an ivy with the largest leaves I have ever set eyes on."

"Take one leaf of that ivy," said Oisín.

The boy took the leaf. Near the ivy they found a rowan berry, and then went home taking the three things with them, — the blackbird's leg, the ivy leaf, and the rowan berry. When they reached the house Oisín called for the cook, and St. Patrick made her come to the fore. When she came Oisín pointed to the black-



## OISIN IN TIR NA N-OG

bird's leg and asked, "Which is larger, that leg or the quarter of beef you give me?"

"Oh, that is a deal larger," said the cook.

"You were right in that case," said St. Patrick to Oisin.

Then Oisin drew out the ivy leaf and asked, "Which is larger, this or the griddle on which you made bread for me?"

"That is larger than the griddle and the bread together," said the cook.

"Right again," said St. Patrick.

Oisin now took out the rowan berry and asked: "Which is larger, this berry or the butter of one churning which you give me?"

"Oh, that is bigger," said the cook, "than both the churn and the butter."

"Right, every time," said St. Patrick.

Then Oisin raised his arm and swept the head off the cook with a stroke from the edge of his hand, saying, "You'll never give the lie to an honest man again."

## THE CHASE OF SLIEVE CULLINN

### AN OLD IRISH LEGEND

[THE Feni were a sort of militia who were in their glory in the third century. Their most famous commander was Fin, and Fin's son was Oisin, or Ossian, the poet. According to tradition, Ossian lived till the times of St. Patrick, and related to him the following tale together with many others. Even to-day the belief lingers that the waters of the little lake Slieve Cullinn have the power to turn the hair gray. In the Irish legends, the Dedannans are magicians.

*The Editor.]*

CULAND, the smith of the Dedannans, who lived at Slieve Cullinn, had two beautiful daughters, Milucra and Aina. They both loved Fin, and each sought him for her husband.

As they walked together one evening near Allen, they fell to talking of many things; and their conversation turning at last on their future husbands, Aina said she would never marry a man with gray hair.

When Milucra heard this, she resolved with herself that if she could not get Fin, she would plan so that he should not marry her sister Aina. So she departed immediately, and turning her steps northwards, she summoned the Dedannans to meet her at Slieve Cullinn. Having brought them all together, she caused them to make her a lake near the top of the mountain; and she breathed a druidical virtue on its waters, that all who bathed in it should become gray.

On a morning not long after this, Fin happened to be

## THE CHASE OF SLIEVE CULLINN

walking alone on the lawn before the palace of Allen, when a doe sprang out from a thicket, and passing quite close to him, bounded past like the wind. Without a moment's delay, he signaled for his companions and dogs; but none heard except his two hounds, Bran and Skolan. He instantly gave chase, with no other arms than his sword, Man-an-Lona, and accompanied only by his two dogs; and before the Feni knew of his absence, he had left Allen of the green slopes far behind.

The chase turned northwards; and though the hounds kept close to the doe, the chief kept quite as close to the hounds the whole way. And so they continued without rest or pause, till they reached Slieve Cullinn, far in the north.

Here the doe made a sudden turn and disappeared; and what direction she took, whether east or west, Fin knew not, for he never caught sight of her after. And he marveled much that any doe in the world should be able to lead Bran and Skolan so long a chase, and escape from them in the end. Meantime they kept on searching, Fin taking one side of the hill and the dogs another, so that he was at last left quite alone.

While he was wandering about the hill and whistling for his hounds, he heard the plaintive cry of a woman at no great distance; and, turning his steps towards the place, he saw a lady sitting on the brink of a little lake, weeping as if her heart would break. Never before did the chieftain see a maiden so lovely. The rose color of her cheeks was heightened by her grief; her lips were like ruddy quicken berries; the delicate blossom of the apple tree was not more white than her neck; her hair fell in heavy golden ringlets on her shoulders; and as she

## IRELAND

looked up at the chief, her eyes beamed like stars on a frosty night.

Finn accosted her, and, seeing that she ceased her weeping for a moment, he asked her had she seen his two hounds pass that way.

"I have not seen thy hounds," she replied, "nor have I been at all concerned in the chase; for, alas, there is something that troubles me more nearly, a misadventure that has caused me great sorrow!"

And as she spoke these words, she burst out weeping and sobbing more bitterly than before.

Fin was greatly moved at this, so much so, that he quite forgot all about his hounds and his own troubles; and he asked her —

"What is the cause of this great grief, gentle lady? Has death robbed you of your husband or your child, or what other evil has befallen you? I am much concerned to see a lady in such distress; and I wish you to tell me if anything can be done to lighten your sorrow, or to remove the cause of it."

She replied, "I had a precious gold ring on my finger, which I prized beyond anything in the world; and it has fallen from me into the water. I saw it roll down the steep slope at the bottom, till it went quite out of my sight. This is the cause of my sorrow, and thou canst remedy the mishap if thou wilt. The Feni are sworn never to refuse help to a woman in distress; and I now put on thee those *gesa* (i.e., I solemnly adjure thee) that true heroes dare not break through, to search for the ring and cease not till thou find it and restore it to me."

Though the chief had at the moment no inclination to swim, he could not refuse a prayer urged in this manner.

## THE CHASE OF SLIEVE CULLINN

So he plunged in without a moment's hesitation, and examined the lake on all sides, diving and searching into every nook and cranny at the bottom.

After swimming in this manner three times round and round the lake, he found the ring at last; and, approaching the lady, he handed it to her from the water. The moment she got it she sprang into the lake before his eyes, and, diving down, disappeared in an instant.

The chief, wondering greatly at this strange behavior, stepped forth from the water; but as soon as his feet had touched the dry land, he lost all his strength, and fell on the brink, a withered, gray old man, shrunken up and trembling all over with weakness.

He sat him down in woeful plight; and soon his hounds came up. They looked at him wistfully and sniffed and whined around him; but they knew him not, and passing on, they ran round the lake, searching in vain for their master.

On that day the Feni were assembled in the banquet hall of the palace of Allen; some feasting and drinking, some playing chess, and others listening to the sweet music of the harpers. While all were in this wise pleasantly engaged, Kylta MacRonan stood up in the midst. and said in the hearing of all, —

“I have observed, friends, that our master and king Fin the son of Cumhail, has not been amongst us to-day, as is his wont; and I wish to know whither he has gone.”

This speech caused a sudden alarm amongst us; for no one knew aught of the chief, or was aware till that moment that he was absent at all; and we knew not wherefore he had disappeared or whither he had gone.

## IRELAND

In the midst of our anxious tumult, the envious and foul-mouthed Conan Maol stood up, and said, —

“I have never heard sweeter music than your words, Kylta! The Feni are now about to seek for their king; and my only wish is that their quest may last for a whole year, and that it may prove a vain search in the end! Be not cast down, however, O Feni; if you should fail to find the son of Cumhail, you will not be so ill off as you think; for I will undertake to be your king from this time forth!”

Though we were at the time more inclined to be sad than mirthful, being weighed down with much anxiety, we could not help laughing when we heard the loud, foolish talk of Conan Maol; but we took no further notice of him.

Inquiring now from the lesser people about the palace, we found that the chief and his two dogs had followed a doe northwards. So, having mustered a strong party of the Feni, we started in pursuit. Kylta and I took the lead, the rest keeping close behind; and in this order we followed the track, never taking rest or slackening speed till we reached Slieve Cullinn.

We began to search round the hill, hoping to find either the chief himself or some person who might give us tidings of him. After wandering among brakes and rough, rocky places, we at last espied a gray-headed old man sitting on the brink of a lake. I went up to him to ask a question, followed by the rest of the Feni. At first I thought he might be a fisherman who had come up from the plains to fish; but when we came near him, he seemed so wretched an old creature, all shriveled up, with the skin hanging in wrinkles over the bare points of his bones, that I felt quite sure he was not a fisherman,

## THE CHASE OF SLIEVE CULLINN

and that he was reduced to that state more by sickness and want than by old age.

I asked the poor old man if he had seen a noble-looking hero pass that way, with two hounds, chasing a doe. He never answered a word, neither did he stir from where he sat, or even look up; but at the question, his head sank on his breast, and his limbs shook all over as with palsy. Then he fell into a sudden fit of grief, wringing his hands and uttering feeble cries of woe.

We soothed him and used him gently for a time, hoping he might speak at last; but to no purpose, for he still kept silent. Then at last growing impatient, and thinking that this might be a mere headstrong humor, we drew our swords, and threatened him with instant death if he did not at once tell us all he knew of the chief and his hounds — for we felt sure he had seen them. But he only lamented the more, and still answered nothing.

At last, after this had gone on for some time, and when we were about to leave him, he beckoned to Kylta MacRonan; and when Kylta had come near, the old man whispered into his ear the dreadful secret. And then we all came to know the truth. When we found that the withered old man was no other than our beloved king, Fin, himself, we uttered three shouts of lamentation and anger, so loud and prolonged that the foxes and badgers rushed affrighted from their dens in the hollows of the mountain.

Conan now stepped forward, looking very fierce; and, unsheathing his sword with mighty bluster, he began in a loud voice to revile Fin and the Feni with the foulest language he could think of. And he ended by saying that he meant to slay the king that moment —



## IRELAND

"Now, O Fin MacCumhail, I will certainly strike off your head; for you are the man that never gave me credit for valor, or praised my noble deeds in battle. Ever since your father, Cumhail of the Hosts, was slain on the field of Knocka by the clan Morna of the Golden Shields, you have been our bitter foe; and it is against your will that any of us are now alive. I am very glad to see you, Fin MacCumhail, brought down to what you now are; and I only wish that the rest of the clan Baskin were like you. Then should I very soon make short work of them all; and joyful to me would be the task of raising a great cairn to their memory!"

To which Osgar replied with great scorn, "It is not worth while drawing a sword to punish thee, Conan Maol, vain and foolish boaster as thou art; and besides, we have at present something else to think of. But if it were not for the trouble that now lies heavy on us on account of our king, I would of a certainty chastise thee by breaking all the bones of thy mouth with my fist!"

"Cease, Osgar," returned Conan, in a voice still louder than before; "cease your foolish talk! It is actions and not words that prove a man; and as to the noble warlike deeds done in past times by the Feni, it was by the clan Morna they were performed, and not by the chicken-hearted clan Baskin!"

The fiery Osgar could bear this no longer. He rushed towards Conan Maol; but Conan, terrified at his vengeful look, ran in amongst the Feni with great outcry, beseeching them to save him from the rage of Osgar. We straightway confronted the young hero, and checked him in his headlong career; and after much ado, we soothed his anger and made peace between him and Conan.



## THE CHASE OF SLIEVE CULLINN

When quietness was restored, Kylta asked Fin how this dread evil had befallen him, who was the enchanter, and whether there was any hope of restoring him to his own shape. Fin told him that it was the daughter of Culand the smith who had transformed him by her spells. And then he recounted how she had lured him to swim in the lake, and how, when he came forth, he was turned into a withered old man.

We now made a framework litter of slender poles, and, placing our king on it, we lifted him tenderly on our shoulders. And, turning from the lake, we marched slowly uphill, till we came to the fairy palace of Slieve Cullinn, where we knew the daughter of Culand had her dwelling deep under ground. Here we set him down, and the whole troop began at once to dig, determined to find the enchantress in her cave-palace, and to take vengeance on her if she did not restore our chief.

For three days and three nights we dug, without a moment's rest or pause, till at length we reached her hollow dwelling; when she, affrighted at the tumult and at the vengeful look of the heroes, suddenly started forth from the cave and stood before us. She held in her hand a drinking-horn of red gold, which was meant for the king. Yet she appeared unwilling, and held it back notwithstanding the threatening looks of the Feni. But happening to cast her eyes on the graceful and manly youth, Osgar, she was moved with such admiration and love for him that she wavered no longer, but placed the fairy drinking-horn in the hands of the king. No sooner had he drunk from it, than his own shape and features returned, save only that his hair remained of a silvery gray.

## IRELAND

When we gazed on our chief in his own graceful and manly form, we were all pleased with the soft, silvery hue of the gray hairs. And, though the enchantress appeared ready to restore this also, Fin himself told her that it pleased him as it pleased others, and that he chose to remain gray for the rest of his life.

When the king had drunk from the horn, he passed it to MacReth, who drank from it in like manner and gave it to Dering. Dering, after drinking, was about to hand it to the rest, when it gave a sudden twist out of his hand, and darted into the loose earth at our feet, where it sank out of sight. We ran at once to recover it; but, though we turned up the earth deeply all round, we were not able to find the drinking-horn. This was a disappointment that vexed us exceedingly, for if we had all drunk from it, we should have been gifted with a foreknowledge of future events.

A growth of slender twigs grew up afterwards over the spot where it sank into the ground. And this little thicket is still gifted with a part of the virtue of the golden drinking-horn; for any one who looks on it in the morning fasting, will know in a moment all things that are to happen that day.

So ended the Chase of Slieve Cullinn; and in this wise it came to pass that Fin's hair was turned in one day from golden yellow to silvery gray.

## THE STORY OF ST. PATRICK

[Fifth century]

BY PATRICK WESTON JOYCE

WHEN Patrick was a boy of sixteen, he was, as we are told by himself in his writings, taken captive and brought to Ireland. This was about the year 403. He was sold as a slave to a certain rich man named Milcho, who employed him to herd sheep and swine on the slopes of Slemish mountain in the present County Antrim. Here he spent six years of his life. If he felt at first heartbroken and miserably lonely, as no doubt he did, he soon recovered himself, and made nothing of the hardships he endured on the bleak hillside; for in his solitude his mind was turned to God, and every spare moment was given up to devotions. He tells us in his own earnest and beautiful words: "I was daily employed tending flocks; and I prayed frequently during the day, and the love of God was more and more enkindled in my heart, my fear and faith were increased, and my spirit was stirred; so much so that in a single day I poured out my prayers a hundred times, and nearly as often in the night. Nay, even in the woods and mountains I remained, and rose before the dawn to my prayer, in frost and snow and rain; neither did I suffer any injury from it, nor did I yield to any slothfulness, such I now experience; for the spirit of the Lord was fervent within me." But he stood alone in the little world of light and holiness; for his master was a pagan; and though the people

## IRELAND

he mixed with were bright and lovable, they too were all pagans, grossly superstitious, but beyond that, with little idea of religion of any kind.

At the end of six years of slavery Patrick escaped and made his way through many hardships and dangers to his home and family. During his residence in Ireland he had become familiar with the language of the people; and the memory of the pagan darkness in which they lived haunted him day and night, so that he formed the resolution to devote his life to their conversion. His steadfast will was shown even at this early period by the manner in which he set about preparing himself for his noble work. He first studied with great diligence for about four years in the great monastic school of St. Martin of Tours; and subsequently under St. Germain of Auxerre for about the same length of time; after which he continued his preparations in an island near the Italian coast, and elsewhere, till he was ready to begin his mission. During all this time his thoughts were ever turning lovingly to Ireland; and he had dreams and visions about it. Once he dreamed, as he tells us, that a man from Ireland came to him and gave him a letter, which began with the words, "The Voice of the Irish." "Whilst I was reading the letter," he goes on to say, "I imagined at the moment that I heard the voices of many, who were near the wood of Foclut which is beside the Western Ocean: crying out as if with one voice, 'We entreat thee, O holy youth, to come and still walk amongst us.' And I was exceedingly afflicted in my heart and could read no more, but quickly awoke."

Having received authority and benediction from Pope Celestine, he set out for Ireland. On his way through

## THE STORY OF ST. PATRICK

Gaul news came of the death of Palladius; and as this left Ireland without a bishop, Patrick was consecrated bishop in Gaul by a certain holy prelate named Amator. Embarking for Ireland, he landed on the Wicklow coast; but having been expelled, like his predecessor, he sailed northwards, and finally disembarked with his companions at Lecale in the present County Down. Dicho, the chief of the district, thinking they were pirates, hastily armed his followers and sallied forth to expel them: but when they appeared in view, he was so struck by their calm and dignified demeanor, that instead of attacking, he saluted them respectfully and invited them to his house. Here Patrick announced his mission and explained his doctrine; and Dicho and his whole family became Christians and were baptized, the first of the Irish converted by St. Patrick. As there was no church, the chief presented him with a sabhall or barn for divine service, on the site of which a monastery was subsequently erected in honor of the saint, which for many ages was held in great veneration. And the memory of the happy event is preserved to this day in the name of the little village of Saul, near Downpatrick. He remained in this neighborhood for some time; and the people, following the example of the chief, listened to his preaching, and were baptized in great numbers.

St. Patrick adopted, from the very beginning, a bold and courageous plan of preaching the Gospel in Ireland: he always made straight for the palaces and other great houses, and began by attempting to convert the kings and chiefs. He was well aware of the veneration of the clansmen for their ruling families; and he knew that once the king had become a Christian the people would

## IRELAND

soon follow. He had experienced the success of this plan in Saul; and now he came to the bold resolution to go to Tara and present himself before King Laegaire and his court. Bidding farewell to his friend Dicho, he sailed southward to the mouth of the Boyne; whence he set out on foot for Tara with his companions. Soon after leaving the boat, night fell on them; and they were hospitably entertained at the house of a chief, whom the saint converted, with his whole family. One of the children, a youth to whom Patrick gave the name of Benen or Benignus from his gentle disposition, became so attached to him that he insisted on going along with him next morning. Thenceforward Benen was Patrick's constant companion and beloved disciple; and after the death of his master he succeeded him as Archbishop of Armagh.

The saint and his little company arrived at the hill of Slane on Easter Eve, A.D. 433. Here he prepared to celebrate the festival; and towards nightfall, as was then the custom, he lighted the Paschal fire on the top of the hill. It so happened that at this very time the king and his nobles were celebrating a festival of some kind at Tara; and the attendants were about to light a great fire on the hill, which was part of the ceremonial. Now there was a law that while this fire was burning no other should be kindled in the country all round on pain of death; and accordingly, when the king and his courtiers saw the fire ablaze on the hill of Slane, nine miles off, they were much astonished at such an open violation of the law. The monarch instantly called his druids and questioned them about it; and they said: "If that fire which we now see be not extinguished to-night, it will



## THE STORY OF ST. PATRICK

never be extinguished, but will overtop all our fires: and he that has kindled it will overturn thy kingdom.” Whereupon the king, in great wrath, instantly set out in his chariot with a small retinue, nine chariots in all; and having arrived near Slane, he summoned the strangers to his presence. He had commanded that none should rise up to show them respect; but when they presented themselves, one of the courtiers, Erc, the son of Dego, struck with the saint’s commanding appearance, rose from his seat and saluted him. This Erc was converted, and became afterwards Bishop of Slane; and to this day there is, on the bank of the Boyne near Slane, a little ruined oratory called from him St. Erc’s Hermitage. The result of this interview was what St. Patrick most earnestly desired: he was directed to appear next day at Tara and give an account of his proceedings before the assembled court. On the summit of the hill of Slane, at the spot where Patrick lighted his Paschal fire, there are still the ruins of a monastery erected in commemoration of the event.

The next day was Easter Sunday. Early in the morning Patrick and his companions set out for the palace, and on their way they chanted a hymn in the native tongue — an invocation for protection against the dangers and treachery by which they were beset; for they had heard that persons were lying in wait to slay them. This noble and beautiful hymn was long held in great veneration by the people of this country, and we still possess copies of it in a very old dialect of the Irish language. In the history of the spread of Christianity, it would be difficult to find a more singular and impressive scene than was presented at the court of King

## IRELAND

Laegaire on that memorable Easter morning. Patrick was robed in white, as were also his companions; he wore his miter, and carried his crosier in his hand; and when he presented himself before the assembly, Dubthach, Laegaire's chief poet, rose to welcome him, contrary to the express commands of the king. The saint, all aflame with zeal and unawed by the presence of king and court, explained to the assembly the leading points of the Christian doctrine, and silenced the king's druids in argument. Dubthach became a convert, and thenceforward devoted his poetical talents to the service of God; and Laegaire gave permission to the strange missionaries to preach their doctrines throughout his dominions. The king himself, however, was not converted; and for the remaining thirty years of his life he remained an unbeliever, while the paganism of the whole country was rapidly going down before the fiery energy of the great missionary.

Patrick next proceeded to Tailltenn where, during the celebration of the national games, he preached for a week to the assembled multitudes, making many converts, among whom was Conall Gulban, brother to King Laegaire, the ancestor of the O'Donnells of Tirconnell. We find him soon afterwards making for the plain where stood the great national idol Crom Cruach with the twelve lesser idols, all of which he destroyed.

About the year 438, with the concurrence of King Laegaire, he undertook the task of revising the Brehon Law. He was aided by eight others, among them King Laegaire himself, and at the end of three years this Committee of Nine produced a new code, free from all pagan customs and ordinances, which was ever after



## THE STORY OF ST. PATRICK

known as "Cain Patrick" or Patrick's Law. This Law Book, which is also called "Senchus Mor," has been lately translated and published.

In his journey through Connaught he met the two daughters of King Laegaire — Ethnea the Fair and Fedelma the Ruddy — near the palace of Croghan, where they lived at that time in fosterage with their two druid tutors. They had come out one morning at sunrise to wash their hands in a certain spring well, as was their custom, and were greatly astonished to find Patrick and his companions at the well with books in their hands, chanting a hymn. Having never seen persons in that garb before, the virgins thought at first that they were beings from the *shee* or fairy hills; but when the first surprise was over they fell into conversation with them, and inquired whence they had come. And Patrick gently replied: "It were better for you to confess to our true God than to inquire concerning our race." They eagerly asked many questions about God, his dwelling-place; — whether in the sea, in rivers, in mountainous places, or in valleys; — how knowledge of him was to be obtained, how he was to be found, seen, and loved, with other inquiries of a like nature. The saint answered all their questions, and explained the leading points of the faith; and the virgins were immediately baptized and consecrated to the service of religion.

On the approach of Lent he retired to the mountain which has ever since borne his name — Croagh Patrick or Patrick's hill — where he spent some time in fasting and prayer. About this time, A.D. 449, the seven sons of Amalgaid, King of Connaught, were holding a meeting in Tirawley, to which Patrick repaired. He expounded

## IRELAND

his doctrines to the wondering assembly; and the seven princes with twelve thousand persons were baptized. After spending seven years in Connaught, he visited successively Ulster, Leinster, and Munster, in each of which he preached for several years. Soon after entering Leinster, he converted, at the palace beside Naas, where the Leinster kings then resided, the two princes Illann and Olioll, sons of King Dunlang, who both afterwards succeeded to the throne of their father. And at Cashel, the seat of the Kings of Munster, he was met by the king, Ængus, the son of Natfree, who conducted him into the palace on the rock with the greatest reverence, and was at once baptized.

Wherever St. Patrick went he founded churches, and left them in charge of his disciples. In his various journeys, he encountered many dangers and met with numerous temporary repulses; but his courage and resolution never wavered, and success attended his efforts in almost every part of his wonderful career. He founded the see of Armagh about the year 455, and made it the head see of all Ireland. The greater part of the country was now filled with Christians and with churches; and the mission of the venerable apostle was drawing to a close. "He was seized with his death-illness in Saul, the scene of his first triumph; and he breathed his last, on the 17th of March, in or about the year 465, in the seventy-eighth year of his age."

The news of his death was the signal for universal mourning. From the remotest districts of the island, clergy and laity turned their steps towards the little village of Saul, to pay the last tribute of love and respect to their great master. They celebrated the obsequies for

## THE STORY OF ST. PATRICK

twelve days and nights without interruption, joining in the ceremonies as they arrived in succession; and in the language of one of his biographers, the blaze of myriads of torches made the whole time appear like one continuous day. He was buried with great solemnity at Dun-da-lethglas, the old residence of the princes of Ulidia; and the name, in the altered form of Downpatrick, commemorates to all time the saint's place of interment.

## THE "ISLAND OF SAINTS AND SCHOLARS"

[Seventh and eighth centuries]

BY PATRICK WESTON JOYCE

IN ancient Ireland, religion and education went hand in hand, so that in tracing their history it is impossible to separate them. By far the greatest part of the education of the country was carried on by, or under the direction of, priests and monks, who always combined religious with secular teaching.

From the middle of the sixth century, schools rapidly arose all over the country, most of them in connection with monasteries. Some had very large numbers of students; for instance we are told that there were three thousand under St. Finnen at Clonard; and some other schools, such as Bangor, had as many. A few of the students resided in the college, such as sons of kings and chiefs, and those who were literary foster children of the professors; but the most usual arrangement was that each student lived in a little hut of wood and sods, built by himself; or perhaps two or more joined and built a more commodious house for common use. Whole streets of these little houses surrounded the monastery; the huts of the scholars of St. Movi of Glasnevin, near Dublin, extended along the banks of the river Tolka near the present bridge. At stated times the students came forth in crowds to hear the lectures of the professors, which were often given in the open air.

In all the more important schools there were students

## THE ISLAND OF SAINTS AND SCHOLARS

from foreign lands. The majority were from Great Britain, from which they came in *fleetloads*, as Aldhelm, an English bishop of the year 705, expresses it. Numbers also came from the Continent, among whom were some princes: Aldfrid, King of Northumbria, and Dagobert II, King of France, both, when in exile in the seventh century, found an asylum and were educated in Ireland: and others of like rank might be named. We get some idea of the numbers of foreigners from the words of Ængus the Culdee, an Irish writer of the ninth century, who mentions by name many of the Romans, Gauls, Germans, Britons, and even Egyptians, all of whom died in Ireland. Venerable Bede, describing the ravages of the yellow plague in 664, says: "This pestilence did no less harm in the island of Ireland. Many of the nobility and of the lower ranks of the English nation were there at that time: and some of them devoted themselves to a monastic life: others chose to apply themselves to study. The Scots willingly received them all, and took care to supply them with food, as also to furnish them with books to read, and their teaching, all gratis."

In the course of three or four centuries from the time of St. Patrick, Ireland became the most learned country in Europe: and it came to be known by the name now so familiar to us — *Insula sanctorum et doctorum*, the island of saints and scholars.

In these great seminaries all branches of knowledge then known were taught: they were, in fact, the models of our present universities; and besides those persons preparing for a religious life, great numbers of young men, both native and foreign, the sons of kings, chiefs,

## IRELAND

and others, attended them to get a good general education. Laymen who distinguished themselves as scholars were often employed as professors in the monastic schools. One of the most eminent of the professors in the college of Monasterboice was "Flann of the Monastery," a layman of the eleventh century, several of whose poems, as well as his Book of Annals, are preserved. But some few schools were purely lay and professional, — for law, medicine, poetry, or literature; and these were taught generally by laymen.

At these colleges, whether clerical or lay, they had various degrees, as there are in modern universities. The highest was that of "ollave," or "doctor"; and there were ollaves of the several professions; so that a man might be an ollave poet, an ollave historian, an ollave builder, etc.; just as we have now doctors of law, medicine, literature, and music. The full course for an ollave was twelve years: the lower degrees had shorter periods. Men of learning were held in great estimation and much honored. They had many valuable allowances and privileges: and an ollave sat at table next to the king or chief.

Great numbers of Irishmen went to teach and to preach the Gospel in Great Britain, Wales, and Scotland. The Picts of Scotland, who then occupied the greatest part of the country, were converted by St. Columba and his monks from Iona; and the whole western coasts of England and Wales abound in memorials of Irish missionaries. The monastery of Lindisfarne, in Northumbria, which became so illustrious in after ages, was founded in 634 by Aidan, an Irish monk from Iona; and for thirty years after its foundation it

## THE ISLAND OF SAINTS AND SCHOLARS

was governed by him and by two other Irish bishops, Finan and Colman, in succession. So we see that Mr. Lecky had good reason for his statement that "England owed a great part of her Christianity to Irish monks who labored among her people before the arrival of Augustine."

Whole crowds of ardent and learned Irishmen traveled to the Continent, spreading Christianity and general knowledge among people ten times more rude and dangerous in those ages than the inhabitants of these islands. "What," says Eric, a well-known French writer of the ninth century, — "what shall I say of Ireland, who, despising the dangers of the deep, is migrating with almost her whole train of philosophers to our coasts?" Irish professors and teachers were in those times held in such estimation that they were employed in most of the schools and colleges of Great Britain and the Continent. And Irish teachers of music were quite as eminent and as much sought after as those of literature and philosophy. We know that Charlemagne, who was crowned Emperor of the West, A.D. 800, held the learned men from Ireland in great respect, and often invited them as guests to his table; and half a century later, Johannes Scotus Erigena, i.e., John the Irish Scot, the greatest scholar of his day, was on terms of affectionate intimacy with Charles the Bald, King of France. To this day, in many towns of France, Germany, Switzerland, and Italy, Irishmen are venerated as patron saints. Nay, they found their way even to Iceland, for we have the best authority for the statement that when the Norwegians first arrived at that island, they found there Irish books, bells, crosiers, and other traces of Irish missionaries.



## IRELAND

For four or five hundred years after the time of St. Patrick, the monasteries were unmolested; and learning was cultivated within their walls. In the ninth and tenth and the beginning of the eleventh century, science and art, the Gaelic language, and learning of every kind, were brought to their highest state of perfection. But a change for the worse had set in. The Danish inroads broke up most of the schools and threw everything into disorder. Then the monasteries were no longer the quiet and safe asylums they had been, — they became, indeed, rather more dangerous than other places, so much did the Danes hate them, — and learning and art gradually declined in Ireland. There was a revival in the time of Brian Boru; but this, too, was arrested by the troubles of the Anglo-Norman Invasion.



O'ROURKE'S TOWER AND GREAT CROSS,  
CLONMACNOISE

## O'ROURKE'S TOWER AND GREAT CROSS, CLONMACNOISE

MANY different theories have been advanced to account for the famous Round Towers that are scattered through Ireland, but the generally accepted explanation is that they were built during the ninth and tenth centuries as places of refuge from marauding bands of viking pirates.

The one shown in the illustration is known as O'Rourke's Tower and is thought to have been built early in the tenth century. It has lost its roof, but is even now sixty-two feet high, the walls being nearly four feet thick. It was finely located as a watch-tower, for it commanded long stretches of the river in both directions, and also an ancient causeway that led across the bog on the Connaught side. As has been said, "It was large and roomy enough to contain all the officiating priests of Clonmacnoise, with their pyxes, vestments, and books, and though the pagan Dane or the wild Munsterman might rush on in rapid inroad, yet the solitary watcher on the tower was ready to give warning, and collect within the protecting pillar all holy men and things until the tyranny was overpast."

- The Great Cross is made of a single stone. On it are the following inscriptions: —

"A prayer for Flam, son of Maelsechlainn"

and,

"A prayer for Colman, who made this Cross on the King Flam"

There are also sculptures. In one of them, St. Kieran stands with a hammer in one hand and a mallet in the other, to indicate that he was the founder of Clonmacnoise. Other sculptures represent scenes in the Passion of our Saviour.





## THE BOOK OF KELLS

[Seventh century]

BY CHARLES JOHNSTON AND CARITA SPENCER

IN the beginning, it was almost impossible to get a sufficient supply of books for the new monasteries, as the copying of manuscripts was a slow matter. Such Continental monasteries as those founded by Columbanus at Luxeuil, Fontaines, and Bobbio got their supply of books from the Irish schools, and up to the tenth century it was the custom of the Irish teachers to carry books from their island home to their schools on the Continent. There are numerous instances of donations of manuscripts made by Irish scholars to foreign schools. Thus, in 823, a learned Irishman gave a number of books to the monastery of Bobbio. Two of these may still be seen in the Ambrosian Library at Milan. Not long after, in 841, Marcus, an Irish bishop, who was returning with his nephew from a pilgrimage to Rome, visited the monastery of St. Gall, in Switzerland. He was so charmed with the view that he remained there for the rest of his life, and, out of gratitude for the hospitality he received, willed his books to the monastery.

As all books at this time were written by hand, penmanship was one of the most cultivated arts, and was carried to a wonderful degree of perfection. The scribes, who were generally, but not invariably, monks, were held in great respect by the people. The Irish books were not only finely written, but also ornamented in a

## IRELAND

fashion which was early perfected in Ireland. First the initial letters were made larger, more elaborate, and more beautiful. Then they were surrounded with dots of color, and finally with delicately interlaced scroll-work, which was sometimes continued along the margin of the page. Decorated head-pieces and tail-pieces were added, in which leaves, the figures of animals and serpents, and sometimes even portraits of saints, were mingled with the interlaced scroll-work. Many colors were used. Red, green, pink, blue, and yellow, for instance, are employed in the illumination of the Book of Kells. So well were these colors made that after twelve centuries they have lost none of their original brilliancy. The Book of Kells was finished before the end of the seventh century, and is, without doubt, the most perfect and most beautiful manuscript in the world. It is a Latin manuscript of the Gospels. The Book of Armagh, finished in 807, contains the Confession of St. Patrick, the Epistle to Coroticus, and a Life of the apostle of Ireland. The Book of Durrow, written about the same time as the Book of Kells, and the Book of MacDurnan, written shortly after the Book of Armagh, show the same admirable workmanship.

## HOW BRIAN BORU HELD THE FORD OF TRIBUTE

[941]

BY E. S. BROOKS

INTO that picturesque and legend-filled section of Ireland now known as the County Clare, where over rocks and boulders the Shannon, "noblest of Irish rivers," rushes down past Killaloe and Castle Connell to Limerick and the sea, there rode one fair summer morning, many, many years ago, a young Irish lad. The skirt of his parti-colored *lenn*, or kilt, was richly embroidered and fringed with gold; his *inar*, or jacket, close-fitting and silver-trimmed, was open at the throat, displaying the embroidered *lenn* and the *torc*, or twisted collar of gold about his sturdy neck, while a purple scarf held the jacket at the waist. A gleaming golden brooch secured the long plaid *brat*, or shawl, that dropped from his left shoulder; broad bracelets encircled his bare and curiously tattooed arms, and from an odd-looking golden spiral at the back of his head his thick and dark-red hair fell in flowing ringlets upon his broad shoulders. Rawhide shoes covered his feet, and his bronze shield and short war-axe hung conveniently from his saddle of skins. A strong guard of pikemen and gallowglasses, or heavy-armed footmen, followed at his pony's heels, and seemed an escort worthy a king's son.

A strong-limbed, cleanly built lad of fifteen was this sturdy young horseman, who now rode down to the Ath

## IRELAND

na Borumma, or Ford of Tribute, just above the rapids of the Shannon, near the town of Killaloe. And as he reined in his pony, he turned and bade his herald, Cogoran, sound the trumpet-blast that should announce to the clan of Cas the return, from his years of fosterage, of the young *flaith*, or chieftain, Brian, the son of Kennedy, King of Thomond.

But ere the strong-lunged Cogoran could wind his horn, the hearts of all the company grew numb with fear as across the water the low, clear strains of a warning-song sounded from the haunted gray stone, — the mystic rock of Carrick-lee, that overhung the tumbling rapids: —

“Never yet for fear or foe,  
By the ford of Killaloe,  
Stooped the crests of heroes free —  
Sons of Cas by Carrick-lee.

“Falls the arm that smites the foe,  
By the ford of Killaloe;  
Chilled the heart that boundeth free,  
By the rock of Carrick-lee.

“He who knows not fear of foe,  
Fears the ford of Killaloe;  
Fears the voice that chants his dree,  
From the rock of Carrick-lee.”

Young Brian was full of the superstition of his day, — superstition that even yet lives amid the simple peasantry of Ireland, and peoples rocks and woods and streams with good and evil spirits, fairies, sprites, and banshees; and no real, native Irish lad could fail to tremble before the mysterious song. Sorely troubled, he turned to Cogoran inquiringly, and that faithful retainer said in a rather shaky voice: —



## HOW BRIAN BORU HELD THE FORD

"'T is your warning-song, O noble young chief! 'T is the voice of the banshee of our clan — *A-oib-hinn*, the wraith of Carrick-lee."

Just then from behind the haunted gray rock a fair young girl appeared, tripping lightly across the large stepping-stones that furnished the only means of crossing the ford of Killaloe.

"See — see!" said Cogoran, grasping his young lord's arm; "she comes for thee. 'T is thy doom, O Master, — the fiend of Carrick-lee!"

"So fair a fiend should bring me naught of grief," said young Brian, stoutly enough, though it must be confessed his heart beat fast and loud. "O Spirit of the Waters!" he exclaimed; "O banshee of Clan Cas! why thus early in his life dost thou come to summon the son of Kennedy the king?"

The young girl turned startled eyes upon the group of armed and warlike men, and grasping the skirt of her white and purple *lenn*, turned as if to flee, — when Cogoran, with a loud laugh, cried out: —

"Now, fool and double fool am I, — fit brother to Sitric the blind, the black King of Dublin! Why, 't is no banshee, O noble young chief, 't is but thy foster-sister, Eimer, the daughter of Conor, Eimer the golden-haired!"

"Nay, is it so? St. Senanus be praised!" said Brian, greatly relieved. "Cross to us, maiden, cross to us," he said. "Fear nothing; 't is but Brian, thy foster-brother, returning to his father's home."

The girl swiftly crossed the ford and bowed her golden head in a vassal's welcome to the young lord.

"Welcome home, O brother," she said. "Even now,

## IRELAND

my lord, thy father awaits the sound of thy horn as he sits in the great seat beneath his kingly shield. And I —”

“And thou, maiden,” said Brian gayly, “thou must needs lurk behind the haunted rock of Carrick-lee, to freeze the heart of young Brian at his home-coming, with thy banshee song.”

Eimer of the golden hair laughed a ringing laugh. “Say’st thou so, brother?” she said. “Does the ‘Scourge of the Danes’ shrink thus at a maiden’s voice?”

“Who calls me the ‘Scourge of the Danes’?” asked Brian.

“So across the border do they say that the maidens of King Callaghan’s court call the boy Brian, the son of Kennedy,” the girl made answer.

“Who faces the Danes, my sister, faces no tender foe,” said Brian, “and the court of the King of Cashel is no ladies’ hall in these hard-striking times. But wind thy horn, Cogoran, and cross we the ford to greet the king, my father.”

Loud and clear the herald’s call rose above the rush of the rapids, and as the boy and his followers crossed the ford, the gates of the palace, or *dun*, of King Kennedy of Thomond were flung open, and the band of welcomers, headed by Mahon, Brian’s eldest brother, rode out to greet the lad.

Nine hundred years ago the tribe of Cas was one of the most powerful of the many Irish clans. The whole of Thomond, or North Munster, was under their sway, and from them, say the old records, “it was never lawful to levy rent, or tribute, or pledge, or hostage, or fostership

## HOW BRIAN BORU HELD THE FORD

fees," so strong and free were they. When the clans of Munster gathered for battle, it was the right of the clan of Cas to lead in the attack, and to guard the rear when returning from any invasion. It gave kings to the throne of Munster, and valiant leaders in warfare with the Danes, who, in the tenth century, poured their hosts into Ireland, conquering and destroying. In the year 948, in which our sketch opens, the head of this powerful clan was Cennedigh, or Kennedy, King of Thomond. His son Brian had, in accordance with an old Irish custom, passed his boyhood in "fosterage" at the court of Callaghan, King of Cashel, in East Munster. Brought up amid warlike scenes, where battles with the Danish invaders were of frequent occurrence, young Brian had now, at fifteen, completed the years of his fostership, and was a lad of strong and dauntless courage, cool and clear-headed, and a firm foe of Ireland's scourge — the fierce "Dub-Gaile," or "Black Gentiles," as the Danes were called.

The feast of welcome was over, the bards had sung their heroic songs to the accompaniment of the *cruot*, or harp; the fool had played his pranks, and the juggler his tricks, and the chief bard, who was expected to be familiar with "more than seven times fifty stories, great and small," had given the best from his list; and as they sat thus in the *cuirmtrech*, or great hall, of the long, low-roofed house of hewn oak that scarcely rose above the stout earthen ramparts that defended it, swift messengers came bearing news of a great gathering of Danes for the ravaging of Munster, and the especial plundering of the clan of Cas.

"Thou hast come in right fitting time, O son!" said

## IRELAND

Kennedy the king. "Here is need of strong arms and stout hearts. How say ye, noble lords and worthy chieftains? Dare we face in fight this so great a host?"

But as chiefs and counselors were discussing the king's question, advising fight or flight as they deemed wisest, young Brian sprung into the assembly, war-axe in hand.

"What, fathers of Clan Cas," he cried, all aflame with excitement, "will ye stoop to parley with hard-hearted pirates — ye, who never brooked injustice or tyranny from any king of all the kings of Erin — ye, who never yielded even the leveret of a hare in tribute to Leinsterman or Dane? 'Tis for the clan of Cas to demand tribute — not to pay it! Summon our vassals to war. Place me, O King, my father, here at the Ford of the Tribute and bid me make test of the lessons of my fostership. Know ye not how the boy champion, Cuchullin of Ulster, held the ford for five long days against all the hosts of Connaught? What boy hath done, boy may do. Death can come but once!"

The lad's impetuous words fired the whole assembly, the gillies and retainers caught up the cry, and, with the wild enthusiasm that has marked the quick-hearted Irishman from Brian's day to this, "they all," so says the record, "kissed the ground and gave a terrible shout." Beacon fires blazed from cairn and hill-top, and from "the four points" — from north and south and east and west, came the men of Thomond rallying around their chieftains on the banks of Shannon.

With terrible ferocity the Danish hests fell upon Ireland. From Dublin to Cork the coast swarmed with

## HOW BRIAN BORU HELD THE FORD

swordsmen. Across the fair fields of Meath and Tipperary, "the smooth-plained grassy land of Erin," from Shannon to the sea, the kings and chieftains of Ireland gathered to withstand the shock of the invaders. Their chief blow was struck at "Broccan's Brake" in the County Meath, and "on that field," says the old Irish record, "fell the kings and chieftains, the heirs to the crown, and the royal princes of Erin." There fell Kennedy the king and two of his stalwart sons. But at the Ford of Tribute, Brian, the boy chieftain, kept his post and hurled back again and again the Danes of Limerick as they swarmed up the valley of the Shannon to support their countrymen on the plains of Meath.

The haunted gray stone of Carrick-lee, from which Brian had heard the song of the supposed banshee, rose sharp and bold above the rushing waters; and against it and around it Brian and his followers stood at bay, battling against the Danish hosts, "Ill-luck was it for the foreigner," says the record, "when that youth was born — Brian, the son of Kennedy." In the very midst of the stubborn fight at the ford, and around from a jutting point of the rock of Carrick-lee, a light shallop came speeding down the rapids. In the prow stood a female figure, all in white, from the gleaming golden *lann*, or crescent, that held her flowing veil, to the hem of her gracefully falling robe. And above the din of the strife a clear voice sang: —

"First to face the foreign foe,  
First to strike the battle blow;  
Last to turn from triumph back,  
Last to leave the battle's wrack;  
Clan of Cas shall victors be  
When they fight at Carrick-lee."

## IRELAND

It was, of course, only brave young Eimer of the golden hair bringing fresh arms in her shallop to Brian and his fighting-men; but as the sun, bursting through the clouds, flashed full upon the shining war-axe which she held aloft, the superstitious Danes saw in the floating figure the "White Lady of the Rapids," the banshee, *A-oib-hinn*, the fairy guardian of the clan of Cas. Believing, therefore, that they could not prevail against her powerful aid, they turned and fled in dismay from the flowing river and the haunted rock.

But fast upon young Brian's victory came the tearful news of the battle of Broccan's Brake and the defeat of the Irish kings. Of all the brave lad's family only his eldest brother Mahon escaped from that fatal field; and now he reigned in place of Kennedy, his father, as King of Thomond. But the victorious Danes overran all southern Ireland, and the brothers Mahon and Brian found that they could not successfully face in open field the hosts of their invaders. So these two "stout, able, valiant pillars," these two "fierce, lacerating, magnificent heroes," as the brothers are called in the curious and wordy old Irish record, left their mud-walled fortress-palace by the Shannon, and with "all their people and all their chattels" went deep into the forests of Cratloe and the rocky fastnesses of the County Clare; and there they lived the life of robber chieftains, harassing and plundering the Danes of Limerick and their recreant Irish allies, and guarding against frequent surprise and attack. But so hazardous and unsettled a life was terribly exhausting, and "at length each party of them became tired of the other," and finally King Mahon made peace with the Danes of Limerick.



## HOW BRIAN BORU HELD THE FORD

But "Brian the brave" would make no truce with a hated foe. "Tell my brother," he said, when messengers brought him word of Mahon's treaty, "that Brian, the son of Kennedy, knows no peace with foreign invaders. Though all others yield and are silent, yet will I never!"

And with this defiance the boy chieftain and "the young champions of the tribe of Cas" went deeper into the woods and fastnesses of the County Clare, and for months kept up a fierce guerrilla warfare. The Danish tyrants knew neither peace nor rest from his swift and sudden attacks. Much booty of "satins and silken cloths, both scarlet and green, pleasing jewels and saddles beautiful and foreign," did they lose to this active young chieftain, and much tribute of cows and hogs and other possessions did he force from them. So dauntless an outlaw did he become that his name struck terror from Galway Bay to the banks of Shannon, and from Lough Derg to the Burren of Clare. "When he inflicted not evil on the foreigners in the day," the quaint old record asserts, "he was sure to do it in the next night; and when he did it not in the night, he was sure to do it in the following day."

One chill April day, as Brian sat alone before the gloomy cave that had given him a winter shelter in the depths of the forests of Clare, his quick ear, well trained in woodcraft, caught the sound of a light step in the thicket. Snatching his ever-ready spear, he stood on guard and demanded: —

"Who is there?"

No answer followed his summons. But as he waited and listened, he heard the notes of a song, low and gentle, as if for his ear alone: —

## IRELAND

“Chieftain of the stainless shield,  
Prince who brooks no tribute fee;  
Ne’er shall he to pagan yield  
Who prevailed at Carrick-lee.  
Rouse thee, arm thee, hark and heed,  
Erin’s strength in Erin’s need.”

“’T is the banshee,” was the youth’s first thought.  
“The guardian of our clan urgeth me to speedier action.”  
And then he called aloud: “Who sings of triumph to  
Brian the heavy-hearted?”

“Be no longer Brian the heavy-hearted; be, as thou  
ever art, Brian the brave!” came the reply, and through  
the parting thicket appeared, not the dreaded vision of  
*A-oib-hinn*, the banshee, but the fair young face of his  
foster-sister, Eimer of the golden hair.

“Better days await thee, Brian, my brother,” she  
said. “Mahon the king bids thee meet him at Holy Isle.  
None dared bring his message for fear of the death-  
dealing Danes who have circled thee with their earth-  
lines. But what dare not I do for so gallant a foster-  
brother?”

With the courtesy that marked the men of even those  
savage times, the boy chieftain knelt and kissed the hem  
of the daring little maiden’s purple robe.

“And what wishes my brother, the king, O Eimer of  
the golden hair?” he said. “Knows he not that Brian  
has sworn never to bend his neck to the foreigner?”

“That does he know right well,” replied the girl.  
“But his only words to me were: ‘Bid Brian my brother  
take heart and keep this tryst with me, and the sons of  
Kennedy may still stand, unfettered, kings of Erin.’”

So Brian kept the tryst; and where, near the southern  
shores of Lough Derg, the Holy Isle still lies all strewn



## HOW BRIAN BORU HELD THE FORD

with the ruins of the seven churches that gave it this name, the outlawed young chieftain met the king. Braving the dangers of Danish capture and death, he had come unattended to meet his brother.

"Where, O Brian, are thy followers?" King Mahon inquired.

"Save the fifteen faithful men that remain to me in the caves of Uim-Bloit," said the lad, "the bones of my followers rest on many a field from the mountains of Connaught to the gates of Limerick; for their chieftain, O my brother, maketh no truce with the foe."

"Thou art but a boy, O Brian, and like a boy thou dost talk," said the king reprovingly. "Thy pride doth make thee imprudent. For what hast thou gained, since, spite of all, thy followers lie dead!"

"Gained!" exclaimed the young chieftain, impetuously, as he faced Mahon the king; "I have gained the right to be called true son of the clan of Cas — of ancestors who would brook no insult, who would pay no tribute fee to invaders, who would give no hostage; and as to my trusty liegemen who have fallen — is it not the inheritance of the clan of Cas to die for their honor and their 'homes?" demanded Brian. "So surely it is no honor in valorous men, my brother, to abandon without battle or conflict their father's inheritance to Danes and traitorous kings!"

The unyielding courage of the lad roused the elder brother to action, and, secretly but swiftly, he gathered the chiefs of the clan for council in the *dun* of King Mahon by the ford of Killaloe. "Freedom for Erin and death to the Danes!" cried they — "as the voice of one man," says the record. Again the warning beacons

## IRELAND

flamed from cairn and hill-top. In the shadow of the "Rock of Cashel," the royal sun-burst, the banner of the ancient kings, was flung to the breeze, and clansmen and vassals and allies rallied beneath its folds to strike one mighty blow for the redemption of Ireland.

In the County of Tipperary, in the midst of what is called "the golden valley," this remarkable "Rock of Cashel" looms up three hundred feet above the surrounding plain, its top, even now, crowned with the ruins of what were in Brian's day palace and chapel, turret and battlement and ancient tower. Beneath the rough archway of the triple ramparts at the foot of the rock, and up the sharp ascent, there rode one day the herald of Ivar, the Danish King of Limerick. Through the gateway of the palace he passed, and striding into the audience-hall, spoke thus to Mahon the king: —

"Hear, now, O king! Ivar, the son of Sitric, King of Limerick and sole Overlord of Munster, doth summon thee, his vassal, to give up to him this fortress of Cashel, to disperse thy followers, to send to him at Limerick, bounden with chains, the body of Brian the outlaw, and to render unto him tribute and hostage."

King Mahon glanced proudly out to where upon the ramparts fluttered the flag of Ireland.

"Say to Ivar, the son of Sitric," he said, "that Mahon, King of Thomond, spurns his summons, and will pay no tribute for his own inheritance."

"And say thou, too," cried his impetuous younger brother, "that Brian, the son of Kennedy, and all the men of the clan of Cas prefer destruction and death rather than submit to the tyranny of pirates and the overlordship of foreigners and Danes!"

## HOW BRIAN BORU HELD THE FORD

"Hear, then, Mahon, King of Thomond; hear thou and all thy clan, the words of Ivar, the son of Sitric," came the stern warning of the Danish herald. "Thus says the king: 'I will gather against thee a greater muster and hosting, and I will so ravage and destroy the clan of Cas that there shall not be left of ye one man to guide a horse's head across a ford, an abbot or a venerable person within the four corners of Munster who shall not be utterly destroyed or brought under subjection to me, Ivar the king!'"

"Tell thy master," said Mahon the king, unmoved by this terrible threat, "that the clan of Cas defy his boastful words, and will show in battle which are lords of Erin."

"And tell thy master," said his brother, "that Brian the outlaw will come to Limerick not bound with chains, but to bind them."

The Danish power was strong and terrible, but the action of the two valiant brothers was swift and their example was inspiring. Clansmen and vassals flocked to their standard, and a great and warlike host gathered in old Cashel. Brian led them to battle, and near a willow forest, close to the present town of Tipperary, the opposing forces met in a battle that lasted "from sunrise to midday." And the sun-burst banner of the ancient kings streamed victorious over a conquered field, and the hosts of the Danes were routed. From Tipperary to Limerick, Brian pursued the flying enemy; and capturing Limerick, took therefrom great stores of booty and many prisoners; and the queer old Irish record thus briefly tells the terrible story of young Brian's vengeance — a story that fittingly shows us the cruel customs of

## IRELAND

those savage days of old, days now fortunately gone forever: "The fort and the good town he reduced to a cloud of smoke, and to red fire afterward. The whole of the captives were collected on the hills of Saingel, and every one that was fit for war was killed, and every one that was fit for a slave was enslaved."

And from the day of Limerick's downfall the star of Ireland brightened, as in battle after battle, Brian Boru,<sup>1</sup> the wise and valiant young chieftain, was hailed as victor and deliverer from sea to sea.

Upon the death of his brother Mahon, in the year 976, Brian became King of Thomond, of Munster, and of Cashel. Then uniting the rival clans and tribes under his sovereign rule, he was crowned at Tara, in the year 1000, "Ard-righ," or "High King of Erin." The reign of this great king of Ireland was peaceful and prosperous. He built churches, fostered learning, made bridges and causeways, and constructed a road around the coast of the whole kingdom. In his palace at Kincora, near the old *dun* of his father, King Kennedy, by the ford of Killoe, he "dispensed a royal hospitality, administered a rigid and impartial justice, and so continued in prosperity for the rest of his reign, having been at his death thirty-eight years King of Munster and fifteen years Sovereign of all Ireland."

So the boy chieftain came to be King of Ireland, and the story of his death is as full of interest and glory as the record of his boyish deeds. For Brian grew to be an old, old man, and the Danes and some of the restless Irishmen whom he had brought under his sway revolted against his rule. So the "grand old man of ninety years"

<sup>1</sup> Brian of the Tribute.

## HOW BRIAN BORU HELD THE FORD

led his armies out from the tree-shaded ramparts of royal Kincora, and meeting the enemy on the plains of Dublin, fought on Friday, April 23, 1014, near the little fishing-station of Clontarf, the “last and most terrible struggle of Northmen and Gael, of Pagan and Christian, on Irish soil.” It was a bloody day for Ireland; but though the aged king and four of his six sons, with eleven thousand of his followers, were slain on that fatal field, the Danes were utterly routed, and the battle of Clontarf freed Ireland forever from their invasions and tyrannies.



II  
SIX CENTURIES OF  
OPPRESSION

## HISTORICAL NOTE

THE Norman barons who invaded Ireland in the twelfth century were only looking for plunder, but soon the discipline of their soldiers and the strong castles they built made them a power in the land. Throughout the thirteenth century Ireland was torn by the incessant struggle of Norman barons and Irish chiefs, but gradually the later comers mingled and intermarried with the natives until they became almost as Irish as the Irish themselves.

The Tudor monarchs reasserted England's authority over Ireland and placed the country under English law. Irish chiefs were evicted from their estates and the land was given to English settlers; Roman Catholics were excluded from all public offices and threatened with fine and imprisonment if they did not attend the Protestant church. The result of these and other tyrannical measures was a series of rebellions that were put down with the greatest cruelty. In 1641, the Irish seized the opportunity of the conflict in England between King and Parliament to take a bloody vengeance for their woes, and thousands of the English settlers were killed or driven from the country. Eight years later Cromwell landed in Ireland with eighteen thousand veteran soldiers, and subdued the country as it had never been subdued before.

Under James II, the Catholics were given a share in the government. As a result, he found warm support in Ireland after he was driven from the English throne by William of Orange. In 1690, King William followed James to Ireland, and by his victory at the Boyne that country was once more subdued. Severe laws were again enacted against Catholics, and the commerce and industry of the unhappy country were deliberately destroyed by a series of laws prohibiting exports and foreign trade. By the end of the eighteenth century the limit of endurance was again reached and another revolt ensued that was put down with difficulty. The only result of this uprising was the suppression of the Parliament at Dublin and the formation of "The United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland."



## THE HOUSE OF THE GERALDINES

BY JUSTIN H. McCARTHY

[By the beginning of the fourteenth century the Normans of England had blended with the English, and the Normans of Ireland had blended with the Irish. England's only real authority in Ireland was over the district about Dublin, known as the "Pale." In the effort to increase this authority and to prevent the Normans and Irish from becoming one race, England passed the "Statute of Kilkenny." By this statute Normans were forbidden to speak the Irish language; and if a Norman followed any Irish custom or even wore the Irish dress, he was to forfeit his lands, and suffer imprisonment. If he ventured to marry an Irishwoman, the statute bade that his property should be forfeited and that he himself should be hanged, cut down, and disemboweled while yet alive. The most powerful of the Norman Irish families were the Geraldines, or Fitzgeralds, of Kildare (East Munster), the Butlers of Ormond (West Munster), and the Burkes of Connaught.

*The Editor.]*

THE story of the House of Geraldine is one of the most romantic in all Irish history. The Geraldines were descended from the two brothers Maurice and William Fitzgerald, who came to Ireland at the heels of Strongbow. Through varying fortunes — at one time the whole house was nearly exterminated by MacCarthy More — they had risen to a proud position of rule in Ireland. They owned all the broad lands from Maynooth to Lixnaw; their followers swarmed everywhere, bearing a "G" on their breast in token that they owed their hearts to the Geraldines.

## IRELAND

After Bosworth battle had placed Henry VII on the throne of Richard of Gloucester, the new king was too busy with his new kingdom to give much thought to Ireland. The English colony was in a bad way there. It was reduced to the County of Dublin and parts of Meath, Louth, and Kildare. The greater part of the island was entirely in the hands of Irish chieftains, who exacted tribute from the English, and scornfully set at naught the continued and meaningless renewals of the Statutes of Kilkenny. Henry at first left Ireland alone. He was ever content to leave the Geraldine control of the country unquestioned, although the Geraldines had been so defiantly Yorkist, and though not a few followers of the house had painted their own white roses red with their own blood on many an English field. They were Yorkist still. When Lambert Simnel came over to Ireland, pretending to be the son of false, fleeing, perjured Clarence, the Geraldines rallied round him with warm support and sympathy. When this image of a king was swept from the throne to the kitchen, Perkin Warbeck took his place, claimed to be the Duke of York whom Gloucester had murdered in the Tower, and he, too, found Geraldine aid and maintenance. Henry had now learned something of the strength of Irish disaffection in the hands of the Irish chiefs, and prepared to crush it out more subtly than by the sword. We have seen what the Irish Parliament was like: a poor thing enough in itself, but at worst containing the principles of a representative system. This system Henry resolved to destroy. Three centuries had passed since the Norman banners had first floated over the Irish fields, and in all that time no attempt had been made to force the

## THE HOUSE OF THE GERALDINES

English laws upon the Irish Septs, or to interfere with the self-government of the Norman settlers. Now, in 1494, Henry sent over Sir Edward Poynings, as Lord Deputy, with an army at his back, to change altogether the relationship between the two islands. Poynings summoned a Parliament at Drogheda, at which the famous measure known as "Poynings's Act" was passed. This act established that all English laws should operate in Ireland, and that the consent of the Privy Council of England was necessary for all acts of the Irish Parliament. These measures at once deprived Ireland of all claim to independent government. Henceforward she was to be the helpless dependent of the conquering country. But the loss of liberty did not destroy the Irish desire for freedom; it rather gave it an additional incentive to action.

Ireland being thus soldered close to England, Henry was content to leave the government of the country in the hands of its most powerful man. "All Ireland," men said, "was not a match for the Earl of Kildare." "Then let the Earl of Kildare govern all Ireland," said Henry VII, and gave the rule of Ireland into his hands. He had been the most potent spirit in Ireland under the old system; to confirm his power under the new seemed to the astute Henry the surest means of securing his allegiance and the quiet dependence of Ireland.

His successor, the Eighth Henry, looked on the Geraldine power with grave jealousy. The control of the island was practically in the hands of the Earls of Kildare and their followers, and was drifting day by day farther from the control and supremacy of England. What use were Statutes of Kilkenny and Poynings's

## IRELAND

Acts if the country was under the command of an Anglo-Irish house who defied the authority of England? His jealousy of the Geraldines was fostered by Wolsey, who was considerably under the influence of the House of Ormonde, bitter enemies of the Geraldines. Gerald, the ninth earl, son of Henry VII's deputy, was summoned to England. He was at once thrown into the Tower, and false news of his execution was sent to Dublin. His son, Lord Thomas Fitzgerald, "Silken Thomas," as he was commonly called by his people, from the splendor of his dress, displayed no silken spirit. He raised at once a desperate revolt against the king, but his forces were shattered by the English artillery, brought thus into Irish warfare for the first time. He and his five uncles were compelled to surrender. They were sent to London, to the Tower, where the Earl of Kildare had died of a broken heart, and they were all hanged at Tyburn. Only one of their kin, a boy of twelve, a son of the Earl of Kildare by his second wife, escaped from the slaughter of his race to Rome, to found again the fortunes of his house.

## THE GERALDINES

BY THOMAS DAVIS

THE Geraldines — the Geraldines! 't is full a thousand  
years  
Since, 'mid the Tuscan vineyards, bright flashed their  
battle-spears;  
When Capet seized the crown of France, their iron  
shields were known  
And their saber-dint struck terror on the banks of the  
Garonne;  
Across the downs of Hastings they spurred hard by  
William's side,  
And the gray sands of Palestine with Moslem blood they  
dyed;  
But never then, nor thence, till now, had falsehood or  
disgrace  
Been seen to soil Fitzgerald's plume, or mantle in his  
face.

The Geraldines — the Geraldines! 't is true in Strong-  
bow's van,  
By lawless force, as conquerors, their Irish reign began;  
And, oh! through many a dark campaign they proved  
their prowess stern,  
In Leinster's plains, and Munster's vales, on king, and  
chief, and kerne;  
But noble was the cheer within the halls so rudely  
won,

## IRELAND

And gen'rous was the steel-gloved hand that had such  
slaughter done;  
How gay their laugh, how proud their mien, you'd ask  
no herald's sign —  
Among a thousand you had known the princely Geraldine.

These Geraldines — these Geraldines! not long our air  
they breath'd; \*  
Not long they fed on venison, in Irish water seethed;  
Not often had their children been by Irish mothers  
nursed,  
When from their full and genial hearts an Irish feeling  
burst!  
The English monarchs strove in vain, by law, by force,  
and bribe,  
To win from Irish thoughts and ways this "more than  
Irish" tribe;  
For still they clung to fosterage, to brehon, cloak, and  
bard;  
What king dare say to Geraldine: "Your Irish wife  
discard?"

Ye Geraldines — ye Geraldines! — how royally ye  
reigned  
O'er Desmond broad, and rich Kildare, and English arts  
disdained;  
Your sword made knights, your banner waved, free was  
your bugle call  
By Glyn's green slopes, and Dingle's tide, from Barrow's  
banks to Youghal.

## THE GERALDINES

What gorgeous shrines, what brehon lore, what minstrel  
feats there were  
In and around Maynooth's gray keep, and palace-filled  
Adare!  
But not for rite or feast ye stay'd, when friend or kin  
were press'd;  
And foemen fled, when "*Crom abá*" bespoke your lance  
in rest.

Ye Geraldines — ye Geraldines! — since Silken Thomas  
flung  
King Henry's sword on council board, the English  
thanes among,  
Ye never ceased to battle brave against the English  
sway,  
Though axe and brand and treachery your proudest cut  
away.  
Of Desmond's blood, through woman's veins passed on  
th' exhausted tide;  
His title lives — a Saxon churl usurps the lion's hide;  
And, though Kildare tower haughtily, there's ruin at  
the root,  
Else why, since Edward fell to earth, had such a tree no  
fruit?

True Geraldine! brave Geraldine! — as torrents mould  
the earth,  
You channeled deep old Ireland's heart by constancy  
and worth;  
When Ginckle 'leaguered Limerick, the Irish soldiers  
gazed



## IRELAND

To see if in the setting sun dead Desmond's banner  
    blazed!  
And still it is the peasant's hope upon the Curragh's  
    mere,  
"They live, who'll see ten thousand men with good Lord  
    Edward here" —  
So let them dream till brighter days, when, not by  
    Edward's shade,  
But by some leader true as he, their lines shall be  
    arrayed!

These Geraldines — these Geraldines! — rain wears  
    away the rock,  
And time may wear away the tribe that stood the  
    battle's shock;  
But ever, sure, while one is left of all that honored race,  
In front of Ireland's chivalry is that Fitzgerald's place.  
And, though the last were dead and gone, how many a  
    field and town,  
From Thomas Court to Abbeyfeale, would cherish their  
    renown,  
And men would say of valor's rise, or ancient power's  
    decline,  
"T will never soar, it never shone, as did the GERALDINE."

The Geraldines — the Geraldines! — and are there any  
    fears  
Within the sons of conquerors for full a thousand years?  
Can treason spring from out a soil bedewed with martyr's blood?



## THE GERALDINES

Or has that grown a purling brook, which long rushed  
down a flood? —

By Desmond swept with sword and fire, — by clan and  
keep laid low, —

By Silken Thomas and his kin, — by Sainted Edward!  
No!

The forms of centuries rise up, and in the Irish line  
Command their son to take the post that fits the  
Geraldine!

## THE VENGEANCE OF CROMWELL

[1649]

BY OLIVER CROMWELL

[AFTER the execution of Charles I, in 1649, Cromwell set out to subdue Ireland. One of the first of his operations was the attack upon Drogheda, or Tredah. The following is part of his own account of what happened after his forces had made their way into the city. The men who were shipped to the Barbadoes were sold as slaves, — a far worse fate than death.

*The Editor.]*

DIVERS of the enemy retreated into the Mill-Mount, a place very strong and of difficult access; being exceedingly high, having a good graft, and strongly palisadoed. The Governor, Sir Arthur Ashton, and divers considerable Officers being there, our men getting up to them, were ordered by me to put them all to the sword. And indeed, being in the heat of action, I forbade them to spare any that were in arms in the Town: and, I think, that night they put to the sword about 2000 men; — divers of the officers and soldiers being fled over the Bridge into the other part of the Town, where about 100 of them possessed St. Peter's Church-steeple, some the west Gate, and others a strong Round Tower next the Gate called St. Sunday's. These being summoned to yield to mercy, refused. Whereupon I ordered the steeple of St. Peter's Church to be fired.

The next day the other two Towers were summoned; in one of which was about six or seven score; but they

## THE VENGEANCE OF CROMWELL

refused to yield themselves; and we, knowing that hunger must compel them, set only good guards to secure them from running away until their stomachs were come down. From one of the said Towers, notwithstanding their condition, they killed and wounded some of our men. When they submitted, their officers were knocked on the head; and every tenth man of the soldiers killed; and the rest shipped for the Barbadoes. The soldiers in the other Tower were all spared, as to their lives only; and shipped likewise for the Barbadoes.

I am persuaded that this is a righteous judgment of God upon these barbarous wretches, who have imbrued their hands in so much innocent blood; and that it will tend to prevent the effusion of blood for the future. Which are the satisfactory grounds to such actions, which otherwise cannot but work remorse and regret. The officers and soldiers of this Garrison were the flower of their Army. And their great expectation was, that our attempting this place would put fair to ruin us; they being confident of the resolution of their men, and the advantage of the place.

## AFTER THE REBELLION OF 1641

[1653]

BY MRS. E. M. FIELD

THIS morning's sun rose very brightly. There was not a cloud in all the sky, and I was very glad, for at all times I love sunshine, and on Sunday it seems only right to see it.

I dressed quickly, and went down into the great hall, singing as I went. The great wolf dogs rose up from where they lay by the fire, — our turf fire that burns almost all the year round, for we love the cheerfulness of it, — and came barking and fawning upon me. Dogs have a wonderful power of sympathy; if one is sad they see it, and are gentle in their demonstrations of affection, but when one is glad they are glad, too, and show it with all their might, as these good beasts did now.

"Ah, Bran! ah, Rory!" I said. "But you must not forget your master! Pierce! where is Pierce, good dogs?"

At the mention of that name the dogs suddenly ceased their delighted capers, turned their eyes from corner to corner of the room, and whined piteously.

"He is not here, dear dogs," I said; "and I know not how we have the heart to be glad when he is hiding, and Cromwell holds the land." But I think it is just because everything has been so dark that I have the heart to be glad now, because sad times always do give place to better in the end, and so I think it must be soon with us. The terrible avenger Cromwell has ravaged to his

## AFTER THE REBELLION OF 1641

heart's content. It was 1649 when he landed; in 1650 our soldiers laid down their arms, and last year of 1652 the Parliament issued an act banishing those who had taken a leading part in Sir Phelim's revolt, and with them, strange companions in misfortune! all the Protestant hierarchy, and dividing their lands among soldiers and others at their pleasure.

My father bore no arms in that rising, because for many years he has been afflicted with partial numbness on one side of his body, making him incapable of warfare, strong man though he is yet.

We have little to fear, I think, therefore, although indeed I think we have as little to hope.

Thus I mused this morning in the great hall until my mother came in, and my father followed her. After them came servants bringing breakfast; as many dishes and as heavy as in the days when the great hall was ever filled with guests and retainers, as I trust it may be again. But many a familiar face will never more be seen here; the King of Spain has a great army of Irish swordsmen now, and France and Poland too are rich in those brave and fearless hearts.

"What! up with the birds, my Ethne?" said my father. "The long day is never long enough for the child." And, as I bent to kiss his hand, he kissed my forehead, and graciously gave me leave to sit down at once. So soon as the meal was finished, the servants brought mantles, and we went down together to the church, which we see from the windows of the great hall, Derrraheen, our island church.

Outside the house is a broad terrace; beyond the terrace long slopes of emerald-green grass, descending to

## IRELAND

the lake that nestles among its wooded shores, and bears on its breast a wooded islet or two. On the right hand a long promontory juts out into the calm waters, and on this the church is built. Blue hills close the view; they might be the end of the world for all I care; nothing is so dear to me as the lake and the woods, and the fertile fields that stretch away left and right where the trees end.

The shore of the lake is a gay scene on Sunday morning, when the little bell rings for mass, and the people come from far and near afoot, or more commonly in their boats. They are amphibious like the beavers, and learn to swim as soon as they learn to run. Rowing, moreover, is very early learned; our flat-bottomed cots are not easily overturned; and even if a youngster should contrive to fall into the water, he can swim like any fish, and his clothing of homespun can easily be wrung out and dried.

Up the lake came the boats as I stood waiting. For oars, the first thing that comes to hand will do — a fire-shovel, a spade, a narrow log for cutting turf, a piece of board. Never were there such people as the Irish for contrivance. My father declares *something* is sure to be ready to hand, and *vogue la galère!*<sup>1</sup>

I watched the crowd assembling — some of the men in the old quilted jerkin, which keeps the body warm at home and defends it in battle; others in the wide and long mantles which cover many deficiencies; some with bare feet; others with thick brogues, and in blue hose, made from beginning to end by their wives, who comb the wool and card it, spin it on their cheerful whirling

<sup>1</sup> Come what may.

## AFTER THE REBELLION OF 1641

wheels, and knit it afterwards into those comfortable garments.

For the women, their gowns were blue, or else scarlet, woven in the village loom. They mostly carried their brogues and stockings; if they came on foot they certainly did so, pausing before they turned the last corner to put them on, and so appear in full dress at the church door. The husbands of the married women carried the brogues for their wives as well as their own, being courteous at heart, though lowly born.

Some of the very well-to-do came on their cars, with the two solid wooden wheels and the flat planking nailed above the axles, — the most elementary vehicle, I suppose, that ever was made. One here and there had a wicker creel attached to it, for use on market days; another would have a rough wooden bench to form a seat for the passengers; a few had bits of wood nailed along to form low sides, a great convenience on weekdays when sand or gravel forms the load.

The women who came by boat sat in easy dignity upon low wooden "creepies" set in the stern of the flat-bottomed cots, while the men-folk rowed or punted with long poles. Some few solitary individuals came along in coracles of wickerwork covered with hide. From far and near they came as they might, none stayed away except those who by very grievous infirmity were compelled. Even old age was not a hindrance, for Terence MacSweeny, stout, sturdy young fellow that he is, carried his old grandmother on his back, — Judy MacSweeny, whose age no one accurately knows, but who had the great honor of being foster-mother to my father, which proud post gives great dignity to the MacSweeny family,



## IRELAND

and was bought by them as I believe for a great number of cows, fifty at the least, contributed by brothers and cousins, all the members of Judy's family, as was the custom of that day.

It was one of those strangely still days which come in early autumn, when nature seems to rest, exhausted like a new-made mother. All she could do has been done — her harvests are golden, her fruit is ripe, her roses have blown, her young birds are strong on the wing. In perfect silence, neither triumphant nor disappointed, she seems to rest awhile.

The first yellow leaves were dropping into the perfectly unruffled lake, like fairy gold thrown to the care of the water sprites. The sun was hot, but the air had a pleasant crisp freshness: commend me to happy September for a truly pleasant day!

Many a kindly greeting passed between us and our people, as my father sat on the chair that is always set for him outside the church door till the hour of nine strikes, and he enters the well-filled house of God.

In their melodious Gaelic the people wished us many more happy Sundays and saints' days, and all other good things in this world and the next. And ever a vein of poetry ran through their greetings.

"I am growing old, Teague; I cannot expect much more sunshine," said my father, to whom Teague Rafferty had wished that many years of such sun as was shining now might be his.

"But if the yellow sunbeams were gone from his lord's head," protested Teague, "the moon of his silver hair had only begun to shine."

At which my father laughed, and said that it was



## AFTER THE REBELLION OF 1641

strange that on *my* head there was no gold. What wish could Teague give to raven-haired Ethne?

“That every hair on her head may be a candle to light her to glory, the pulse of our hearts!” said Teague. And the hour of nine struck, and we went into the chapel, where Father Ambrose stood at the altar and celebrated the mass. Our people’s warm hearts were deeply moved by the sacred rites. They are eager alike in love and in hate; in devotion they are vehement. They sobbed oftentimes and beat their breasts, and tears flowed down many an old and wrinkled face. Not one word of the Latin is understood by them; it seemed to me almost strange that they should be so moved. But as the emotion rose, so it died away when the mass was ended. With the scent of the incense and the sound of the chanting it passed away; and a merry throng they were that streamed out into the sunshine again.

At the corner of the broad terrace in front of the castle windows is a great beech, whose branches spread very widely, and its top shoots far up into the sky. A splendid tree it is, and of great age, and under the shelter of its spreading branches my father’s great oaken arm-chair was set after mass.

Then the people, repairing to their boats and cars, or fetching bundles which they had laid under the trees, brought the offerings due from them as tenants.

A basket of fat, cackling geese from one; from another a tub of rich golden butter; from the poorest, eggs and honeycombs, hares and pigeons, or plump young ducks and chickens. From the better-to-do, a heifer or two, or a few sheep, which were driven up that the Knight of

## IRELAND

Lara might see that they were noble beasts and worthy of his acceptance.

Pigs there were, too, in plenty, the faithful friends of our cottagers, cheaply fed as they are, and easily tended.

"You have brought me a fair offering, friends," said my father, when all was spread before him. "Only Brian Lynch has nothing. How is that?"

Brian Lynch stood with downcast face in the background; he now came forward sadly. Long illness had sorely hindered him, he said. Nevertheless, he had brought some honeycomb, if the knight would be pleased to take so poor an offering. And he would gladly give labor over and above that which was required of him, if only his lord would be pleased to forgive his shortcomings this time.

"Take the honeycomb back to your children, Brian," said my father; "it may well be that they are hungry. And come daily to the castle for a loaf, Brian. Ethne," he added, turning to me, "it may be that you can help Brian Lynch's children with some of the work of your busy needle — is it so?"

I could, and I had promised so to do. Tears rushed to Brian Lynch's eyes; he threw himself on the ground and kissed the hem of my father's mantle, declaring that but for so good and patient a master he could not live, or survive his misfortunes; but now hope filled his heart again, like sunshine that comes back in spring.

"Murtough Fogarty," said my father, when Brian had gone away joyful, "you are hiding yourself in the crowd, and you also have brought me no offering. How is this?"

But when Murtough would have sheltered himself

## AFTER THE REBELLION OF 1641

under the same excuse which had so well profited Brian Lynch, my father shook his head and frowned.

“That is not true in your case, and the excuse will not serve your turn, Murtough. Strong drink is the root of all your misfortunes — that, and idleness. Have I said truly?”

The man, hanging his head, confessed that nothing could ever be concealed from the master, so wise and discerning was he.

“I give you three months’ grace, Murtough,” said the knight sternly. “If at the end of that time you bring me a due offering, well; if not, you and your family must come and serve me without any wage but your food, till all is worked for.”

The sentence was meekly accepted, and the men came again one by one to ask what free labor they should give until Christmas. My father’s harvest had been brought in, each man helping as he could; for our hired servants were but few, and this was customary. Now the turf for the great winter fires in the castle had to be drawn home, and each man was required to give the use of his car and of his own hands for a greater or less number of days, according to his ability. This matter also was settled for each one with due care.

“My friends,” said then my father, “is all just and right?”

“It is all just and right,” they answered. And again he asked, thinking of the changing times —

“Shall I do away with free labor and offerings in kind, and bid you pay me rent as they do in England?”

There was little doubt of the mind of the people, as with one voice they entreated that he would never

## IRELAND

change the old customs. "Spend me, but defend me," has ever been their motto.

"Nor have I any mind to do so. But the times are changing, and the newly come English ever demand their rent," my father answered sadly. And then he desired that all who had any case to bring before him should at once proceed. At this several men stepped forward, for the people will not, if they can help it, — that is, unless summoned to appear, — go before any of the English courts. They come to my father with any dispute, and abide gladly and willingly by his decisions.

"Have you the roll?" my father asked; and a servant brought to him upon a velvet cushion, the ancient roll of the Brehon Law, which for so many and many a long year has been kept in our family, and was formerly expounded by the chief's own brehon in presence of as many of the sept as could gather upon a hill-top above our shining lake.

With much vehemence each side in the first cause argued before my father, the complainant accusing the other of a theft, which was eventually brought home to him; and he was commanded to pay an eric of two pounds ten shillings in English money, or an ox, a fine beast being valued at that sum; to restore besides the valuables which he had taken, certain ancient jewels and ornaments of gold and silver, which had been preserved with almost religious care by the complainant. The sentence was the heavier because the theft had been committed on the Feast of Assumption, a serious aggravation, according to our ancient law, of the offense. In England, so I have heard, they take a man's life for stealing a sheep. Such a law seems horrible to our peo-

## AFTER THE REBELLION OF 1641

ple, especially as the administering of it here has little comfort for them, since here, if the defendant be English, it is ever reckoned answer enough to say that the plaintiff is *a mere Irishman*.

On the next case there was conflict of evidence. That very morning, so the miller of Ardee declared, Lawrence Reilly had crept into his mill and had abstracted a sack of flour. In answer, Lawrence declared that he had not been there, but far away. Could he prove it?

Aye, that he could; he could call witnesses by the score to show that he had been in another place, or in several other places, if the Knight of Lara so desired.

Nor was he one whit abashed when it was pointed out by the laughter that arose that his last answer had not been for his advantage.

My father turned to the miller.

"You say you did not hear the thief?"

The miller had heard no sound. It was strange, for he was certainly in the mill.

My father beckoned to one standing by.

"Take off his brogues."

It was done. A pair of clean and neat blue hose appeared.

"The hose next."

And Lawrence's bare feet showed unmistakable traces of the miller's white dusty floor. Strong evidence truly for the plaintiff.

Great was the triumph of the adversary; great was the respect paid to the wisdom of the Knight of Lara. Lawrence himself, though compelled to pay an eric, seemed as much pleased as anybody. It was a fine story to tell again, and to be sure *some one* must pay the piper.

## IRELAND

“And now,” said my father, having by a wave of the hand dismissed the attendant pleaders, and returned the roll to its cushion, on which it was at once carried into the castle, “we have done a good day’s work; let us have some play. Where is the cake, and Rory the piper?”

Rory, with his pipes under his arm, was to the fore in a moment. Girls in scarlet or blue skirts, with kerchiefs neatly tied over their shoulders, and perhaps another over their hair, or a gay ribbon to tie it, stepped forward readily enough, and the young men no less readily. Mantles were even thrown aside by many of the elders, and the piper’s elbow was soon at work filling his pipes with a will. Meantime Larry Oge came forth from the castle with a pike ten feet long in his hands, carrying high above his head on the point of it a round board, on which was the cake, a right good cake, as I know well, who helped to make it. Round the board was a thick wreath of Michaelmas daisies and red berries, and such field flowers as could still be found, while on pegs at the very edge the rosiest apples of the year were fixed, set close to each other in a bright circle, red cheek to red cheek.

Then, every lad choosing for himself a lass, they danced in a ring round about the cake, which Larry Oge held upright on its pike handle; and a merry scene it was, for Rory piped, and those who stood round encouraged the dancers to do their best for the cake, seeing that the couple that held up longest would win it as a prize. So the mirth grew greater and greater, as one couple and another gave in with faces crimson as the apples, till at last no one was left but Teague O’Ruark, my brother Pierce’s foster-brother, and pretty Nora ny Houlahan, who duly received the cake and the apples.



## AFTER THE REBELLION OF 1641

The cake they cut up, and it vanished wonderfully fast; then Nora threw the apples, and the young men scrambled for them, and each one who was fortunate enough to get an apple presented it to some girl and got in return a kiss *if he could*, but as often as not he only received a clout, which was not an unmixed pleasure, I should imagine, as the arms of these fair ones were strengthened by haymaking and milking, and other tasks, that make firm muscles.

Ah! it was a merry day! A comfortable meal was laid out upon the short grass in a green glade, and there the people rested, and ate, and were glad, and sang out old songs, that have mostly a wail in them, even if the words are gay. And last of all, Teague O'Ruark sang a song of his own making, or more probably of Malachy, our old harper's, which made a silence fall upon the merry gathering, as if a shadow passed over it.

For he sang of the Drinan Dhun, the sloe tree, and by that name they call my brother Pierce, because his eyes are dark as the sloes, and his hair is raven black as it clusters over his forehead in the ancient Irish fashion of the Coolun, which we love, and which the English hate, and have long striven to abolish.

They were rude rhymes enough that Teague sang, but they went to our hearts as the finest melodies and most inspired words could hardly have done. And this was his song —

“My Drinan Dhun's fairer than a soft summer day!  
My Drinan Dhun's breath is like the newmown hay;  
And his smile, *maghile m'hor!*<sup>1</sup> like the ray of the sun;  
And the name they call him is the Drinan Dhun.

<sup>1</sup> My brightness (of my heart).

## IRELAND

"*Cushla machree!*<sup>1</sup> is the rain falling dreary  
Where thou art keeping guard, toil-worn and weary?  
Youth of the strong arm, oh! where art thou gone?  
Dwelling in the shade of the Drinan Dhun.

"Curse upon the Sassenach!<sup>2</sup> Joy bless them never!  
The hearthstone of hell be their pillow forever!  
God's red wrath shall leave them no rest 'neath the sun,  
For all our hearts are breaking for my Drinan Dhun."

"Teague!" cried my father, "I will not have that song sung. I have said it before. If you have a mind to sing, sing songs that will give us the hearts of men, and not a Phillalu only fit for a woman. And you," he turned to the harper, "add at once a cheerful strain to the song, since I doubt not that it is of your making, and henceforth whoso sings it must sing the whole under pain of my anger. Aye, but he can sing the curses twice over if he list!" he added, under his breath.

Thus adjured, the old blind harper, who sat shrouded in his long mantle a little apart from the gay crowd, struck the chords of his harp and sang to the same melody, but in a major key — Teague having passed after his first verse into a wild minor strain —

"Hark how the blackbird sings, *Shule shule aroon!*<sup>3</sup>  
*Slantha*<sup>4</sup> *mavourneen!* My darling comes soon.  
For the snow melts away, and the summer's begun  
When we see the first blossoms of the Drinan Dhun!"

"There is hope here, but you might have promised him to us a little sooner than the spring, Malachy," said my father, between sighing and smiling; and he called upon any who were willing to come forth and dance again.

<sup>1</sup> Vein of my heart.

<sup>2</sup> Come, come, my dear.

<sup>3</sup> English.

<sup>4</sup> A health.



## AFTER THE REBELLION OF 1641

“And you, Ethne, my child, take part in the sport and lead the handkerchief dance. The Knight of Lara’s daughter need bate no jot of her dignity, but will add to her empire over the hearts of her father’s people by joining in pleasure as in worship with them.”

I needed no such argument. To move to music is always a boundless pleasure to me. Do not all young and strong creatures find it so? Certainly a horse springs under the rider at the sound of cheerful music, as if to live and move had all at once become a doubled pleasure.

But I linger too long over the story of this day. We have lived through many a merrier after all — rent day, and patron day, and St. Patrick’s happy feast; but this was the very last, and I think I shall never forget anything that happened from morning till the night of it. For as I was winding in and out with the best dancers present, holding a silken kerchief, and passing under it and back again in the various figures of the dance, there was suddenly a stir among the crowd and Rory stopped piping, for half a dozen young gentlemen of the neighborhood rode up and dismounted, casting their reins to some of the lads standing by, and themselves at once approaching my parents.

“Who comes here?” asked my father. “O’Loghlen! you are welcome; and Fitzgerald! your father’s son has always a *cead mille failthe*<sup>1</sup> here. And the rest of you,” — those that remained were not of family equal to his own, — “I am pleased to see you; be seated where you will on the grass beside me. Ho, Teague! cushions for the O’Loghlen, and the son of Hugh Fitzgerald.”

Young Fitzgerald was evidently too much disturbed

<sup>1</sup> Hundred thousand welcomes.

## IRELAND

in mind to answer this welcome as readily as he ought. He stood upright, holding a sheet of paper, and seemed uncertain how to utter what he had to say.

“What, bashful!” cried my father, whose patience, to say truth, is not so long as that of Job. “Why, man, thou hadst ever the gift of the gab like a true Irishman! What is there in that half-ounce of paper to turn thee as white as itself? Here, give me!”

There was silence while he read the paper which he had impatiently seized. It was a slow business that reading, or so it seemed to me, for the perturbed faces of the young men led me to fear that evil news was contained on that plain white sheet, a foot wide, perhaps, by two feet long, printed on in fair black type, with the official seal of Ireland drawn above. It was no wonder that my father rose without a word when he had finished, and went straight indoors, followed with eager anxiety by my mother — while we all stood and looked after them, dismayed. For the paper was a proclamation of Oliver Cromwell, declaring that from henceforth all estates and farms in the three provinces should belong to the English soldiers and adventurers; and that the Irish nation must go bodily — children, cattle, and all — across the Shannon into the wilds of Connaught, before the first of March of the next year, under penalty of death if found out of that province or the County of Clare after that date.

Alas, alas! for us there is no blossoming of the Drinan Dhun to check our sadness; no spring following our long winter; no dawn to end our dark night; but only sorrow and sorrow, and yet again sorrow!

## THE SIEGE OF LONDONDERRY

[1689]

BY THOMAS BABINGTON MACAULAY

[WHEN the English finally lost all patience with King James II, they invited his daughter and her husband, William of Orange, to become their sovereigns. James fled; but he did not give up hope of regaining his crown, and a year later he landed in Ireland with troops and money supplied by the King of France. All Ireland except Ulster was on his side; but Ulster — which had been taken from the Irish Catholic owners and given to English and Scotch Protestants — declared for William. Derry, or Londonderry, was its most strongly fortified town, and thither fled large numbers of the Protestants. To this town James with his French and Irish forces now laid siege.

*The Editor.]*

MAY passed away; June arrived; and still Londonderry held out. There had been many sallies and skirmishes with various success; but, on the whole, the advantage had been with the garrison. Several officers of note had been carried prisoners into the city; and the two French banners, torn after hard fighting from the besiegers, had been hung as trophies in the chancel of the cathedral. It seemed that the siege must be turned into a blockade. But before the hope of reducing the town by main force was relinquished, it was determined to make a great effort. The point selected for assault was an outwork called Windmill Hill, which was not far from the southern gate. Religious stimulants were employed to ani-

## IRELAND

mate the courage of the forlorn hope. Many volunteers bound themselves by oath to make their way into the works or to perish in the attempt. Captain Butler, son of the Lord Mountgarret, undertook to lead the sworn men to the attack. On the walls the colonists were drawn up in three ranks. The office of those who were behind was to load the muskets of those who were in front. The Irish came on boldly and with a fearful uproar, but after long and hard fighting were driven back. The women of Londonderry were seen amidst the thickest fire serving out water and ammunition to their husbands and brothers. In one place, where the wall was only seven feet high, Butler and some of his sworn men succeeded in reaching the top; but they were all killed or made prisoners. At length, after four hundred of the Irish had fallen, their chiefs ordered a retreat to be sounded.

Nothing was left but to try the effect of hunger. It was known that the stock of food in the city was but slender. Indeed, it was thought strange that the supplies should have held out so long. Every precaution was now taken against the introduction of provisions. All the avenues leading to the city by land were closely guarded. On the south were encamped along the left bank of the Foyle, the horsemen who had followed Lord Galmoy from the valley of the Barrow. Their chief was of all the Irish captains the most dreaded and the most abhorred by the Protestants. For he had disciplined his men with rare skill and care; and many frightful stories were told of his barbarity and perfidy. Long lines of tents, occupied by the infantry of Butler and O'Neil, of Lord Slane and Lord Germanstown, by Nugent's Westmeath men,

## THE SIEGE OF LONDONDERRY

by Eustace's Kildare men, and by Cavanagh's Kerry men, extended northward till they again approached the waterside. The river was fringed with forts and batteries which no vessel could pass without great peril. After some time it was determined to make the security still more complete by throwing a barricade across the stream, about a mile and a half below the city. Several boats full of stones were sunk. A row of stakes was driven into the bottom of the river. Large pieces of fir-wood, strongly bound together, formed a boom which was more than a quarter of a mile in length, and which was firmly fastened to both shores, by cables a foot thick. . . .

There could be no doubt that, if Londonderry fell, the whole Irish army would instantly march in irresistible force upon Lough Erne. Yet what could be done? Some brave men were for making a desperate attempt to relieve the besieged city; but the odds were too great. Detachments, however, were sent which infested the rear of the blockading army, cut off supplies, and, on one occasion, carried away the horses of three entire troops of cavalry. Still, the line of posts which surrounded Londonderry by land remained unbroken. The river was still strictly closed and guarded. Within the walls the distress had become extreme. So early as the 8th of June horseflesh was almost the only meat which could be purchased; and of horseflesh the supply was scanty. It was necessary to make up the deficiency with tallow; and even tallow was doled out with a parsimonious hand.

On the 15th of June a gleam of hope appeared. The sentinels on the top of the cathedral saw sails nine miles

## IRELAND

off in the bay of Lough Foyle. Thirty vessels of different sizes were counted. Signals were made from the steeples and returned from the mastheads, but were imperfectly understood on both sides. At last a messenger from the fleet eluded the Irish sentinels, dived under the boom, and informed the garrison that Kirke had arrived from England with troops, arms, ammunition, and provisions, to relieve the city.

In Londonderry expectation was at the height; but a few hours of feverish joy were followed by weeks of misery. Kirke thought it unsafe to make any attempt, either by land or by water, on the lines of the besiegers, and retired to the entrance of Lough Foyle, where during several weeks he lay inactive.

And now the pressure of famine became every day more severe. A strict search was made in all the recesses of all the houses of the city; and some provisions, which had been concealed in cellars by people who had since died or made their escape, were discovered and carried to the magazines. The stock of cannon balls was almost exhausted; and their place was supplied by brickbats coated with lead. Pestilence began, as usual, to make its appearance in the train of hunger. Fifteen officers died of fever in one day. The Governor, Baker, was among those who sank under the disease. His place was supplied by Colonel John Mitchelburne.

Meanwhile it was known at Dublin that Kirke and his squadron were on the coast of Ulster. The alarm was great at the castle. Even before this news arrived, Avaux had given it as his opinion that Richard Hamilton was unequal to the difficulties of the situation. It had therefore been resolved that Rosen should take



## THE SIEGE OF LONDONDERRY

the chief command. He was now sent down with all speed.

On the 19th of June he arrived at the headquarters of the besieging army. At first he attempted to undermine the walls, but his plan was discovered; and he was compelled to abandon it after a sharp fight, in which more than a hundred of his men were slain. Then his fury rose to a strange pitch. He, an old soldier, a marshal of France in expectancy, trained in the school of the greatest generals, accustomed, during many years, to scientific war, to be baffled by a mob of country gentlemen, farmers, shopkeepers, who were protected only by a wall which any good engineer would at once have pronounced untenable! He raved, he blasphemed, in a language of his own, made up of all the dialects spoken from the Baltic to the Atlantic. He would raze the city to the ground; he would spare no living thing; no, not the young girls; not the babies at the breast. As to the leaders, death was too light a punishment for them; he would rack them; he would roast them alive. In his rage he ordered a shell to be flung into the town with a letter containing a horrible menace. He would, he said, gather into one body all the Protestants who had remained at their homes between Charlemont and the sea, old men, women, children, many of them near in blood and affection to the defenders of Londonderry. No protection, whatever might be the authority by which it had been given, should be respected. The multitude thus brought together should be driven under the walls of Londonderry, and should there be starved to death in the sight of their countrymen, their friends, their kinsmen. This was no idle threat. Parties were instantly

## IRELAND

sent out in all directions to collect victims. At dawn, on the morning of the 2d of July, hundreds of Protestants, who were charged with no crime, who were incapable of bearing arms, and many of whom had protections granted by James, were dragged to the gates of the city. It was imagined that the piteous sight would quell the spirit of the colonists. But the only effect was to rouse that spirit to still greater energy. An order was immediately put forth that no man should utter the word "surrender" on pain of death; and no man uttered that word. Several prisoners of high rank were in the town. Hitherto they had been well treated, and had received as good rations as were measured out to the garrison. They were now closely confined. A gallows was erected on one of the bastions; and a message was conveyed to Rosen, requesting him to send a confessor instantly to prepare his friends for death. The prisoners in great dismay wrote to the savage Livonian, but received no answer. They then addressed themselves to their countryman, Richard Hamilton. They were willing, they said, to shed their blood for their king; but they thought it hard to die the ignominious death of thieves in consequence of the barbarity of their own companions in arms. Hamilton, though a man of lax principles, was not cruel. He had been disgusted by the inhumanity of Rosen, but, being only second in command, could not venture to express publicly all that he thought. He, however, remonstrated strongly. Some Irish officers felt on this occasion as it was natural that brave men should feel, and declared, weeping with pity and indignation, that they should never cease to have in their ears the cries of the poor women and children who had been



## THE SIEGE OF LONDONDERRY

driven at the point of the pike to die of famine between the camp and the city. Rosen persisted during forty-eight hours. In that time many unhappy creatures perished; but Londonderry held out as resolutely as ever; and he saw that his crime was likely to produce nothing but hatred and obloquy. He at length gave way, and suffered the survivors to withdraw. The garrison then took down the gallows which had been erected on the bastion.

When the tidings of these events reached Dublin, James, though by no means prone to compassion, was startled by an atrocity of which the civil wars of England had furnished no example, and was displeased by learning that protections, given by his authority, and guaranteed by his honor, had been publicly declared to be nullities. He complained to the French ambassadors and said, with a warmth which the occasion fully justified, that Rosen was a barbarous Muscovite. Melfort could not refrain from adding that, if Rosen had been an Englishman, he would have been hanged. Avaux was utterly unable to understand this effeminate sensibility. In his opinion, nothing had been done that was at all reprehensible; and he had some difficulty in commanding himself when he heard the king and the secretary blame, in strong language, an act of "wholesome severity." In truth, the French ambassador and the French general were well paired. There was a great difference, doubtless, in appearance and manner, between the handsome, graceful, and refined diplomatist, whose dexterity and suavity had been renowned at the most polite courts of Europe, and the military adventurer, whose look and voice reminded all who came near him

## IRELAND

that he had been born in a half-savage country, that he had risen from the ranks, and that he had once been sentenced to death for marauding. But the heart of the courtier was even more callous than that of the soldier.

Rosen was recalled to Dublin; and Richard Hamilton was again left in the chief command. He tried gentler means than those which had brought so much reproach on his predecessor. No trick, no lie, which was thought likely to discourage the starving garrison was spared. One day a great shout was raised by the whole Irish camp. The defenders of Londonderry were soon informed that the army of James was rejoicing on account of the fall of Enniskillen. They were told that they had now no chance of being relieved, and were exhorted to save their lives by capitulating. They consented to negotiate. But what they asked was, that they should be permitted to depart armed and in military array, by land or by water at their choice. They demanded hostages for the exact fulfillment of these conditions, and insisted that the hostages should be sent on board of the fleet which lay in Lough Foyle. Such terms Hamilton durst not grant; the governors would abate nothing; the treaty was broken off; and the conflict recommenced.

By this time July was far advanced; and the state of the city was, hour by hour, becoming more frightful. The number of the inhabitants had been thinned more by famine and disease than by the fire of the enemy. Yet that fire was sharper and more constant than ever. One of the gates was beaten in; one of the bastions was laid in ruins; but the breaches made by day were repaired by night with indefatigable activity. Every attack was still repelled. But the fighting men of the

## THE SIEGE OF LONDONDERRY

garrison were so much exhausted that they could scarcely keep their legs. Several of them, in the act of striking at the enemy, fell down from mere weakness. A very small quantity of grain remained, and was doled out by mouthfuls. The stock of salted hides was considerable, and by gnawing them the garrison appeased the rage of hunger. Dogs, fattened on the blood of the slain who lay unburied round the town, were luxuries which few could afford to purchase. The price of a whelp's paw was five shillings and sixpence. Nine horses were still alive, and but barely alive. They were so lean that little meat was likely to be found upon them. It was, however, determined to slaughter them for food. The people perished so fast that it was impossible for the survivors to perform the rites of sepulture. There was scarcely a cellar in which some corpse was not decaying. Such was the extremity of distress that the rats who came to feast in those hideous dens were eagerly hunted and greedily devoured. A small fish, caught in the river, was not to be purchased with money. The only price for which such a treasure could be obtained was some handfuls of oatmeal. Leprosies, such as strange and unwholesome diet engenders, made existence a constant torment. The whole city was poisoned by the stench exhaled from the bodies of the dead and of the half-dead. That there should be fits of discontent and insubordination among men enduring such misery was inevitable. At one moment it was suspected that Walker had laid up somewhere a secret store of food, and was reveling in private, while he exhorted others to suffer resolutely for the good cause. His house was strictly examined; his innocence was fully proved; he regained his popularity;

## IRELAND

and the garrison, with death in near prospect, thronged to the cathedral to hear him preach, drank in his earnest eloquence with delight, and went forth from the house of God with haggard faces and tottering steps, but with spirit still unsubdued. There were, indeed, some secret plottings. A very few obscure traitors opened communications with the enemy. But it was necessary that all such dealings should be carefully concealed. None dared to utter publicly any words save words of defiance and stubborn resolution. Even in that extremity the general cry was "No surrender." And there were not wanting voices which, in low tones, added, "First the horses and hides; and then the prisoners; and then each other." It was afterwards related, half in jest, yet not without a horrible mixture of earnest, that a corpulent citizen, whose bulk presented a strange contrast to the skeletons which surrounded him, thought it expedient to conceal himself from the numerous eyes which followed him with cannibal looks whenever he appeared in the streets.

It was no slight aggravation of the sufferings of the garrison that all this time the English ships were seen far off in Lough Foyle. Communication between the fleet and the city was almost impossible. One diver who had attempted to pass the boom was drowned. Another was hanged. The language of signals was hardly intelligible. On the 13th of July, however, a piece of paper sewed up in a cloth button came to Walker's hands. It was a letter from Kirke, and contained assurances of speedy relief. But more than a fortnight of intense misery had since elapsed; and the hearts of the most sanguine were sick with deferred hope. By no art could

## THE SIEGE OF LONDONDERRY

the provisions which were left be made to hold out two days more.

Just at this time Kirke received a dispatch from England, which contained positive orders that Londonderry should be relieved. He accordingly determined to make an attempt which, as far as appears, he might have made, with at least an equally fair prospect of success, six weeks earlier.

Among the merchant ships which had come to Lough Foyle under his convoy was one called the Mountjoy. The master, Micajah Browning, a native of Londonderry, had brought from England a large cargo of provisions. He had, it is said, repeatedly remonstrated against the inaction of the armament. He now eagerly volunteered to take the risk of succoring his fellow citizens; and his offer was accepted. Andrew Douglas, master of the Phoenix, who had on board a great quantity of meal from Scotland, was willing to share the danger and the honor. The two merchantmen were to be escorted by the Dartmouth frigate of thirty-six guns, commanded by Captain John Leake, afterwards an admiral of great fame.

It was the 30th of July. The sun had just set; the evening sermon in the cathedral was over; and the heart-broken congregation had separated, when the sentinels on the tower saw the sails of three vessels coming up the Foyle. Soon there was a stir in the Irish camp. The besiegers were on the alert for miles along both shores. The ships were in extreme peril; for the river was low, and the only navigable channel ran very near to the left bank, where the headquarters of the enemy had been fixed, and where the batteries were most numerous. Leake performed his duty with a skill and spirit worthy

## IRELAND

of his noble profession, exposed his frigate to cover the merchantmen, and used his guns with great effect. At length the little squadron came to the place of peril. Then the Mountjoy took the lead, and went right at the boom. The huge barricade cracked and gave way; but the shock was such that the Mountjoy rebounded, and stuck in the mud. A yell of triumph rose from the banks; the Irish rushed to their boats, and were preparing to board; but the Dartmouth poured on them a well-directed broadside, which threw them into disorder. Just then the Phoenix dashed at the breach which the Mountjoy had made, and was in a moment within the fence. Meantime the tide was rising fast. The Mountjoy began to move, and soon passed safe through the broken stakes and floating spars. But her brave master was no more; a shot from one of the batteries had struck him; and he died by the most enviable of all deaths, in sight of the city which was his birthplace, which was his home, and which had just been saved by his courage and self-devotion from the most frightful form of destruction. The night had closed in before the conflict at the boom began; but the flash of the guns was seen, and the noise heard, by the lean and ghastly multitude which covered the walls of the city. When the Mountjoy grounded, and when the shout of triumph rose from the Irish on both sides of the river, the hearts of the besieged died within them. One who endured the unutterable anguish of that moment has told us that they looked fearfully livid in each other's eyes. Even after the barricade had been passed, there was a terrible half-hour of suspense. It was ten o'clock before the ships arrived at the quay. The whole population was there to welcome



## THE SIEGE OF LONDONDERRY

them. A screen made of casks filled with earth was hastily thrown up to protect the landing-place from the batteries on the other side of the river; and then the work of unloading began. First were rolled on shore barrels containing six thousand bushels of meal. Then came great cheeses, casks of beef, flitches of bacon, kegs of butter, sacks of pease and biscuit, ankers of brandy. Not many hours before, half a pound of tallow and three quarters of a pound of salted hide had been weighed out with niggardly care to every fighting man. The ration which each now received was three pounds of flour, two pounds of beef, and a pint of pease. It is easy to imagine with what tears grace was said over the suppers of that evening. There was little sleep on either side of the wall. The bonfires shone bright along the whole circuit of the ramparts. The Irish guns continued to roar all night; and all night the bells of the rescued city made answer to the Irish guns with a peal of joyous defiance. Through the whole of the 31st of July the batteries of the enemy continued to play. But, soon after the sun had again gone down, flames were seen arising from the camp; and when the 1st of August dawned, a line of smoking ruins marked the site lately occupied by the huts of the besiegers; and the citizens saw far off the long column of pikes and standards retreating up the left bank of the Foyle toward Strabane. So ended this great siege, the most memorable in the annals of the British Isles. It had lasted a hundred and five days. The garrison had been reduced from about seven thousand effective men to about three thousand. The loss of the besiegers cannot be precisely ascertained. Walker estimated it at eight thousand men.

## THE BATTLE OF THE BOYNE

[1690]

BY THOMAS BABINGTON MACAULAY

[A YEAR after the siege of Londonderry King William landed in Ireland, and at the river Boyne his veteran soldiers met the untrained Irish peasants in a battle that sealed the fate of Ireland.

*The Editor.]*

It was still early in the day. The king rode slowly along the northern bank of the river, and closely examined the position of the Irish, from whom he was sometimes separated by an interval of little more than two hundred feet. He was accompanied by Schomberg, Ormond, Sidney, Solmes, Prince George of Hesse, Coningsby, and others. "Their army is but small," said one of the Dutch officers. Indeed, it did not appear to consist of more than sixteen thousand men. But it was well known, from the reports brought by deserters, that many regiments were concealed from view by the undulations of the ground. "They may be stronger than they look," said William; "but, weak or strong, I will soon know all about them."

At length he alighted at a spot nearly opposite to Old-bridge, sat down on the turf to rest himself, and called for breakfast. The sumpter horses were unloaded: the canteens were opened; and a tablecloth was spread on the grass. The place is marked by an obelisk, built while



## THE BATTLE OF THE BOYNE

many veterans who could well remember the events of that day were still living.

While William was at his repast, a group of horsemen appeared close to the water on the opposite shore. Among them his attendants could discern some who had once been conspicuous at reviews in Hyde Park and at balls in the gallery of Whitehall, the youthful Berwick, the small, fair-haired Lauzun, Tyrconnel, once admired by maids of honor as the model of manly vigor and beauty, but now bent down by years and crippled by gout, and, overtopping all, the stately head of Sarsfield.

The chiefs of the Irish army soon discovered that the person who, surrounded by a splendid circle, was breakfasting on the opposite bank, was the Prince of Orange. They sent for artillery. Two fieldpieces, screened from view by a troop of cavalry, were brought down almost to the brink of the river, and placed behind a hedge. William, who had just risen from his meal, and was again in the saddle, was the mark of both guns. The first shot struck one of the holsters of Prince George of Hesse, and brought his horse to the ground. "Ah!" cried the king; "the poor prince is killed." As the words passed his lips, he was himself hit by a second ball, a six-pounder. It merely tore his coat, grazed his shoulder, and drew two or three ounces of blood. Both armies saw that the shot had taken effect; for the king sank down for a moment on his horse's neck. A yell of exultation rose from the Irish camp. The English and their allies were in dismay. Solmes flung himself prostrate on the earth, and burst into tears. But William's deportment soon reassured his friends. "There is no harm done," he said; "but the bullet came quite near

## IRELAND

enough." Coningsby put his handkerchief to the wound: a surgeon was sent for: a plaster was applied; and the king, as soon as the dressing was finished, rode round all the posts of his army amidst loud acclamations. Such was the energy of his spirit that, in spite of his feeble health, in spite of his recent hurt, he was that day nineteen hours on horseback.

A cannonade was kept up on both sides till the evening. William observed with especial attention the effect produced by the Irish shots on the English regiments which had never been in action, and declared himself satisfied with the result. "All is right," he said; "they stand fire well." Long after sunset he made a final inspection of his forces by torchlight, and gave orders that everything should be ready for forcing a passage across the river on the morrow. Every soldier was to put a green bough in his hat. The baggage and greatcoats were to be left under a guard. The word was Westminster.

The king's resolution to attack the Irish was not approved by all his lieutenants. Schomberg, in particular, pronounced the experiment too hazardous, and, when his opinion was overruled, retired to his tent in no very good humor. When the order of battle was delivered to him, he muttered that he had been more used to give such orders than to receive them. For this little fit of sullenness, very pardonable in a general who had won great victories when his master was still a child, the brave veteran made, on the following morning, a noble atonement.

The 1st of July dawned, a day which has never since returned without exciting strong emotions of very differ-

## THE BATTLE OF THE BOYNE

ent kinds in the two populations which divide Ireland. The sun rose bright and cloudless. Soon after four both armies were in motion. William ordered his right wing, under the command of Meinhart Schomberg, one of the duke's sons, to march to the bridge of Slane, some miles up the river, to cross there, and to turn the left flank of the Irish army. Meinhart Schomberg was assisted by Portland and Douglas. James, anticipating some such design, had already sent to the bridge a regiment of dragoons, commanded by Sir Neil O'Neil. O'Neil behaved himself like a brave gentleman; but he soon received a mortal wound; his men fled; and the English right wing passed the river.

This move made Lauzun uneasy. What if the English right wing should get into the rear of the army of James? About four miles south of the Boyne was a place called Duleek, where the road to Dublin was so narrow that two cars could not pass each other, and where on both sides of the road lay a morass which afforded no firm footing. If Meinhart Schomberg should occupy this spot, it would be impossible for the Irish to retreat. They must either conquer or be cut off to a man. Disturbed by this apprehension, the French general marched with his countrymen and with Sarsfield's horse in the direction of Slane Bridge. Thus the fords near Oldbridge were left to be defended by the Irish alone.

It was now near ten o'clock. William put himself at the head of his left wing, which was composed exclusively of cavalry, and prepared to pass the river not far above Drogheda. The center of his army, which consisted almost exclusively of foot, was entrusted to the command of Schomberg, and was marshaled opposite

## IRELAND

to Oldbridge. At Oldbridge had been collected the whole Irish army, foot, dragoons, and horse, Sarsfield's regiment alone excepted. The Meath bank bristled with pikes and bayonets. A fortification had been made by French engineers out of the hedges and buildings; and a breastwork had been thrown up close to the water side. Tyrconnel was there; and under him were Richard Hamilton and Antrim.

Schomberg gave the word. Solmes's Blues were the first to move. They marched gallantly, with drums beating, to the brink of the Boyne. Then the drums stopped; and the men, ten abreast, descended into the water. Next plunged Londonderry and Enniskillen. A little to the left of Londonderry and Enniskillen, Caillemot crossed, at the head of a long column of French refugees. A little to the left of Caillemot and his refugees, the main body of the English infantry struggled through the river, up to their armpits in water. Still farther down the stream the Danes found another ford. In a few minutes the Boyne, for a quarter of a mile, was alive with muskets and green boughs.

It was not till the assailants had reached the middle of the channel that they became aware of the whole difficulty and danger of the service in which they were engaged. They had as yet seen little more than half the hostile army. Now whole regiments of foot and horse seemed to start out of the earth. A wild shout of defiance rose from the whole shore: during one moment the event seemed doubtful: but the Protestants pressed resolutely forward; and in another moment the whole Irish line gave way. Tyrconnel looked on in helpless despair. He did not want personal courage: but his military skill

## THE BATTLE OF THE BOYNE

was so small that he hardly ever reviewed his regiment in the Phoenix Park without committing some blunder; and to rally the ranks which were breaking all round him was no task for a general who had survived the energy of his body and of his mind, and yet had still the rudiments of his profession to learn. Several of his best officers fell while vainly endeavoring to prevail on their soldiers to look the Dutch Blues in the face. Richard Hamilton ordered a body of foot to fall on the French refugees, who were still deep in water. He led the way, and, accompanied by some courageous gentlemen, advanced, sword in hand, into the river. But neither his commands nor his example could infuse valor into that mob of cow-stealers. He was left almost alone, and retired from the bank in despair. Farther down the river, Antrim's division ran like sheep at the approach of the English column. Whole regiments flung away arms, colors, and cloaks, and scampered off to the hills without striking a blow or firing a shot.

It required many years and many heroic exploits to take away the reproach which that ignominious rout left on the Irish name. Yet, even before the day closed, it was abundantly proved that the reproach was unjust. Richard Hamilton put himself at the head of the cavalry, and under his command they made a gallant, though an unsuccessful, attempt to retrieve the day. They maintained a desperate fight in the bed of the river with Solmes's Blues. They drove the Danish brigade back into the stream. They fell impetuously on the Huguenot regiments, which, not being provided with pikes, then ordinarily used by foot to repel horse, began to give ground. Caillemot, while encouraging his fellow

## IRELAND

exiles, received a mortal wound in the thigh. Four of his men carried him back across the ford to his tent. As he passed, he continued to urge forward the rear ranks which were still up to the breast in the water. "On; on; my lads! To glory! To glory." Schomberg, who had remained on the northern bank, and who had thence watched the progress of his troops with the eye of a general, now thought that the emergency required from him the personal exertion of a soldier. Those who stood about him besought him in vain to put on his cuirass. Without defensive armor he rode through the river, and rallied the refugees whom the fall of Caillemot had dismayed. "Come on," he cried in French, pointing to the popish squadrons; "come on, gentlemen; there are your persecutors." Those were his last words. As he spoke, a band of Irish horsemen rushed upon him and encircled him for a moment. When they retired, he was on the ground. His friends raised him; but he was already a corpse. Two saber wounds were on his head; and a bullet from a carbine was lodged in his neck. Almost at the same moment Walker, while exhorting the colonists of Ulster to play the men, was shot dead. During near half an hour the battle continued to rage along the southern shore of the river. All was smoke, dust, and din. Old soldiers were heard to say that they had seldom seen sharper work in the Low Countries. But, just at this conjuncture, William came up with the left wing. He had found much difficulty in crossing. The tide was running fast. His charger had been forced to swim, and had been almost lost in the mud. As soon as the king was on firm ground, he took his sword in his left hand,—for his right arm was stiff with his wound and his band-



## THE BATTLE OF THE BOYNE

age, — and led his men to the place where the fight was the hottest. His arrival decided the fate of the day. Yet the Irish horse retired fighting obstinately. It was long remembered among the Protestants of Ulster that, in the midst of the tumult, William rode to the head of the Enniskilleners. “What will you do for me?” he cried. He was not immediately recognized; and one trooper, taking him for an enemy, was about to fire. William gently put aside the carbine. “What,” said he, “do you not know your friends?” “It is His Majesty,” said the colonel. The ranks of sturdy Protestant yeomen set up a shout of joy. “Gentlemen,” said William, “you shall be my guards to-day. I have heard much of you. Let me see something of you.” One of the most remarkable peculiarities of this man, ordinarily so saturnine and reserved, was that danger acted on him like wine, opened his heart, loosened his tongue, and took away all appearance of constraint from his manner. On this memorable day he was seen wherever the peril was greatest. One ball struck the cap of his pistol: another carried off the heel of his jackboot: but his lieutenants in vain implored him to retire to some station from which he could give his orders without exposing a life so valuable to Europe. His troops, animated by his example, gained ground fast. The Irish cavalry made their last stand at a house called Plottin Castle, about a mile and a half south of Oldbridge. There the Enniskilleners were repelled with the loss of fifty men, and were hotly pursued, till William rallied them and turned the chase back. In this encounter Richard Hamilton, who had done all that could be done by valor to retrieve a reputation forfeited by perfidy, was severely



## IRELAND

wounded, taken prisoner, and instantly brought, through the smoke and over the carnage, before the prince whom he had foully wronged. On no occasion did the character of William show itself in a more striking manner. "Is this business over?" he said; "or will your horse make more fight?" "On my honor, sir," answered Hamilton, "I believe that they will." "Your honor!" muttered William; "your honor!" That half-suppressed exclamation was the only revenge which he condescended to take for an injury for which many sovereigns, far more affable and gracious in their ordinary deportment, would have exacted a terrible retribution. Then, restraining himself, he ordered his own surgeon to look to the hurts of the captive.

And now the battle was over. Hamilton was mistaken in thinking that his horse would continue to fight. Whole troops had been cut to pieces. One fine regiment had only thirty unwounded men left. It was enough that these gallant soldiers had disputed the field till they were left without support, or hope, or guidance, till their bravest leader was a captive, and till their king had fled.

## THE WEARIN' O' THE GREEN

[1798]

[DURING the rebellion of 1798 the famous "Wearin' o' the Green" began to be sung. Stopford A. Brooke says that it is "probably the finest street ballad ever written."

*The Editor.]*

OH, Paddy dear! an' did ye hear the news that's goin'  
round?

The shamrock is by law forbid to grow on Irish ground!  
No more St. Patrick's Day we'll keep, his color can't be  
seen,

For there's a cruel law agin the wearin' o' the green!  
I met with Napper Tandy, and he took me by the hand,  
And he said, "How's poor Ould Ireland, and how does  
she stand?"

She's the most disthressful country that iver yet was  
seen,

For they're hangin' men and women there for wearin' o'  
the green.

An' if the color we must wear is England's cruel red,  
Let it remind us of the blood that Ireland has shed;  
Then pull the shamrock from your hat, and throw it on  
the sod, —

And never fear, 't will take root there, tho' under foot  
't is trod!

When law can stop the blades of grass from growin' as  
they grow,

## IRELAND

And when the leaves in summer-time their color dare not  
show,  
Then I will change the color, too, I wear in my caubeen,  
But till that day, plaze God, I'll stick to wearin' o' the  
green.

## EMMET'S GRAVE

BY JUSTIN F. MCCARTHY

[ROBERT EMMET was a leader of the "United Irishmen," an organization which was formed to bring about parliamentary reforms. Becoming revolutionary, it aided in causing the Irish rebellion of 1798. Five years later, an uprising was led by Emmet, who was captured and put to death.

*The Editor.]*

THERE is a grave in Dublin, whose sad and silent  
stone

No name of him who sleeps beneath, no eulogy makes  
known;

No prayer for the departed soul, no monumental bust  
Adorns the voiceless sepulcher that shrouds a martyr's  
dust.

'T is the grave of Robert Emmet; it obeys the latest  
breath

Of his bidding to the country on the day he met his  
death;

"My epitaph," he ordered, "let no living finger trace,  
Till with the nations once again my country takes her  
place."

But all who love their country love that melancholy  
grave,

Where the gallant body moulders of the bravest of the  
brave,

## IRELAND

'T is a nobler bed for such a sleep, with its epitaph  
unsaid,  
Than the proudest tomb men ever raised to the vener-  
ated dead.

Ah! lover, soldier, patriot, the time will surely come,  
When that mute slab that guards thy rest need be no  
longer dumb,  
And when the children of thy race shall feel a right to  
make  
A fitting epitaph for him who died for Ireland's sake.

# THE HARP THAT ONCE THROUGH TARA'S HALLS

BY THOMAS MOORE

[TARA, a score of miles from Dublin, was famous in early Irish history as a royal residence.

*The Editor.]*

THE harp that once through Tara's halls  
The soul of music shed,  
Now hangs as mute on Tara's walls,  
As if that soul were fled. —  
So sleeps the pride of former days,  
So glory's thrill is o'er,  
And hearts that once beat high for praise,  
Now feel that pulse no more.

No more to chiefs and ladies bright  
The harp of Tara swells;  
The chord alone, that breaks at night,  
Its tale of ruin tells.  
Thus Freedom now so seldom wakes,  
The only throb she gives,  
Is when some heart indignant breaks,  
To show that still she lives.





III  
IRELAND AND HER PEOPLE

## HISTORICAL NOTE

THROUGHOUT the nineteenth century the struggle for freedom was continued by various societies and parties — the United Irishmen, the Ribbon Society, the Young Ireland Party, the Fenian Society, the Land League, and others. Repression was answered by outrage, and the prospect for liberty seemed at times dark, indeed.

But slowly the long struggle against oppression began to bear fruit. In 1829, the right of Catholics to sit in Parliament was granted. Forty years later, by the efforts of Gladstone, the Episcopal Church in Ireland was disestablished. Another serious grievance was the "land question." The land of the country was in the hands of a very few persons, and was rented by them annually. Except in Ulster, a tenant who had improved his holding in any way usually had his rent raised; and if he was evicted, he received no compensation for any of his improvements. By the influence of Gladstone, the Act of the "three F's" — Free Sale, Fair Rent, Fixity of Tenure, was passed. In 1885, the Government offered to lend the small farmers the money to purchase their farms for themselves, by their making small payments to extend over a period of forty-nine years. Other acts have been passed with the same general aim.

The most pressing question for a long time was that of "Home Rule," that is, a local legislature for the country. Notwithstanding the threat of the Protestant province of Ulster to rebel rather than be governed by an Irish Parliament, a Home Rule bill passed the House of Commons in 1914, and so became law.

## THE "GRAND CANAL HOTEL"

BY CHARLES LEVER

[THE following scene from a story by a famous Irish novelist gives a vivid picture of the utter wretchedness to which a large proportion of the population of Ireland had been reduced by the early nineteenth century.

*The Editor.]*

LITTLE does he know who voyages in a canal-boat, dragged along some three miles and a half per hour, ignominiously at the tails of two ambling hackneys, what pride, pomp, and circumstance await him at the first town he enters. Seated on the deck, watching with a Dutchman's apathy the sedgy banks, whose tall flaggers bow their heads beneath the ripple that eddies from the bow: now lifting his eyes from earth to sky, with nothing to interest, nothing to attract him; turning from the gaze of the long dreary tract of bog and moorland, to look upon his fellow travelers, whose features are perhaps neither more striking nor more pleasing, — the monotonous jog of the postilion before, the impassive placidity of the helmsman behind, — the lazy smoke that seems to lack energy to issue from the little chimney, — the brown and leaden look of all around, — have something dreamy and sleep-compelling, almost impossible to resist. And, already, as the voyager droops his head, and lets fall his eyelids, a confused and misty sense of some everlasting journey, toilsome, tedious, and slow, creeps over his besotted faculties; when suddenly

## IRELAND

the loud bray of the horn breaks upon his ears — the sound is reëchoed from a distance — the far-off tinkle of a bell is borne along the water, and he sees before him, as if conjured up by some magician's wand, the roofs and chimneys of a little village. Meanwhile, the excitement about him increases: the deck is lumbered with hampers, and boxes, and parcels — the note of departure to many a cloaked and frieze-coated passenger has rung; for, strange as it may seem, in that little assemblage of mud hovels, with their dunghills and their duck-pools around them, with its one slated house and its square chapel — yet there are people who live there; and, stranger still, some of those who have left it, and seen other places, are going back there again, to drag on life as before. But the plot is thickening: the large brass bell at the stern of the boat is thundering away with its clanging sound; the banks are crowded with people; and as if to favor the melodramatic magic of the scene, the track-rope is cast off, the weary posters trot away towards their stable, the stately barge floats on, to its destined haven, without the aid of any visible influence. He who watches the look of proud important bearing that beams upon the "captain's" face at a moment like this, may philosophize upon the charms of that power which man wields above his fellow men; such, at least, were some of my reflections — and I could not help muttering to myself, if a man like this feels pride of station, what a glorious service must be the navy.

Watching with interest the nautical skill with which, having fastened a rope to the stern, the boat was swung round, with her head in the direction from whence she came, intimating thereby the monotonous character of

## THE GRAND CANAL HOTEL

her avocations, I did not perceive that one by one the passengers were taking their departure.

“Good-bye, Captain!” cried Father Tom, as he extended his ample hand to me; “we’ll meet again in Loughrea. I’m going on Mrs. Carney’s car, or I’d be delighted to join you in a conveyance, but you’ll easily get one at the hotel.”

I had barely time to thank the good father for his kind advice, when I perceived him adjusting various duodecimo Carneys in the well of the car, and then having carefully included himself in the frieze coat that wrapped Mrs. Carney — he gave the word to drive on.

As the day following was the time appointed for naming the horses and the riders, I had no reason for haste. Loughrea, from what I had heard, was a commonplace country town, in which, as in all similar places, every newcomer was canvassed with a prying and searching curiosity. I resolved, therefore, to stop where I was; not, indeed, that the scenery possessed any attractions: a prospect more bleak, more desolate, and more barren, it would be impossible to conceive — a wide river with low and reedy banks, moving sluggishly on its yellow current, between broad tracts of bog or callow meadowland; no trace of cultivation, not even a tree was to be seen.

Such is Shannon Harbor. No matter, thought I, the hotel at least looks well. This consolatory reflection of mine was elicited by the prospect of a large stone building of some stories high, whose granite portico and wide steps stood in strange contrast to the miserable mud hovels that flanked it on either side. It was a strange thought to have placed such a building in such a situa-

## IRELAND

tion. I dismissed the ungrateful notion, as I remembered my own position, and how happy I felt to accept its hospitality.

A solitary jaunting-car stood on the canal side — the poorest specimen of its class I had ever seen; the car — a few boards cobbled up by some country carpenter — seemed to threaten disunion even with the coughing of the wretched beast that wheezed between its shafts, while the driver, an emaciated creature of any age from sixteen to sixty, sat shivering upon the seat, striking from time to time with his whip at the flies that played about the animal's ears, as though anticipating their prey.

"Banagher, yer honor. Loughrea, sir. Rowl ye over in an hour and a half. Is it Portumna, sir?"

"No, my good friend," replied I, "I stop at the hotel."

Had I proposed to take a sail down the Shannon on my portmanteau, I don't think the astonishment could have been greater. The bystanders, and they were numerous enough by this time, looked from one to the other, with expressions of mingled surprise and dread; and indeed had I, like some sturdy knight-errant of old, announced my determination to pass the night in a haunted chamber, more unequivocal evidences of their admiration and fear could not have been evoked.

"In the hotel," said one.

"He is going to stop at the hotel," cried another.

"Blessed hour," said a third, "wonders will never cease."

Short as had been my residence in Ireland, it had at least taught me one lesson — never to be surprised at anything I met with. So many views of life peculiar to

## THE GRAND CANAL HOTEL

the land met me at every turn — so many strange prejudices — so many singular notions, that were I to apply my previous knowledge of the world, such as it was, to my guidance here, I should be like a man endeavoring to sound the depths of the sea with an instrument intended to ascertain the distance of a star. Leaving, therefore, to time the explanation of the mysterious astonishment around me, I gathered together my baggage and left the boat.

The first impressions of a traveler are not uncommonly his best. The finer and more distinctive features of a land require deep study and long acquaintance, but the broader traits of nationality are caught in an instant, or not caught at all. Familiarity with them destroys them, and it is only at first blush that we learn to appreciate them with force. Who that has landed at Calais, at Rotterdam, or at Leghorn, has not felt this? The Flemish peasant, with her long-eared cap and heavy sabots — the dark Italian, basking his swarthy features in the sun, are striking objects when we first look on them. But days and weeks roll on, the wider characteristics of human nature swallow up the smaller and more narrow features of nationality, and in a short time we forget that the things which have surprised us at first are not what we have been used to from our infancy.

Gifted with but slender powers of observation, such as they were, this was to me always a moment of their exercise. How often in the rural districts of my own country had the air of cheery comfort, and healthy contentment, spoken to my heart; how frequently in the manufacturing ones, had the din of hammers, the black smoke, or



## IRELAND

the lurid flame of furnaces, turned my thoughts to those great sources of our national wealth, and made me look on every dark and swarthy face that passed, as on one who ministered to his country's weal. But now I was to view a new, and very different scene. Scarcely had I put foot on shore when the whole population of the village thronged around me. What are these? thought I. What art do they practice? What trade do they profess? Alas! their wan looks, their tattered garments, their outstretched hands, and imploring voices, gave the answer — they were all beggars! It was not as if the old, the decrepit, the sickly, or the feeble, had fallen on the charity of their fellow men in their hour of need; but here were all — all — the old man and the infant, the husband and the wife, the aged grandfather and the tottering grandchild, the white locks of youth, the whiter hairs of age — pale, pallid, and sickly — trembling between starvation and suspense, watching with the hectic eye of fever, every gesture of him on whom their momentary hope was fixed; canvassing in muttered tones every step of his proceeding, and hazarding a doubt upon its bearing on their own fate.

“Oh! the heavens be your bed, noble gentleman, look at me. The Lord reward you for the little sixpence that you have in your fingers there. I'm the mother of ten of them.”

“Billy Cronin, yer honor, I'm dark since I was nine years old.”

“I'm the ouldest man in the town-land,” said an old fellow with a white beard, and a blanket strapped round him.

While bursting through the crowd, came a strange

## THE GRAND CANAL HOTEL

odd-looking figure, in a huntsman's coat and cap, but both were so patched and tattered, it was difficult to detect their color.

"Here's Joe, your honor," cried he, putting his hand to his mouth at the same moment. "Tally ho! ye ho! ye ho!" he shouted, with a mellow cadence I never heard surpassed. "Yow! yow! yow!" he cried, imitating the barking of dogs, and then uttering a long low wail, like the bay of a hound, he shouted out, "Hark away! hark away!" and at the same moment pranced into the thickest of the crowd, upsetting men, women, and children as he went: the curses of some, the cries of others, and the laughter of nearly all, ringing through the motley mass, making their misery look still more frightful.

Throwing what silver I had about me amongst them, I made my way towards the hotel, not alone, however, but heading a procession of my ragged friends, who, with loud praises of my liberality, testified their gratitude by bearing me company. Arrived at the porch, I took my luggage from the carrier, and entered the house. Unlike any other hotel I had ever seen, there was neither stir nor bustle, no burly landlord, no buxom landlady, no dapper waiter with napkin on his arm, no pert-looking chambermaid with a bedroom candlestick. A large hall, dirty, and unfurnished, led into a kind of bar, upon whose unpainted shelves a few straggling bottles were ranged together, with some pewter measures and tobacco pipes; while the walls were covered with placards, setting forth the regulations for the "Grand Canal Hotel," with a list, copious and abundant, of all the good things to be found therein, with

## IRELAND

the prices annexed; and a pressing entreaty to the traveler, should he not feel satisfied with his reception, to mention it in a "book kept for that purpose by the landlord." I cast my eye along the bill of fare, so ostentatiously put forth — I read of rump-steaks and roast fowls, of red rounds and sirloins, and I turned from the spot resolved to explore further. The room opposite was large and spacious, and probably destined for the coffee-room, but it also was empty; it had neither chair nor table, and save a pictorial representation of a canal-boat, drawn by some native artist with a burnt stick upon the wall, it had no decoration. Having amused myself with the "Lady Caher," such was the vessel called, I again set forth on my voyage of discovery, and bent my steps towards the kitchen. Alas! my success was no better there — the goodly grate, before which should have stood some of that luscious fare of which I had been reading, was cold and deserted; in one corner, it was true, three sods of earth, scarce lighted, supported an antiquated kettle, whose twisted spout was turned up with a misanthropic curl at the misery of its existence. I ascended the stairs, my footsteps echoed along the silent corridor, but still no trace of human habitant could I see, and I began to believe that even the landlord had departed with the larder.

At this moment the low murmur of voices caught my ear. I listened, and could distinctly catch the sound of persons talking together, at the end of the corridor. Following along this, I came to a door, at which having knocked twice with my knuckles, I waited for the invitation to enter. Either indisposed to admit me, or not having heard my summons, they did not reply; so turn-

## THE GRAND CANAL HOTEL

ing the handle gently, I opened the door, and entered the room unobserved. For some minutes I profited but little by this step; the apartment, a small one, was literally full of smoke, and it was only when I had wiped the tears from my eyes three times that I at length began to recognize the objects before me.

Seated upon two low stools, beside a miserable fire of green wood, that smoked, not blazed, upon the hearth, were a man and a woman. Between them a small and rickety table supported a tea equipage of the humblest description, and a plate of fish whose odor pronounced them red herrings. Of the man I could see but little, as his back was turned toward me; but had it been otherwise, I could scarcely have withdrawn my looks from the figure of his companion. Never had my eyes fallen on an object so strange and so unearthly. She was an old woman, so old, indeed, as to have numbered nearly a hundred years; her head uncovered by her cap, or quoil, displayed a mass of white hair that hung down her back and shoulders, and even partly across her face, not sufficiently, however, to conceal two dark orbits, within which her dimmed eyes faintly glimmered; her nose was thin and pointed, and projecting to the very mouth, which, drawn backwards at the angles by the tense muscles, wore an expression of hideous laughter. Over her coarse dress of some country stuff she wore, for warmth, the cast-off coat of a soldier, giving to her uncouth figure the semblance of an aged baboon at a village show. Her voice, broken with coughing, was a low, feeble treble that seemed to issue from passages where lingering life had left scarce a trace of vitality; and yet she talked on, without ceasing, and moved her

## IRELAND

skinny fingers among the teacups and knives, upon the table, with a fidgety restlessness, as though in search of something.

"There, *acushla*, don't smoke; don't now: sure it is the ruin of your complexion. I never see boys take to tobacco this way when I was young."

"Whisht, mother, and don't be bothering me," was the cranky reply, given in a voice which, strange to say, was not quite unknown to me.

"Aye, aye," said the old crone; "always the same, never mindin' a word I say; and maybe in a few years I won't be to the fore to look after you and watch you."

Here the painful thought of leaving a world, so full of its seductions and sweets, seemed too much for her feelings, and she began to cry. Her companion, however, appeared but little affected, but puffed away at his pipe at his ease, waiting with patience till the paroxysm was past.

"There, now," said the old lady, brightening up, "take away the tay-things, and you may go and take a run on the common; but mind you, don't be pelting Jack Moore's goose, and take care of Bryan's sow, she is as wicked as the divil, now that she has boneens after her. D' ye hear me, darlin', or is it sick you are? Och! wirra! wirra! What's the matter with you, Corny *mabouchal*?"

"Corny," exclaimed I, forgetful of my incognito.

"Aye, Corny, nayther more nor less than Corny himself," said that redoubted personage, as rising to his legs, he deposited his pipe upon the table, thrust his hands into his pockets, and seemed prepared to give battle.

## THE GRAND CANAL HOTEL

"Oh, Corny," said I, "I am delighted to find you here. Perhaps you can assist me. I thought this was a hotel."

"And why would n't you think it a hotel? Has n't it a bar and a coffee-room? — Is n't the regulations of the house printed, and stuck up on all the walls? — Aye, that's what the directors did — put the price on everything as if one was going to cheat the people. And signs on it, look at the place now — ugh! the Haythens! the Turks!"

"Yes, indeed, Corny, look at the place now," — glad to have an opportunity to chime in with my friend's opinions.

"Well, and look at it," replied he, bristling up, "and what have you to say agin it? Is n't it the Grand Canal Hotel?"

"Yes; but," said I conciliatingly, "a hotel ought at least to have a landlord or a landlady."

"And what do you call my mother there?" said he, with indignant energy.

"Don't bate Corny, sir! Don't strike the child!" screamed the old woman, in an accent of heartrending terror. "Sure he does n't know what he is saying."

"He is telling me it is n't the Grand Canal Hotel, mother," shouted Corny in the old lady's ears, while at the same moment he burst into a fit of most discordant laughter. By some strange sympathy the old woman joined in, and I myself, unable to resist the ludicrous effect of a scene which still had touched my feelings, gave way also, and thus we all three laughed on for several minutes.

Suddenly recovering himself in the midst of his cach-



## IRELAND

innations, Corny turned briskly round, fixed his fiery eyes upon me, and said, —

“And did you come all the way from town to laugh at my mother and me?”

I hastened to exonerate myself from such a charge, and in a few words informed him of the object of my journey, whither I was going, and under what painful delusion I labored in supposing the internal arrangements of the Grand Canal Hotel bore any relation to its imposing exterior.

“I thought I could have dined here.”

“No, you can’t,” was the reply, “av ye’re not fond of herrins.”

“And had a bed, too?”

“Nor that either, av ye don’t like straw.”

“And has your mother nothing better than that?” said I, pointing to the miserable plate of fish.

“Whisht, I tell you, and don’t be putting the like in her head: sometimes she hears as well as you or me” — here he dropped his voice to a whisper — “herrins is so cheap that we always make her believe it’s Lent — this is nine year now she’s fasting.” Here a fit of laughing at the success of this innocent ruse, again broke from Corny, in which, as before, his mother joined.

“Then what am I to do,” asked I, “if I can get nothing to eat here? Is there no other house in the village?”

“No, divil a one.”

“How far is it to Loughrea?”

“Fourteen miles and a bit.”

“I can get a car, I suppose?”

“Aye, if Mary Doonan’s boy is not gone back.”



## THE GRAND CANAL HOTEL

The old woman, whose eyes were impatiently fixed upon me during this colloquy, but who heard not a word of what was going forward, now broke in.

"Why does n't he pay the bill and go away? Divil a farthing I'll take off it. Sure av ye were a raal gentleman ye'd be givin' a fip-penny-bit to the gossoon there, that sarved you. Never mind, Corny, dear, I'll buy a bag of marbles for you at Banagher."

Fearful of once more giving way to unseasonable mirth I rushed from the room and hurried downstairs; the crowd that had so lately accompanied me was now scattered, each to his several home. The only one who lingered near the door was the poor idiot (for such he was) that wore the huntsman's dress.

"Is the Loughrea car gone, Joe?" said I, for I remembered his name.

"She is, yer honor, she's away."

"Is there any means of getting over to-night?"

"Barrin' walking, there's none."

"Aye; but," said I, "were I even disposed for that, I have got my luggage."

"Is it heavy?" said Joe.

"This portmanteau and the carpet-bag you see there."

"I'll carry them," was the brief reply.

"You'll not be able, my poor fellow," said I.

"Aye, and you on the top of them."

"You don't know how heavy I am," said I, laughingly.

"Be gorra, I wish you was heavier."

"And why so, Joe?"

"Because one that was so good to the poor is worth his weight in goold any day."

## IRELAND

I do not pretend to say whether it was the flattery, or the promise these words gave me of an agreeable companion en route; but, certain it is, I at once closed with his proposal, and, with a ceremonious bow to the Grand Canal Hotel, took my departure, and set out for Loughrea.

## AN IRISH SCHOOL

[Early part of the nineteenth century]

BY GERALD GRIFFIN

THE schoolhouse at Glendalough was situated near the romantic river which flows between the wild scenery of Drumgoff and the Seven Churches. It was a low stone building, indifferently thatched; the whole interior consisting of one oblong room, floored with clay and lighted by two or three windows, the panes of which were patched with old copy-books, or altogether supplanted by school-slates. The walls had once been plastered and whitewashed, but now partook of that appearance of dilapidation which characterized the whole building. Along each wall was placed a row of large stones, the one intended to furnish seats for the boys — the other for the girls; the decorum of Mr. Lenigan's establishment requiring that they should be kept apart on ordinary occasions; for Mr. Lenigan, it should be understood, had not been favored with any Pestalozzian light. The only chair in the whole establishment was that which was usually occupied by Mr. Lenigan himself, and a table appeared to be a luxury of which they were either ignorant or wholly regardless.

This morning Mr. Lenigan was rather later than his usual hour in taking possession of the chair above alluded to. The sun was mounting swiftly up the heavens. The rows of stones, before described, were already occupied, and the babble of a hundred voices,

## IRELAND

like the sound of a beehive, filled the house. Now and then a schoolboy in frieze coat and corduroy trousers, with an ink-bottle dangling at his breast, a copy-book, slate, Voster, and "reading-book" under one arm, and a sod of turf under the other, dropped in and took his place upon the next unoccupied stone. A great boy, with a huge slate in his arm, stood in the center of the apartment, making a list of all those who were guilty of any indecorum in the absence of "the Masther." Near the door was a blazing turf fire, which the sharp autumnal wind already rendered agreeable. In a corner behind the door lay a heap of fuel formed by the contributions of all the scholars, each being obliged to bring one sod of turf every day, and each having the privilege of sitting by the fire while his own sod was burning. Those who failed to pay their tribute of fuel sat cold and shivering the whole day long at the farther end of the room, huddling together their bare and frost-bitten toes, and casting a long, envious eye toward the peristyle of well marbled shins that surrounded the fire.

Full in the influence of a cherishing flame was placed the hay-bottomed chair that supported the person of Mr. Henry Lenigan, when that great man presided in person in his rural seminary. On his right lay a close bush of hazel, of astonishing size, the emblem of his authority and the instrument of castigation. Near this was a wooden "sthroker," that is to say, a large rule of smooth and polished deal, used for "sthroking" lines in copy-books, and also for "sthroking" the palms of the refractory pupils. On the other side lay a lofty heap of copy-books, which were left there by the boys and girls

## AN IRISH SCHOOL

for the purpose of having their copies "sot" by the "Masther."

About noon a sudden hush was produced by the appearance, at the open door, of a young man dressed in rusty black, and with something clerical in his costume and demeanor. This was Mr. Lenigan's classical assistant; for to himself the volumes of ancient literature were a fountain sealed. Five or six strong young men, all of whom were intended for learned professions, were the only portion of Mr. Lenigan's scholars that aspired to those lofty sources of information. At the sound of the word "Virgil!" from the lips of the assistant, the whole class started from their seats and crowded round him, each brandishing a smoky volume of the great Augustan poet, who, could he have looked into this Irish academy, from that part of the infernal regions in which he has been placed by his pupil Dante, might have been tempted to exclaim in the pathetic words of his own hero —

— Sunt hic etiam sua præmia laudi,  
Sunt lachrimæ rerum et mentem mortalia tangunt.

"Who's head?" was the first question proposed by the assistant, after he had thrown open the volume at that part marked as the day's lesson.

"Jim Naughten, sir."

"Well, Naughten, begin. Consther,<sup>1</sup> consther, now, an' be quick.

At puer Ascanius mediis in vallibus acri  
Gaudet equo; jamque hos cursu, jam præterit illos;  
Spumantemque dari —

Go on, sir, why don't you consther?"

<sup>1</sup> Construc.

## IRELAND

"*At puer Ascanius*," the person so addressed began, "but the boy Ascanius; *mediis in vallibus*, in the middle o' the valleys; *gaudet*, rejoices."

"Exults, *aragal*, exults is a bettther word."

"*Gaudet*, exults; *acri equo*, upon his bittther horse."

"Oh, murther alive, his bittther horse, *inagh?* *Erra*, what would make a horse be bittther, Jim? Sure 't is n't of sour beer he's talkin'! Rejoicin' upon a bittther horse! Dear knows, what a show he was, what *raison* he had for it! *Acri equo*, upon his mettlesome steed, that's the construction."

Jim proceeded:—

"*Acri equo*, upon his mettlesome steed; *jamque*, an' now; *præterit*, he goes beyond —"

"Outsthrrips, *achree!*"

"*Præterit*, he outsthrrips; *hos*, these; *jamque illos*, and now those; *cursu*, in his course; *que*, and; *optat*, he longs —"

"Very good, Jim; 'longs' is a very good word there; I thought you were going to say 'wishes.' Did anybody tell you that?"

"Dickens a one, sir."

"That's a good boy. Well?"

"*Optat*, he longs; *spumantem aprum*, that a foaming boar; *dari*, shall be given; *votis*, to his desires; *aut fulvum leonum*, or that a tawny lion —"

"That's a good word again. 'Tawny' is a good word; bettther than 'yellow.'"

"*Descendere*, shall descend; *monte*, from the mountain."

"Now, boys, observe the beauty of the poet. There's great nature in the picture of the boy Ascanius. Just

## AN IRISH SCHOOL

the same way as we see young Misther Keiley of the Grove, at the fox-chase the other day, leadin' the whole of 'em right and left, *jamque hos, jamque illos*, an' now Misther Cleary, an' now Captain Davis, he outsthripped in his course. A beautiful picture, boys, there is in them four lines, of a fine, high-blooded youth. Yes, people are always the same; times an' manners change, but the heart o' man is the same now as it was in the days of Augustus. But consther your task, Jim, an' then I'll give you an' the boys a little commentary upon its beauties."

The boy obeyed, and read as far as *prætexit nomine culpam*, after which the assistant proceeded to pronounce his little commentary:—

"Now, boys, for what I told ye. Them seventeen lines that Jim Naughten consthrued this minute contains as much as fifty in a modern book. I pointed out to you the picture of Ascanius, an' I'll back it agin the world for nature. Then there's the incipient storm—

Interea magno misceri murmure cælum  
Incipit:

*Erra*, don't be talkin', but listen to that! There's a rumblin' in the language like the sound of comin' thundher—

— insequitur commista grandine nimbus.

D'ye hear the change? D'ye hear all the S's? D'ye hear 'em whistlin'? D'ye hear the black squall comin' up the hillside, brushin' up the dust an' dhry leaves off the road, and hissin' through the threes an' brushes— an' d'ye hear the hail dhivin' afther, an' spatterin' the



## IRELAND

leaves, an' whitenin' the face of the counthry? *Com-mista grandine nimbus!* That I might n't sin, but when I read them words, I gather my head down between my shoulders, as if it was hailin' a-top o' me. An' then the sighth of all the huntin' party! Dido, an' the Throjans, an' all the great coort ladies, an' the Tyrian companions scatthered like cracked people about the place, lookin' for shelter, an' peltin' about right an' left, hether an' thether in all directions for the bare life, an' the floods swellin' an' comin' thunderin' down in rivers from the mountains, an' all in three lines —

Et Tyrii comites passim, et Trojana juvenus,  
Dandanisque nepos Veneris, diversa per agros  
Tecta metu petiere: ruunt de montibus amnes.

An' see the beauty of the poet, followin' up the character of Ascanius; he makes him the last to quit the field. First the Tyrian comrades, an effeminate race, that ran at the sight of a shower, as if they were made o' salt, that they 'd melt under it, and then the Throjan youth, lads that were used to it in the first book; and last of all, the spirited boy Ascanius himself — (Silence near the doore!)

Speluncam Dido, dux et Trojanus eandem,  
Deveniunt.

Observe, boys, he no longer calls him, as of old, *pius Æneas*, only *dux Trojanus*. There's where Virgil took the crust out of Homer's mouth, in the neatness of his language, that you'd gather a part o' the feelin' from the very shape o' the line an' turn o' the prosody. As, formerly, when Dido was askin' Æneas concerning

## AN IRISH SCHOOL

where he came from, an' where he was bound, he makes answer —

*Est locus, Hesperiam Graii, cognomine dicunt:  
Terra antiqua, potens armis, atque ubere glebæ,  
Huc cursus fuit.*

An' there the line stops short, as much as to say, just as I cut this line short in spakin' to you, just so our coorse was cut in going to Italy. The same way, when Juno is vexed in talkin' o' the Throjans, he makes her spake bad Latin to show how mad she is: — (Silence!)

*Mene incepto desistere victam  
Nec posse Italia Teucrorum avertere regem?  
Quippe vetor fatis! Pallasne exurere classem  
Argivum, atque ipsos potuit submergere ponto.*

So he laves you to guess what a passion she is in, when he makes her lave an infinitive mood without anything to govern it. You can't attribute it to ignorance, for it would be a dhroll thing in airnest if Juno, the queen of all the gods, did n't know a common rule in syntax; so that you have nothing for it but to say that she must be in the very moral of a fury. Such, boys, is the art o' poets, an' the janius o' languages.

"But I kept ye long enough. Go along to yer Greek now as fast as ye can, an' rehearse. An' as for ye," continued the learned commentator, turning to a mass of English scholars, "I see one comin' over the river that'll taich ye how to behave yerselves, as it is a thing ye won't do for me. Put up yer Virgils now, boys, an' out with the Greek, an' remember the beauties I pointed out to ye, if ye have n't the luck to think of 'em yerselves."

## IRELAND

The class separated, and a hundred anxious eyes were directed towards the open door. It afforded the glimpse of a sunny green and babbling river, over which Mr. Lenigan, followed by his brother David, was now observed in the act of picking his cautious way. At this apparition a sudden change took place in the entire condition of the school. Stragglers flew to their places; the impatient burst of laughter was cut short; the growing bit of rage was quelled; the uplifted hand dropped harmless by the side of its owner; merry faces grew serious, and angry ones peaceable; the eyes of all seemed poring on their books; and the extravagant uproar of the last half-hour was hushed on a sudden into a diligent murmur. Those who were most proficient in the study of the "Masther's" physiognomy detected in the expression of his eyes, as he entered and greeted his assistant, something of a troubled and uneasy character. He took the list with a severe countenance from the hands of the boy above mentioned, sent all those names he found upon the fatal record to kneel down in a corner until he should find leisure to "haire" them, and prepared to enter upon his daily functions.

For the present, however, the delinquents are saved by the entrance of a fresh character upon the scene. The newcomer was a handsome young woman, who carried a pet child in her arms and held another by the hand. The sensation of pleasure which ran among the young culprits at her appearance showed her to be their "great Captain's Captain," the beloved and loving helpmate of Mr. Lenigan. Casting, unperceived by her lord, an encouraging smile toward the kneeling culprits, she took an opportunity, while engaged in a wheedling conversa-

## AN IRISH SCHOOL

tion with her husband, to purloin his deal rule and to blot out the list of the proscribed from the slate, after which she stole out, calling David to dig the potatoes for dinner.

And so we, too, will leave the school.

## THE WINNING BACK OF THE LAND

[1808-1903]

BY CHARLES JOHNSTON AND CARITA SPENCER

GREAT as was the need for emancipation, it was as nothing compared to the distress and suffering caused by the deplorable social and economic condition of the country. The relations between landlord and tenant were worse than at any past time, and every year brought new and heavier taxes, instead of lessening the burdens which the people already bore. Each man in the long series of middlemen, as well as the tenant and the landlord at the two ends of the series, had to gain a profit from the same acre of land, and no one was willing to spend money on improving the quality of the land. If it be asked why, the answer is simple. The tenant held his land from year to year, at the will of the landlord, and, if he made improvements, and so increased the value of the land, he would be called on to pay a greater rent, or leave his holding. The middlemen would not make improvements, because whoever stood next above them in the scale of extortion would immediately have demanded a greater payment. The landlord made no improvements, because he was accustomed to think of himself as a man with rights and privileges, and never as a man with duties and obligations. The result was, that a piece of land was allowed to go from bad to worse, and was finally rented, for an excessive sum, to a peasant so poor that he could not improve it in any way, and could

## THE WINNING BACK OF THE LAND

barely make a starvation wage for himself and his family.

In England, the landlord was the agricultural partner of his tenant, investing large sums of money in improvements, such as drains, fences, outhouses, and so forth; so that the value of the land steadily rose. But nothing of the kind existed in Ireland. Frequently whole towns were owned by one man, who thus had it in his power to exact what rents he pleased. At the time of the Union, the population of Ireland amounted to about four and a half millions. It now began to increase rapidly. The landlords permitted, and even encouraged, extreme subdivision of land, so that they might collect rents from as many tenants as possible.

The peasants came to grow potatoes more and more exclusively, since this was the cheapest crop, and that which most easily sustained life without further outlay. It is recorded that often during this time the poor peasant would plant his potatoes at the proper season, and then go off to England to work for some English farmer, and so try to make a little money. Meanwhile, his family was left almost penniless, to beg or borrow. He would come back in time to dig his potato crop in the autumn, and in this way he could earn more than by growing corn and a variety of crops. Then we must not forget the innumerable taxes he had to pay, and the repeated injustice he suffered at the hands of the middlemen and tax-gatherers. It was nothing unusual for a peasant to be forced to pay rent twice over, to different middlemen, both claiming the same piece of ground, and to have his cattle sold before his eyes, if he resisted these demands. All this was known to Parliament, or at least

## IRELAND

ought to have been known, since it had all been graphically described by Irish members. But no notice was taken of it. . . .

The question of the land was now the gravest which remained to be solved. It involved the right to work, the right to earn food for one's family, the right to possess a home. A ferment of agitation gradually spread through the country which culminated in the formation of the Land League in 1879. The inspirer of this movement was Michael Davitt, but it owed much of its success to the commanding genius of Charles Stewart Parnell. The Land League meant the organizing of a nation in defense of its rights, and was far more effective than any armed rebellion. Its three immediate objects were "Fair Rent," "Fixed Hold," and "Free Sale."

By "Fair Rent" it was meant that the rent to be paid by a tenant should not be fixed arbitrarily by a grasping landlord, but should be justly decided by a court, after examining the land and judging of its extent and fertility. "Fixed Hold" meant that the tenant should be entitled to hold his farm in security without fear of eviction or extortion, so long as he paid the fair rent decided on by the court. "Free Sale" meant that the tenant was entitled to sell his interest in his farm to a new tenant, that interest representing the capital he had invested in improving the farm, in fencing, draining, clearing, and building.

The Land League represented the organized demand for these things; and every detail of the question was made thoroughly clear to the peasants of every part of Ireland, at great public meetings, addressed by Parnell and his lieutenants. At first, Parnell had greatly



## THE WINNING BACK OF THE LAND

doubted whether the Irish people would take up the land question in a serious way. "Do you think," he asked one of the older patriots, "that the Irish people will take part in an agitation for land reform?" "I think," replied the patriot, "that to settle the land question, the Irish people would go to the gates of hell."

From Ireland, the agitation spread to the United States. An extensive organization was there formed which set itself the task of providing the "sinews of war." A parliamentary fund was collected, and Parnell was soon in a position to provide for his army of parliamentary followers, who were thus able to leave their other occupations and devote themselves wholly to the work of reform. Parnell commanded a parliamentary party of eighty-six members, and never was a party so well led and so finely disciplined. Following the example set by Joseph Biggar, of making long speeches and raising technical obstacles, Parnell perfected the system of parliamentary obstruction. He made it impossible for the English Parliament to carry on its work before it had done justice to Ireland.

Meanwhile, the political situation was rapidly changing in England. The Conservative Government fell, and Gladstone was returned to power, in 1880, as the head of a strong Liberal Government. The Land League agitation had penetrated to every part of Ireland, and had aroused such strong feelings against extortion and injustice that acts of violence and outrage were frequent. Gladstone proclaimed the Land League an unlawful body, and its leaders, including Parnell, were arrested and thrown into prison. Gladstone determined, however, to settle the question of the land

## IRELAND

as he had settled the question of the Church in 1869. He therefore drew up the famous Land Bill of 1881, which secured to the Irish people the three objects that had been agitated for thirty years: Fair Rent, Fixed Hold, and Free Sale. A Land Court was established, with power to hold sessions in every part of Ireland, to fix fair rents, which were thenceforth called "judicial" rents, and to decide on the value of improvements made by a tenant on his farm, in order to secure him in the enjoyment of these improvements. This was a splendid measure, and the good it has done is incalculable.

But many evils had survived from the past, and were destined long to survive. A series of crops, almost as bad as in the famine years, had reduced the tenants to dire poverty, and often to starvation. Yet the landlords insisted on exacting the full arrears of rent, which they had arbitrarily imposed before the days of the Land Court. The consequence was that acts of violence increased, carried on chiefly by secret societies, such as the "Moonlighters" and the "Invincibles." Gladstone grew disgusted with the attempt to rule Ireland by force and coercion, and came to an agreement with Parnell, then in Kilmainham Jail, under which he was to receive Parnell's support in Parliament, in return for measures beneficial to Ireland. . . .

Gladstone's Ministry fell from power in 1885, and Lord Salisbury and the Conservatives returned to office. Their policy was marked by two principles: first, steady opposition to the agitation of the Land League and the lawlessness which followed in its wake; and second, an organized, methodical, and enlightened attempt to remove the causes of Irish poverty and

## THE WINNING BACK OF THE LAND

misery, one by one. They passed the first Land Purchase Act in 1885, a measure to enable the tenants to buy their farms from the landlords, and so to be rid of the exactions and the extortions of rent, once and forever. The English Government placed a sum of \$25,000,000 in cash at the disposal of the Irish farmers, who could borrow as much as they required to buy their farms at once. They were to repay the Government by installments spread out over forty-nine years, at the end of which time they would be absolute owners of the soil. Several thousand more tenants became owners, and reduced the amount they had to pay yearly by about one third. This measure has worked admirably, and the sense of security gained by the farmers has already begun to call forth the qualities of thrift, industry, and providence, which the former conditions of land tenure in Ireland had done everything to destroy. . . .

Arthur James Balfour became Chief Secretary for Ireland in 1887. In this post he played two widely different rôles: first, as the opponent of the Irish party in the House of Commons, he was cool, polite, satirical, and very determined; second, in Ireland itself, he sincerely and effectively studied the wants of the Irish people and set himself to devise remedies to meet them. The second Land Purchase Bill was passed in 1888, by which a second sum of \$25,000,000 was put at the disposal of Irish tenants who wished to purchase their farms. Mr. Balfour also turned his attention to what are called the "congested districts" in the west of Ireland. The condition in these districts has been well described by T. W. Russell, one of the most gifted of the Liberal Unionists: "A great part of the crowded population of the western

## IRELAND

seaboard live subject to the most shocking conditions. The land is in many places hardly worth cultivating. The riches of the sea are not for these poor people; they have no boats, no capital. The skill of the fisherman has ceased to be developed; and even were the fish caught, the market does not exist, i.e., there are no means of transit thereto. Struggling for a wretched existence upon these arid patches of soil, growing potatoes and little else, feeding a pig and rearing a scarecrow of a calf — this is the method by which thousands of human beings drag out a miserable existence."

Balfour set himself to remedy this by extending a system of railways through the "congested districts," obtaining a grant of seven million dollars from Parliament for that purpose. In 1891, Balfour went very much further. He had been convinced by this time, and had convinced his party, that in land purchase lay the solution of the Irish question. He obtained a new advance from Parliament, this time for \$170,000,000, to be applied for the purchase of farms by the farmers. He also formed the "Congested Districts Board," which was charged with the duty of purchasing land under the Purchase Acts for the purpose of "enlarging and consolidating farms, of improving the breed of horses, cattle, and poultry, aiding the fishing industry by erecting piers and boat-slips, by the supply of boats and fish-curing stations, and of developing agriculture and other industry." Thus a constructive period gradually replaced the work of confiscation which England had carried on in Ireland during centuries. . . .

The cultivators of Ireland have for over a generation had an opportunity of buying back their lands by install-

## THE WINNING BACK OF THE LAND

ments. More than six thousand tenants purchased their farms under the Irish Church Act of 1869. The Land Acts of 1870 and 1881 each turned nearly a thousand tenants into proprietors. The Land Purchase Act of 1885 extended the same privilege to two thousand more. The Land Purchase Acts of 1891 and 1896 turned into owners of the soil no less than thirty-seven thousand former tenants. . . .

Arthur James Balfour became Prime Minister in 1902, with George Wyndham, a descendant of Lord Edward Fitzgerald, as Chief Secretary for Ireland. He decided to settle the Irish land question once for all, and as far as possible to sweep the Irish landlords out of existence. Parnell had said: "When the Irish landlords are as anxious to go as we are to get rid of them, the land question will be practically solved." Wyndham saw that the time was rapidly approaching when this would be true. Through the operation of Gladstone's Land Courts the rents had been twice lowered all over Ireland. A third settlement of these rents was approaching. It has long been the custom in Ireland to make the selling-value of the land depend upon the rent. In general, land is sold for a sum of money equal to the rent for twenty years; thus, if the rent of a farm were a hundred dollars a year, its selling-value would be two thousand dollars. In Ireland this is expressed by saying that the land is sold at "twenty years' purchase." If the Land Court reduced the rent to seventy-five dollars a year, the selling-value of the farm would fall to fifteen hundred dollars, so much sheer loss to the landlord.

The Irish landlords had now seen the value of their property shrink twice under the operation of the Land

## IRELAND

Courts. A third shrinkage was rapidly approaching. This gave Wyndham his opportunity. His new Land Purchase Bill included two propositions: First, to put at the disposal of the Irish tenants a sum of English money so large that practically every tenant in Ireland could take advantage of it; and, second, to induce the landlords to part with their farms by offering them a bonus equal to about one eighth of the selling-price of the land. Thus the tenant was able to buy cheap, while the landlord sold dear, both parties being in an extremely satisfactory position. Wyndham made it possible for the whole nation to buy back the land, and for the first time in history a whole people undertook the work of national redemption on the installment plan. Wyndham's bill became law, and came into operation on November 1, 1903.

A government report recently printed sheds a flood of light on the working of Land Purchase during the thirty-four years preceding Wyndham's Act. It is found that, though the land has always been the first care of the purchasing tenants, the houses, both dwelling and farm buildings, have been very materially improved since they became owners of the soil. In all the four provinces, this is the general testimony. New buildings have sprung up, old ones have been repaired. On some estates, where the condition of purchased and non-purchased holdings can be contrasted, it is found that, while the houses on the former have been much improved, on the latter they are in a very neglected state. The middleman has been done away with. Subletting and subdivision are practically extinct. Tenants will no longer sell part of their farms. "I could well perceive,"



## THE WINNING BACK OF THE LAND

says one of the English land inspectors, "the love that these people have for their little homes, and how desperate must be their position before parting with them; and purchase seems to make them cling to them even more than before." Not less favorable is the verdict as to the credit and solvency of the new purchasers. It has increased all around, as is testified to by local bankers and shopkeepers, who are in a position to know best. A very good symptom is the fact that these new land-owners are chary of getting into debt, and think twice before they borrow money, even when their credit is good.

We can well see that a great moral change must accompany this steady material regeneration. A feeling of safety is everywhere springing up, in place of the "paralyzing insecurity and doubt that prevailed for generations." A group of tenant-purchasers in Roscommon declare that "since they have got a hold of the land," they have not spared themselves in making improvements, which will be their own for all time. A parish priest in Cavan says that "purchase has brought peace. The people are more industrious, more sober, and more hopeful as to their future prospects." The police say that, before purchase, they found the people troublesome and unruly, but now all is changed, and quietness and order reign instead. The tenant-purchasers are full of supreme contentment at their altered situation. A priest in Fermanagh says the people in his parish are more industrious now, while the consumption of whiskey has diminished by a third. The evidence of these two ecclesiastics vividly recalls the words put in the mouth of the Irish by Sir R. Kane in 1844: "We were



## IRELAND

reckless, ignorant, improvident, and idle; we were idle, for we had nothing to do; we were reckless, for we had no hope; we were ignorant, for learning was denied us; we were improvident, for we had no future; we were drunken, for we sought to forget our misery."

AN IRISH COTTAGE

## AN IRISH COTTAGE

THIS "beehive cottage" with roped roof is in County Donegal, and is apparently one of the better sort. William Eleroy Curtis thus describes one even humbler than this, in what are known as the "congested districts; that is, the barren regions in which the Irish were forced to settle when their fertile lands were confiscated by the English." He says: "The walls were of rude stones, piled one on another without mortar, and the roof was made of straw. There was no floor but the earth, no furniture but the hard wooden bench, a table, and a three-legged stool. There was no window, and the only light that there was came through the door, which opened into a loathsome barnyard, where the filth was ankle-deep and the stench almost insufferable."

The Government has for years been striving to induce families to leave these "congested districts" and remove to more fertile and less crowded parts of Ireland. In many cases the tenants are given farming implements, seeds, and aid in restocking their farms. Often comfortable houses are also provided at no higher rent than had been paid for wretched hovels.





## THE IRISH PEOPLE

[Twentieth century]

BY KATHARINE TYNAN

I MUST warn you, before proceeding to write about the Irish people, that I have tried to explain them, according to my capacity, a thousand times to my English friends and neighbors, and have been pulled up short as many times by the reflection that all I have been saying was contradicted by some other aspect of my country-people. For we are an eternally contradictory people, and none of us can prognosticate exactly what we shall feel, what do, under given circumstances; whereas the Englishman is simple. He has no mysteries. Once you know him, you can pretty well tell what he will say, what feel, and do under given circumstances. You have a formula for him: you have no formula for the Irish. The Englishman is simple, the Irish, complex. The Anglo-Irish, who stand to most English people for the Irish, have had grafted on to them the complexity of the Irish without their pliability. It makes, perhaps, the most puzzling of all mixtures, and it may be the chief difficulty in a proper estimate of the Irish character.

They will tell you in Ireland that you have to go some forty or fifty miles from Dublin before you get into Irish Ireland. There are a good many Irish in Anglo-Ireland, usually in the humbler walks of life, whence you shall find in Dublin servants, car-drivers, policemen, newspaper boys, and so on, the raciness, the vivacity,

## IRELAND

the charm, which in Irish Ireland is a perpetual delight. Dublin drawing-rooms are not vivacious, nor are the manners gracious, although the Four Courts still produce a galaxy of wit, and Dublin citizens buttonhole each other with good stories all along the streets, roaring with laughter in a way that would be regarded as Bedlam in Fleet Street.

Get into Irish Ireland and the manners have a graciousness which is like a blessing. I asked the way in Ballyshannon town once. The woman who directed me came out into the street and a little way with me, and when she left me called to me sweetly, "Come back soon to Donegal!" which left a sense of blessing with me all that day. There was a certain curly-haired "Wullie," who drove the long car from Donegal to Killybegs. I can see "Wullie" yet helping the women on and off the car with their myriad packages, can see the delightful grief with which he parted from us, his shining face of welcome when he met us again a fortnight later. To set against "Wullie" were the car-drivers, who certainly are unpleasant if the "whip-money" does not come up to their expectations. We say of such that they are "spoilt by the tourists," yet I remember some who were not spoilt by the tourists, although they were perpetually in touch with them — boatmen and pony-boys at Killarney; and a certain delightful guide, whose winning gayety was not at all merely professional.

Thinking over my country-people, I say, "They are so-and-so," and then I have a misgiving, and I say, "But, after all, they are not so-and-so."

They are the most generous people in the world. They enjoy to the fullest the delight of giving; and what a



## THE IRISH PEOPLE

good delight that is! I pity the ungiving people. You will receive more gifts in Ireland in a twelvemonth than in a lifetime out of it. The first instinct of Irish liking or loving is to give you something. The giving instinct runs through all classes. If you sit down in a cabin and see an old piece of lusterware or something else of the sort, do not admire it unless you mean to accept it; for it will be offered to you, not in the Spanish way which does not expect acceptance, but in the Irish way which does. I have many little bits of china given so, usually the one thing of any consideration or value the donor possessed. I once sought to buy an old china dish, much flawed and cracked by hot ovens, in a Dublin hotel, as much to save it from following its fellows to destruction as for any other reason. The owner would not sell the dish, but he offered it for my acceptance in such a way that I could not refuse. When I go back to my old home, the cottagers bring a few new-laid eggs or a griddle-cake for my acceptance. I have a friend in an Irish village whose income from an official source is £10 a year. She has a cottage, a few hens, and enough grass for a cow when she can get one. Her gifts come at Christmas, at Easter, on St. Patrick's Day, and on some special, private feasts of my own—eggs, sweets, flowers, a bit of lace, or a fine embroidered handkerchief, and, in times of illness, a pair of chickens. That is royal giving out of so little; and I assure you that it blesses the giver as well as the recipient.

On the other hand, the farmers grow thriftier and thriftier. Sir Horace Plunkett and men like him, truly patriotic Irishmen, are showing them the way. Successive Land Acts lift them more and more into a posi-

## IRELAND

tion of security from one of precariousness. They have more money now to put in the savings banks. Their prosperity does not mean a higher standard of living, although that is badly needed. It means more money in the banks — that is all.

The Irish are very like the French. If the day should come when they should learn, like the French, to be thrifty and usurious, I hope I shall not be there to see it. Better — a thousand times better — that they should remain royal wastrels to the end.

As yet we need not fear it. Still, if you ask a drink of water at a mountain cabin in the poorest parts of Ireland, you are given milk; and *do not offer to pay for it*, lest you sink to the lowest place in the estimation of these splendid givers.

The hospitality is truly splendid. There is a saying in Ireland that they always put an extra bit in the pot for "the man coming over the hill." It is an unheard-of thing that you should call at an Irish house and not be asked if "you've a mouth on you." If your visit be within anything like measurable distance of meal-time, you will be obliged to stay for the meal.

In England, when people are poor, or comparatively so, or feel the need of retrenchment, they "do not entertain." It is almost the first form of retrenchment which suggests itself to the Englishman; whereas to curtail his hospitalities would be the last form of retrenchment to an Irishman, and you will be entertained generously and lavishly by people you know to be poor. The Englishman's different way of looking at the matter is no doubt partly due to the fact that he is a much more domestic person than the Irishman, and depends mainly on his

## THE IRISH PEOPLE

family life for his happiness and pleasure. Now, the French do not give hospitality at all outside the large family circle, so that in that regard, at least, the Irish will have a long way to travel before they touch with the French.

I have said that the Irish are not domestic. They are gregarious, but not domestic. The Irishman depends a deal on the neighbors; he has no such way of inclosing himself in a little fortified place of home against all the ills of the world as has the Englishman. Irish mothers, like Irish nurses, are often tenderly, exquisitely soft and warm; but the young ones will fly out of the nest for all that. Perhaps the art of making the home pleasant is not an Irish art. Perhaps it is the gregariousness, general and not particular, — at least, general in the sense of embracing the parish and not the family. To the young Irish and a good many of their elders the home is dull. They go off to America, leaving the old people to loneliness, because there is no amusement. They do not make their own interests, as the slower, less vivacious nations do. The rainy Irish climate seems made for a people who would find their pleasures indoors. But the Irish will be out and about, telling good stories and hearing them. They are an artistic people, with great traditions; yet books or music or conversation will not keep them at home. If they cannot have the neighbors in, they will go out to the neighbors.

They are very religious, and accept the invisible world with a thoroughness and simplicity of belief which they would say themselves is their most precious inheritance. The Celt is no materialist. He does not love success or riches; most of those whom he holds in esteem have been

## IRELAND

neither successful nor rich. Money is not the passport to his affections. He ought never to go away, and, alas! he goes away in thousands! Contact with the selfish, money-getting materialism has power to destroy the spiritual qualities of the Celt, once he is outside Ireland. When he comes back — a prosperous Irish-American — he is no longer the Celt we loved. And he does come back: that is one of his contradictions. The home he had left behind because of its dullness, the arid patch of mountain-land, the graves of his people, call him back again at the moment when one would have said every bond with them was loosened.

WALES

I

LEGENDS OF WALES

## HISTORICAL NOTE

WHEN the Saxons invaded Britain, in the fifth century, the inhabitants were driven to the westward and mingled with their kinsmen in Wales. The conquest of these kinsmen was slow, for they made a most determined resistance. The "King Arthur" of Tennyson's "Idylls" is thought to have been one of their leaders, as was also Cadwallon. In the eleventh century, an English army overran Wales; but not until the days of William the Conqueror did any English ruler succeed in obliging the Welsh to recognize him as sovereign. This recognition was given most grudgingly, and in order to prevent these unwilling subjects from making raids upon the English territories, the land along the borders or marches was granted to Norman nobles, "lords marchers," as they were called; and there they built their strongholds. They were an independent folk, these marchers, but they held back the Welsh, and therefore they had to be endured.

## KING ARTHUR

BY BESSIE RAYNOR PARKES

WHEN good King Arthur ruled this land,  
He dwelt at Caerleon-upon-Usk;  
He held it with an armed right hand,  
And drank red wine from dawn till dusk.

How stalwart were the warriors then,  
In our time no such maidens are:  
King Arthur was the first of men,  
The fairest dame Queen Guenevar.

When Merlin waved his silver wand,  
None dared dispute its awful spells;  
On summer nights the moonlit strand  
Was musical with fairy bells.

And all the knights in Arthur's court  
Made glorious that enchanted spot;  
And who was first in every sport, —  
Ah, who was loved but Launcelot!

How bright the armor which they wore  
When setting out at morning-tide, —  
The silken banners which they bore,  
By gentle hands were wrought and dyed.



## WALES

And who shall rise, and who shall fall,  
When they the robber-bands assail;  
And whose pure hands shall duty call  
To seek and find the Holy Grail!

Fair company of noble knights  
That ride in that mysterious land,  
And celebrate your mystic rites  
With stainless sword in stainless hand.

Ah, where is Caerleon-upon-Usk!  
Though somewhere in the south of Wales,  
The wanderer there, at gathering dusk,  
When dreaming o'er these ancient tales,

Will hardly see such lovely dames,  
Will hardly meet such noble men,  
Till bards and prophets prove their claims,  
And good King Arthur comes again!

## THE DREAM OF MAXEN WLEDIG.

### FROM THE MABINOGION

["MABINOGION" is a general term, used for the old Welsh tales and romances. In the following tale, "Maxen" is that Maximus whom, in 383, his soldiers proclaimed Emperor of Rome.

*The Editor.]*

MAXEN WLEDIG was Emperor of Rome, and he was a comelier man, and a better and a wiser than any emperor that had been before him. And one day he held a council of kings, and he said to his friends, "I desire to go to-morrow to hunt." And the next day in the morning he set forth with his retinue, and came to the valley of the river that flowed towards Rome. And he hunted through the valley until midday. And with him also were two and thirty crowned kings, that were his vassals; not for the delight of hunting went the emperor with them, but to put himself on equal terms with those kings.

And the sun was high in the sky over their heads, and the heat was great. And sleep came upon Maxen Wledig. And his attendants stood and set up their shields around him upon the shafts of their spears to protect him from the sun, and they placed a gold enameled shield under his head; and so Maxen slept.

And he saw a dream. And this is the dream that he saw. He was journeying along the valley of the river towards its source; and he came to the highest moun-

## WALES

tain in the world. And he thought that the mountain was as high as the sky; and when he came over the mountain, it seemed to him that he went through the fairest and most level regions that man ever yet beheld, on the other side of the mountain. And he saw large and mighty rivers descending from the mountain to the sea, and towards the mouths of the rivers he proceeded. And as he journeyed thus, he came to the mouth of the largest river ever seen. And he beheld a great city at the entrance of the river, and a vast castle in the city, and he saw many high towers of various colors in the castle. And he saw a fleet at the mouth of the river, the largest ever seen. And he saw one ship among the fleet; larger was it by far, and fairer than all the others. Of such part of the ship as he could see above the water, one plank was gilded and the other silvered over. He saw a bridge of the bone of the whale from the ship to the land, and he thought that he went along the bridge, and came into the ship. And a sail was hoisted on the ship, and along the sea and the ocean was it borne. Then it seemed that he came to the fairest island in the whole world, and he traversed the island from sea to sea, even to the farthest shore of the island. Valleys he saw, and steeps, and rocks of wondrous height, and rugged precipices. Never yet saw he the like. And thence he beheld an island in the sea, facing this rugged land. And between him and this island was a country of which the plain was as large as the sea, the mountain as vast as the wood. And from the mountain he saw a river that flowed through the land and fell into the sea. And at the mouth of the river he beheld a castle the fairest that ever man saw, and the gate of the castle was open, and he went into the castle.

## THE DREAM OF MAXEN WLEDIG

And in the castle he saw a fair hall of which the roof seemed to be all gold, the walls of the hall seemed to be entirely of glittering precious gems, the doors all seemed to be of gold. Golden seats he saw in the hall, and silver tables. And on a seat opposite to him, he beheld two auburn-haired youths playing at chess. He saw a silver board for the chess, and golden pieces thereon. The garments of the youths were of jet-black satin, and chaplets of ruddy gold bound their hair, whereon were sparkling jewels of great price, rubies, and gems, alternately with imperial stones. Buskins of new cordovan leather were on their feet, fastened by slides of red gold.

And beside a pillar in the hall, he saw a hoary-headed man, in a chair of ivory, with the figures of two eagles of ruddy gold thereon. Bracelets of gold were upon his arms, and many rings upon his hands, and a golden torquis about his neck; and his hair was bound with a golden diadem. He was of powerful aspect. A chess-board of gold was before him, and a rod of gold, and a steel file in his hand. And he was carving out chessmen.

And he saw a maiden sitting before him in a chair of ruddy gold. Not more easy than to gaze upon the sun when brightest, was it to look upon her by reason of her beauty. A vest of white silk was upon the maiden, with clasps of red gold at the breast; and a surcoat of gold tissue was upon her, and a frontlet of red gold upon her head, and rubies and gems were in the frontlet, alternating with pearls and imperial stones. And a girdle of ruddy gold was around her. She was the fairest sight that man ever beheld.

## WALES

The maiden arose from her chair before him, and he threw his arms about the neck of the maiden, and they two sat down together in the chair of gold: and the chair was not less roomy for them both than for the maiden alone. And as he had his arms about the maiden's neck, and his cheek by her cheek, behold, through the chafing of the dogs at their leashing, and the clashing of the shields as they struck against each other, and the beating together of the shafts of the spears, and the neighing of the horses and their prancing, the emperor awoke.

And when he awoke, nor spirit nor existence was left him, because of the maiden whom he had seen in his sleep, for the love of the maiden pervaded his whole frame. Then his household spake upon him. "Lord," said they, "is it not past the time for thee to take thy food?" Thereupon the emperor mounted his palfrey, the saddest man that mortal ever saw, and went forth towards Rome.

And thus he was during the space of a week. When they of the household went to drink wine and mead out of golden vessels, he went not with any of them. When they went to listen to songs and tales, he went not with them there; neither could he be persuaded to do anything but sleep. And as often as he slept, he beheld in his dreams the maiden he loved best; but except when he slept he saw nothing of her, for he knew not where in the world she was.

One day the page of the chamber spake unto him; now although he was page of the chamber, he was King of the Romans. "Lord," said he, "all thy people revile thee." "Wherefore do they revile me?" asked the emperor. "Because they can get neither message nor answer from

## THE DREAM OF MAXEN WLEDIG

thee, as men should have from their lord. This is the cause why thou art spoken evil of." "Youth," said the emperor, "do thou bring unto me the wise men of Rome, and I will tell them why I am sorrowful."

Then the wise men of Rome were brought to the emperor, and he spake to them. "Sages of Rome," said he, "I have seen a dream. And in the dream I beheld a maiden, and because of the maiden is there neither life nor spirit, nor existence within me." "Lord," they answered, "since thou judgest us worthy to counsel thee, we will give thee counsel. And this is our counsel; that thou send messengers for three years to the three parts of the world, to seek for thy dream. And as thou knowest not what day or what night good news may come to thee, the hope thereof will support thee."

So the messengers journeyed for the space of a year, wandering about the world, and seeking tidings concerning his dream. But when they came back at the end of the year, they knew not one word more than they did the day they set forth. And then was the emperor exceedingly sorrowful, for he thought that he should never have tidings of her whom best he loved.

Then spoke the King of the Romans unto the emperor. "Lord," said he, "go forth to hunt by the way that thou didst seem to go, whether it were to the east or to the west." So the emperor went forth to hunt, and he came to the bank of the river. "Behold," said he, "this is where I was when I saw the dream, and I went towards the source of the river westward."

And thereupon thirteen messengers of the emperor's set forth, and before them they saw a high mountain, which seemed to them to touch the sky. Now this was

## WALES

the guise in which the messengers journeyed; one sleeve was on the cap of each of them in front, as a sign that they were messengers, in order that through what hostile land soever they might pass no harm might be done them. And when they were come over this mountain, they beheld vast plains, and large rivers flowing there-through. "Behold," said they, "the land which our master saw."

And they went along the mouths of the rivers, until they came to the mighty river which they saw flowing to the sea, and the vast city, and the many-colored high towers of the castle. They saw the largest fleet in the world, in the harbor of the river, and one ship that was larger than any of the others. "Behold again," said they, "the dream that our master saw." And in the great ship they crossed the sea, and came to the island of Britain. And they traversed the island until they came to Snowdon. "Behold," said they, "the rugged land that our master saw." And they went forward until they saw Anglesey before them, and until they saw Arvon likewise. "Behold," said they, "the land our master saw in his sleep." And they saw Aber Sain, and a castle at the mouth of the river. The portal of the castle saw they open, and into the castle they went, and they saw a hall in the castle. Then said they, "Behold, the hall which he saw in his sleep."

They went into the hall, and they beheld two youths playing at chess on the golden bench. And they beheld the hoary-headed man beside the pillar, in the ivory chair, carving chessmen. And they beheld the maiden sitting on a chair of ruddy gold.

The messengers bent down upon their knees. "Em-



## THE DREAM OF MAXEN WLEDIG

press of Rome, all hail!" "Ha, gentles," said the maiden, "ye bear the seeming of honorable men, and the badge of envoys, what mockery is this ye do to me?" "We mock thee not, lady, but the Emperor of Rome hath seen thee in his sleep, and he has neither life nor spirit left because of thee. Thou shalt have of us therefore the choice, lady, whether thou wilt go with us and be made Empress of Rome, or that the emperor come hither and take thee for his wife." "Ha, lords," said the maiden, "I will not deny what ye say, neither will I believe it too well. If the emperor love me, let him come here to seek me."

And by day and night the messengers hied them back. And when their horses failed, they bought other fresh ones. And when they came to Rome, they saluted the emperor, and asked their boon, which was given to them according as they named it. "We will be thy guides, lord," said they, "over sea and over land, to the place where is the woman whom best thou lovest, for we know her name, and her kindred, and her race."

And immediately the emperor set forth with his army. And these men were his guides. Towards the Island of Britain they went over the sea and the deep. And he conquered the island from Beli, the son of Manogan, and his sons, and drove them to the sea, and went forward even unto Arvon. And the emperor knew the land when he saw it. And when he beheld the castle of Aber Sain, "Look yonder," said he, "there is the castle wherein I saw the damsel whom I best love." And he went forward into the castle and into the hall, and there he saw Kynan, the son of Eudav, and Adcon, the son of Eudav, playing at chess. And he saw Eudav, the son of

## WALES

Caradawc, sitting on a chair of ivory carving chessmen. And the maiden whom he had beheld in his sleep, he saw sitting on a chair of gold. "Empress of Rome," said he, "all hail!" And the emperor threw his arms about her neck; and that night she became his bride.

# BETH GELERT; OR THE GRAVE OF THE GREYHOUND

[About 1220]

BY WILLIAM ROBERT SPENCER

[THE Llewelyn whose hasty temper was the death of his faithful dog was Llewelyn ap Jorwerth, or Llewelyn the Great. He brought both Norman barons and Welsh chieftains under his rule, and gave valiant assistance to the barons in their struggle to force King John to sign Magna Charta. Unluckily for the probability of the story of Gelert, tales greatly similar to this have been found in Russian, Sanscrit, Arabian, and many other languages. The Welsh version has been handed down by tradition for seven hundred years, and is generally received throughout Wales. Of the so-called tomb of Gelert, George Borrow says: —

“The tomb, or what is said to be the tomb, of Gelert, stands in a beautiful meadow just below the precipitous side of Cerrig Llan: it consists of a large slab lying on its side, and two upright stones. It is shaded by a weeping willow, and is surrounded by a hexagonal paling. Who is there acquainted with the legend, whether he believes that the dog lies beneath those stones or not, can visit them without exclaiming with a sigh, ‘Poor Gelert!’”

*The Editor.]*

THE spearmen heard the bugle sound,  
And cheerly smiled the morn;  
And many a brach and many a hound  
Obeyed Llewelyn's horn.

And still he blew a louder blast,  
And gave a lustier cheer:

## WALES

“Come, Gelert, come, wert never last  
Llewelyn’s horn to hear.

“O, where doth faithful Gelert roam,  
The flower of all his race,  
So true, so brave, — a lamb at home,  
A lion in the chase?”

’T was only at Llewelyn’s board  
The faithful Gelert fed;  
He watched, he served, he cheered his lord,  
And sentineled his bed.

In sooth he was a peerless hound,  
The gift of royal John;  
But now no Gelert could be found,  
And all the chase rode on.

And now, as o’er the rocks and dells  
The gallant chidings rise,  
All Snowdon’s craggy chaos yells  
The many-mingled cries!

That day Llewelyn little loved  
The chase of hart and hare;  
And scant and small the booty proved,  
For Gelert was not there.

Unpleased Llewelyn homeward hied,  
When, near the portal seat,  
His truant Gelert he espied,  
Bounding his lord to greet.

## THE GRAVE OF THE GREYHOUND

But, when he gained his castle door,  
Aghast the chieftain stood;  
The hound all o'er was smeared with gore,  
His lips, his fangs, ran blood.

Llewelyn gazed with fierce surprise:  
Unused such looks to meet,  
His favorite checked his joyful guise,  
And crouched and licked his feet.

Onward, in haste, Llewelyn passed,  
And on went Gelert too;  
And still, where'er his eyes he cast,  
Fresh blood-gouts shocked his view.

O'erturned his infant's bed he found,  
With blood-stained covert rent;  
And all around the walls and ground  
With recent blood besprent.

He called his child, — no voice replied, —  
He searched with terror wild;  
Blood, blood, he found on every side,  
But nowhere found his child.

“Hell-hound! my child's by thee devoured,”  
The frantic father cried;  
And to the hilt his vengeful sword  
He plunged in Gelert's side.

His suppliant looks, as prone he fell,  
No pity could impart;

## WALES

But still his Gelert's dying yell  
Passed heavy o'er his heart.

Aroused by Gelert's dying yell,  
Some slumberer awakened nigh:  
What words the parent's joy could tell  
To hear his infant's cry!

Concealed beneath a tumbled heap  
His hurried search had missed, -  
All glowing from his rosy sleep, -  
The cherub boy he kissed.

Nor scath had he, nor harm, nor dread,  
But, the same couch beneath,  
Lay a gaunt wolf, all torn and dead,  
Tremendous still in death.

Ah, what was then Llewelyn's pain!  
For now the truth was clear;  
His gallant hound the wolf had slain  
To save Llewelyn's heir:

Vain, vain was all Llewelyn's woe;  
"Best of thy kind, adieu!  
The frantic blow which laid thee low  
This heart shall ever rue."

And now a gallant tomb they raise,  
With costly sculpture decked;  
And marbles storied with his praise  
Poor Gelert's bones protect.

## THE GRAVE OF THE GREYHOUND

There never could the spearman pass,  
Or forester, unmoved;  
There oft the tear-besprinkled grass  
Llewelyn's sorrow proved.

And there he hung his horn and spear,  
And there, as evening fell,  
In fancy's ear he oft would hear  
Poor Gelert's dying yell.

And, till great Snowdon's rocks grow old,  
And cease the storm to brave,  
The consecrated spot shall hold  
The name of "Gelert's Grave."



## THE WEARING OF THE LEEK

AN OLD SONG TRANSLATED FROM THE WELSH

BY HENRY DAVIES

[CADWALLON, the hero of the following song, was King of Wales in the seventh century. For many years he resisted the advance of the Saxons, but was finally defeated and slain at Hevenfelth. In his memory the leek is worn on the first of March.

*The Editor.]*

WHEN King Cadwallon, famed of old,  
    'Mid tumults and alarms,  
With dauntless heart and courage bold,  
    Led on the British arms,  
He bade his men ne'er fret and grieve,  
    Nor doubt the coming fray,  
For well he knew it was the eve  
    Of great St. David's Day.

The Saxons in their wild distress,  
    Of this their hour of need,  
Disguised them in the British dress  
    The hero to mislead.  
But soon the Welshman's eager ken  
    Perceived the craven play,  
And gave a leek to all his men  
    Upon St. David's Day.

"Behold," the gallant monarch cried,  
    "A trophy bright and green,

## THE WEARING OF THE LEEK

And let it for our battle-guide  
In ev'ry helm be seen!  
That when we meet, as meet we must,  
The Saxons' proud array,  
We all may know in whom to trust  
On good St. David's Day."

Anon arose the battle shout,  
The crash of spear and bow,  
But aye the green leek pointed out  
The Welshman from his foe.  
The Saxons made a stout defense,  
But fled at length away;  
And conquest crowned the British prince,  
On great St. David's Day.

We'll cherish still that field of fame,  
Whate'er may be our lot,  
Which, long as Wallia hath a name,  
Shall never be forgot;  
And braver badge we ne'er will seek,  
Whatever others may;  
But still be proud to wear the leek,  
On good St. David's Day.



II  
STORIES OF THE WELSH  
REBELLIONS

## HISTORICAL NOTE

WALES was forced to acknowledge the sovereignty of William the Conqueror, but the freedom-loving people never fully yielded to Norman authority. When Edward I came to the throne of England, he determined to subjugate this troublesome little country. First, he bade Llewelyn ap Gruffydd come to him and pay him the homage of a vassal, but the wary prince refused to trust himself in the hands of Edward. An English invasion resulted. Llewelyn was overcome and forced not only to pay homage annually, but also to give up a goodly share of his lands. In 1284, Wales was put under English rule, and English laws were introduced. According to the legend, Edward planned to appease the pride of the Welsh by promising them a prince who had been born in Wales and had never spoken a word of English. This prince proved to be his baby son, who was born at Carnarvon in Wales. The Welsh, however, were not long satisfied with this "sop to Cerberus," and in 1402 a formidable revolt broke out under the leadership of Owen Glendower. This was the last national uprising. In 1536, Wales was incorporated with England, and all the rights and privileges of English subjects were accorded to the Welsh. The history of the country since that date is therefore blended with that of England.

# HOW THE WELSH KEPT THE CHRISTMAS OF 1115

BY SABINE BARING-GOULD

[IN the story from which the following selection is taken, Rogier has been sent as governor to the district between the Towy and Teify Rivers, and his brother as bishop. The sufferings of the Welsh from the two tyrants have reached the point where they can no longer be borne. The result is the uprising described.

*The Editor.]*

LIKE an explosion of fire-damp in a coal-mine, — sudden, far-reaching, deadly, — so was the convulsion in South Wales.

All was quiet to-day. On the morrow the whole land from the Bay of Cardigan to Morganwg was in flames. The rising had been prepared for with the utmost caution.

The last to anticipate it were the soldiery under Rogier, who were quartered in Caio. Notwithstanding imperative orders from the bishop at Llawhaden to return to him, they had remained where they were, and had continued to conduct themselves in the same lawless manner as before. They scoffed at the tameness with which their insolence was endured.

“They are Cynwyl conies — *des lapins!*”<sup>1</sup> they said. “Say ‘Whist!’ and nothing more is seen of them than their white tails as they scuttle to their burrows.”

<sup>1</sup> Rabbits.

## WALES

For centuries this had been an oasis of peace unlapped by the waves of war. The very faculty of resistance was taken out of these men, who could handle a plough or brandish a shepherd's crook, but were frightened at the chime of a bowstring and the flash of a pike.

Yet, secretly, arms were being brought into the valley, and were distributed from farm to farm and from cot to cot; and the men whose wives and daughters had been dishonored, whose savings had been carried off, who had themselves been beaten and insulted, whose relatives had been hung as felons, were gripping the swords and handling the lances — eager for the signal that should set them free to fall on their tormentors. And that signal came at last.

On Christmas Eve, from the top of Pen-y-ddinas shot up a tongue of flame. At once from every mountain-side answered flashes of fire. There was light before every house, however small. The great basin of Caio was like a reversed dome of heaven studded with stars.

"What is the meaning of this?" asked Rogier, issuing from the habitation he had appropriated to himself, and looking round in amazement.

"It is the *pylgain*," replied his man, Pont d'Arche, who knew something of Welsh.

"*Pylgain*! What is that?"

"The coming in of Christmas. They salute it with lights and carols and prayers and dances."

"Methinks I can hear sounds."

"Aye! they are coming to church."

"With torches — there are many."

"They all come."

Then a man came rushing up the hill; he was breath-



## CHRISTMAS OF 1115 IN WALES

less. On reaching where stood Rogier, he gasped: "They come — a thousand men and all armed."

"It is a river of fire."

Along the road could be seen a waving line of light, and from all sides, down the mountains ran cascades of light as well.

"There is not a man is not armed, and the women each bears a torch; they come with them — to see revenge done on us."

Then up came Cadell. He was trembling.

"Rogier," he said, "this is no *pylgain* for us — the whole country is stirring. The whole people is under arms, and swearing to have our blood."

"We will show these conies of Cynwyl that we are not afraid of them."

"They are no conies now, but lions. Can you stand against a thousand men? And — this is not all, I warrant. The whole of the Towy Valley, and that of the Teify, all Dyfed, maybe all Wales, is up to-night. Can you make your way through?"

Rogier uttered a curse.

"I relish not running before those conies."

"Then tarry — and they will hang you beside Cynwyl's bell, where you slung their kinsmen."

Rogier's face became mottled with mingled rage and fear.

Meanwhile his men had rallied around him, running from the several houses they were lodging in; a panic had seized them. Some, without awaiting orders, were saddling their horses.

"Hark!" shouted Rogier, "what is that?"

The river of light had become a river of song. The

## WALES

thunder of the voices of men and the clear tones of the women combined. And from every rill of light that descended from the heights to swell the advancing current, came the strain as well.

"They have come caroling," said Rogier disdainfully.

"Carol, call you this?" exclaimed Cadell. "It is the war-song of the sons of David. 'Let God arise, and let his enemies be scattered: let them also that hate Him, flee before Him. Like as the smoke vanisheth, so shalt Thou drive them away: and like as wax melteth at the fire, so let the ungodly perish —'"

"I will hear no more," said Rogier. "Mount! And Heaven grant us a day when we may revenge this."

"I will go, too," said Cadell. "Here I dare not remain."

Before the advancing river of men arrived at the crossing of the Annell, the entire band of the Normans had fled — not one was left.

Then up the ascent came the procession.

First went the staff of Cynwyl, not now in its gold and gem-encrusted shrine, but removed from it — a plain, rough, ashen stick, borne aloft by Morgan ap Seyssult, its hereditary guardian, and behind him came Meredith, with his two attendant bards, all with their harps, striking them as the multitude intoned the battle-song that for five hundred years had not sounded within the sanctuary of David. The women bore torches aloft, the men marched four abreast, all armed and with stern faces, and Pabo was there — and led them.

The archpriest, on reaching the church, mounted a block of stone, and dismissed the women. Let them return to their homes. A panic had fallen on those who

## CHRISTMAS OF 1115 IN WALES

had molested them, and they had fled. The work was but begun, and the men alone could carry it on to the end.

Rogier and his men did not draw rein till they had reached the Ystrad Towy, the broad valley through which flowed the drainage of the Brecknock Mountains. And there they saw that on all sides beacons were kindled; in every hamlet resounded the noise of arms. At Llandeilo they threw themselves into Dynevor, which had but a slender garrison. But there they would not stay; and, avoiding such places as were centers of gathering to the roused natives, they made for Carmarthen.

The castle there was deemed impregnable. It was held mainly by Welsh mercenaries in the service of Gerald of Windsor. Rogier mistrusted them; he would not remain there, for he heard that Griffith ap Rhys, at the head of large bodies of insurgents, was marching upon Carmarthen.

Next day the brother of the bishop was again on the move with his men by daybreak, and passed into the Cleddau Valley, making for Llawhaden.

In the mean time the men of Caio were on the march. None were left behind save the very old and the very young and the women.

They marched four abreast, with the staff of Cynwyl borne before them. Now the vanguard thundered the battle-song of David, "Cyfoded Duw, gwasgarer ei elynion: afföed ei gaseion o' i flaen ef."

They sang, then ceased, and the rear guard took up the chant: "When thou wentest forth before the people; when thou wentest through the wilderness, the earth

## WALES

shook and the heavens dropped." They sang on and ceased. Thereupon again the vanguard took up the strain, "Kings with their armies did flee, and were discomfited; and they of the household divided the spoil."

Thus chanting alternately, they marched through the passage among the mountains threaded by the Sarn Helen, and before the people went Pabo, wearing the bracelet of Maximus, the Roman Emperor, who took to wife that Helen who had made the road, and who was of the royal British race of Cunedda.

So they marched on — following the same course as that by which the Norman cavalcade had preceded them. And this was the *pylgain* in Dyfed in the year 1115.

The host came out between the portals of the hills at Llanwrda, and turned about and descended the Ystrad Towy, by the right bank of the river; and the daybreak of Christmas saw them opposite Llangadock. The gray light spread from behind the mighty ridge of Trichrug, and revealed the great fortified, lonely camp of Carn Gôch towering up, with its mighty walls of stone and the huge cairn that occupied the highest point within the inclosure.

They halted for a while, but for a while only, and then thrust along in the same order, and with the same resolution, intoning the same chant on their way to Llandeilo. There they tarried for the night, and every house was opened to them, and on every hearth there was a girdle-cake for them.

On the morrow the whole body was again on the march. Meanwhile, the garrison had fled from Dynevor

## CHRISTMAS OF 1115 IN WALES

to Careg Cennen, and the men of Ystrad Towy were camped against that fortress from which, on the news of the revolt, Gerald had escaped to Carmarthen.

By the time the men of Caio were within sight of this latter place, it was in flames.

And tidings came from Cardigan. The people there had with one acclaim declared that they would have Griffith as their prince, and were besieging Strongbow's castle of Blaen-Porth.

But the men of Caio did not tarry at Carmarthen to assist in the taking of the castle. Only there did Pabo surrender the bracelet of Maxen to the prince, with the message from his sister.

They pushed on their way.

Whither were they bound? Slowly, steadily, resolutely on the track of those men who had outraced them to their place of retreat and defense, the bishop's castle of Llawhaden.

Now when Bernard heard that all Caio was on the march, and came on unswervingly towards where he was behind strong walls and defended by mighty towers, then his heart failed him. He bade Rogier hold out, but for himself he mounted his mule, rode to Tenby Castle; nor rested there, but took ship and crossed the mouth of the Severn estuary to Bristol, whence he hastened to London, to lay the tidings before the king. And with him went Cadell, the chaplain.

It was evening when the host of Caio reached Llawhaden, and Rogier from the walls heard the chant of the war-psalm. "God shall wound the head of his enemies: and the hairy scalp of such a one as goeth on still in his wickedness . . . that thy foot may be dipped in the

## WALES

blood of thine enemies: and that the tongue of thy dogs may be red through the same."

He shuddered — a premonition of evil.

Pabo would have dissuaded his men from an immediate assault; but they were not weary, they were eager for the fray. They had cut down and were bearing fagots of wood, and carried huge bundles of fern. Some fagots went into the moat, others were heaped against the gates. The Episcopal barns were broken into, and all the straw brought forth.

Then flames were applied, and the draught carried the fire with a roar within.

By break of day Llawhaden Castle was in the hands of the men of Caio. They chased its garrison from every wall of defense; they were asked for, they gave no quarter. Those who had so long tyrannized over them lay in the galleries, slain with the sword, or thrust through with spears. Only Rogier, hung by the neck, dangled from a beam thrust through an upper window.

## “WHEN THE EIGHTEEN FELL”

[1282]

BY OWEN RHOSCOMYL

ON Thursday, December 10, 1282, Llewelyn [ap Gruffydd] received a message from the plotters, luring him to Aberedw, some miles down the Wye, below Builth, and on the other side of the stream. The snow was lying white on the world, and the rivers (deeper then than now) were running black and full, but the ford across the Wye at Llechryd was still passable.

Choosing eighteen of his household men, his body-guard, Llewelyn rode to Llechryd, and crossed. There he left his eighteen to hold the ford till he should come back, and then, attended only by one squire, young Grono Vychan, son of his minister, Ednyved Vychan, he pushed on down the valley to Aberedw.

At Aberedw he was to meet a young gentlewoman, who was to conduct him to a stealthy meeting with some chiefs of that district. If it be asked why he rode thus, almost alone and almost unarmored, the answer is that he was on a secret errand, in which he must not attract attention to himself until he had seen the local chiefs, and arranged all the details of a rising on their part. The more secret and sudden that rising was, the more likely it was to succeed. He was taking one of the risks that a fearless captain takes in such a war. It was like him to do it, for he was a steadfast soul.

At Aberedw, however, the gentlewoman was not there



## WALES

to meet him. In truth, the whole message was part of the plot of Giffard and the Mortimers, though he did not know it yet.

Yet, as he waited, he thought of how the snow would betray which way he went, either in going to the secret meeting with the chiefs, or in stealing away for safety from any sudden enemies. Therefore he went to the smith of the place, Red Madoc of the Wide Mouth, and bade him take the thin shoes off the horses, and put them on again backwards. Any one finding his tracks after that would think that he had been coming, not going.

Then, as dark fell, he found that the Mortimers, with their horsemen, were closing in round the place. Danger was upon him, indeed. Swiftly he stole away with his squire, and hid himself in a cave which may still be seen at Aberedw.

All that night he lay hidden, and then, as soon as the earliest gray of dawn crept over the snowy earth, he stole away with his squire again, and rode back to Llechryd. He could only go slowly, so he had to go stealthily, for his horse could not gallop, because of its shoes being backwards.

At Llechryd he found his faithful eighteen, but by this time the river was too high for crossing there. They must find some bridge. Now, the nearest bridge was the one at Builth, under the walls of the great castle.

Llewelyn believed that, by the trick of the horseshoes, he had thrown the Mortimers off his track. Also he remembered that Builth Castle was to be delivered to him according to promise. He took his eighteen men



## WHEN THE EIGHTEEN FELL

and rode back to the bridge at Builth, no great distance down the valley.

He reached the bridge barely in time. The Mortimers at Aberedw had terrified Red Madoc the smith into confessing the trick of the horseshoes. Like hounds they were following his trail, and now they caught sight of him, crossing the bridge with his little troop.

The bridge was of wood like the rest of the bridges of that district. Llewelyn turned and broke it down behind him, the black flood of the full Wye mocking the Mortimers as they drew rein on their panting steeds, before the broken timbers. Their hoped-for victim had escaped for the moment. In their fury they turned and dashed back down the valley to cross at Y Rhyd (now called Erwood) eight miles below.

Llewelyn expected the castle of Builth to be given up to him. But the garrison refused, doubtless making some excuse of waiting till the country had risen. He could not waste time; the bridge on the road to Cevn y Bedd was gone; he took his eighteen and led the way along the southern bank of the Yrvon to another bridge, just above the little church of Llanynys. There he crossed, and posted the eighteen to hold that bridge, doubtless feeling himself safely returned from great peril.

In thankfulness for that escape, too, he caused a White Friar to hold a service for him, perhaps at the end of the bridge, perhaps in the little church of Llanynys, beside the dark Yrvon. It does not matter much where the service was held, the whole of that ground was to be made sacred that day.

This done, Llewelyn went up to the grange of Llan-

## WALES

vair, a farmstead belonging to the parish church of Builth, doubtless to get food and an hour's sleep, after the cold watching of that winter's night in the cave. After a frosty night of scout-work, one's eyes get very heavy when one gets warm next day, and a great drowsiness stills the blood, even of the stubbornest man.

Meanwhile the Mortimers had crossed the Wye at Erwood, and with Giffard were riding fast for the bridge of Orewynm where the eighteen held their post. In headlong haste their leading squadron charged the bridge — but the eighteen had not been chosen in vain. They kept the bridge.

While the clamor was at its height, Grono Vychan roused Llewelyn and told him of it.

"Are not my men at the bridge?" demanded the prince.

"They are," answered Grono.

"Then I care not if all England were on the other side," returned Llewelyn proudly. He knew what manner of men he had left to hold that bridge.

But down in front of the bridge, where the enemy were shouting in their baffled rage, as they tried in vain to hew a way across, one of Giffard's captains spoke out. It was Helias ap Philip Walwyn, from lower down the Wye.

"We shall do no good *here!*" he shouted. "But I know a ford, a little distance off, that they do not know of. Let some of the bravest and strongest come with me, and we can cross and take the bridge in the rear."

At once the bravest crowded after Helias to the ford, where the water seems as dark and deep in winter as the rest of the long black pool on either hand. They crossed.

## WHEN THE EIGHTEEN FELL

The eighteen were charged in rear as well as in front. But they kept faith. Where Llewelyn had posted them, there they died. As men should end, proudly fighting, so they ended.

"Till the eighteen fell," says the bard, "it was well with Llewelyn ap Gruffydd."

Then over their bodies poured all the mass of Mortimer's men, with Giffard's, to seek Llewelyn's little force on the high ground beyond. Fast the horsemen spurred, and as they hastened they came suddenly upon an unarmored man with one companion, hurrying on foot towards where the bridge was roaring under the trampling host. One of the horsemen, Stephen or Adam of Frankton, in Llewelyn's old lordship of Ellesmere, dashed forward with his men, and one ran his lance through the younger of the two. The other one was running up through the little dingle, to get back to the army above in time to lead it in the coming battle. On the bank above the little spring at the head of the dingle, grew a great spread of broom (*banadl*). In that bush of broom Frankton overtook the man and ran his spear out through him in a mortal wound.

That man was Llewelyn. The accident had happened. Go to the spot, and the people will tell you that no broom has ever grown again in Llangantem Parish from that dark day to this.

So died Llewelyn ap Gruffydd; a gallanter soul never passed to God.

## THE REBELLION OF OWEN GLYNDWR

[1402-1415]

BY OWEN RHOSCOMYL

MANY a victory Glyndwr won in the field. He defeated and ruined Grey. But he was a statesman in war, too. He made an alliance with the King of France. He sent to make alliances with the Scots and the Irish. Once, indeed, he formed such an alliance with part of the English against the usurping Henry, that it seemed for a moment as if he must win all that he dreamed of.

For one of his generals, Rhys Gethin, had defeated Edmund Mortimer in a great battle at Pilleth, in what is now Radnorshire, capturing Mortimer himself. Now Mortimer's nephew, the boy Earl of March, had a better right to the crown of England than Henry had, so far as law went. Henry therefore kept the boy a prisoner at Windsor, and was glad enough to hear that Mortimer was a prisoner to the terrible Glyndwr. While he remained a prisoner, Mortimer could not try to get the crown of England for his nephew.

But Mortimer had a brother-in-law in the famous Hotspur, son of Earl Percy of Northumberland, and Hotspur was not pleased that his wife's brother should remain a prisoner. He demanded that King Henry should arrange for the ransom of Mortimer, as he had arranged for the ransom of Grey, when Glyndwr had captured him. Henry, however, refused. Now Henry

## THE REBELLION OF OWEN GLYNDWR

owed his throne to the help which the Percies had given him.

Glyndwr had from the first kept in touch with Percy and spared the Mortimer possessions — plain proof that from the first he had been planning to use the right of the young Earl of March against Henry. Henry's refusal to ransom Mortimer was the one thing he wanted. He entered into negotiations in earnest, with Hotspur and Mortimer, to drive out Henry. He succeeded with both. Mortimer not only agreed, but married Glyndwr's daughter Joan.

The plan was that the Percies should come down from the north and join with Mortimer and Glyndwr for a march on London. Before they started, however, Glyndwr would have to take the last moment for a fierce campaign against the lords marchers and the Flemings of the south, so as to leave Cymru secure while he should be gone. Had the Percies stuck to the plan it must have succeeded, in all human probability.

But it was Hotspur who led the men of the north to join Owen, and Hotspur was ever a hothead. When he reached Cheshire — which Owen harried, from first to last, because it was an enemy to Henry — and found himself joined by all that county, as well as by the Cymry of the nearest Cantreys, he thought he was strong enough to pull down Henry single-handed. He turned east, instead of keeping to the plan and marching on to join Owen. It was the old mistake of Luke de Tany over again, overconfidence, and it had a like result.

For Henry was too strong and too ready. Too late Hotspur turned back and took up the original plan

## WALES

again. Henry was too swift for him. Hotspur reached Shrewsbury only to find that Henry, with an army twice as large as his own, was there in the town before him.

All that bravery could do to retrieve a fatal mistake was done next day in battle. But it was done in vain, and Glyndwr, finishing his work in the south, and turning at last to come and meet his ally, was met by the news that Hotspur had been slain, and his army destroyed, in one of the bloodiest battles of British history — the battle of Shrewsbury, 1403.

Yet, though so much was lost in that mistake of Hotspur's, Glyndwr never lost heart. He had the true hero soul that, like a star, burns only the brighter the deeper the darkness spreads around it. He still fought on — still made his power felt — still ruled Cymru.

He terrified Parliament as no Cymric prince had ever terrified it before. In 1404, Parliament granted leave to the people of Shropshire to pay him tribute to save themselves. In 1408, Shrewsbury refused to open its gates to the king's army for fear of him. The Flemings of Dyved paid their price to him after he had defeated them and brought fire and sword to their doors. Countless castles he destroyed. To the bitter end he refused to yield.

It is not known where he died, though it is inferred that he died in 1416. In Gwent they say that he did not die. They say that he and his men sit sleeping in Ogovy Ddinas, buckled in their armor, their spears leaning against their shoulders, their swords across their knees. There they are waiting till the day comes for them to sally forth and fight for the land again.

# THE MARCH OF THE MEN OF HARLECH

[1468]

NATIONAL CAMBRIAN WAR-SONG; TRANSLATED  
BY JOHN OXENFORD

[WHILE Edward IV was reigning in England, he sent the Earl of Pembroke against the mighty castle of Harlech and demanded that it be given up to him. Its defender, David Einion, replied, — “I held a tower in France till all the old women in Wales heard of it, and now all the old women in France shall hear how I defend this castle.” He made a stout resistance, but was finally obliged to yield to famine. The national war-song, of which the following is a translation, is said to have been composed during this siege.

*The Editor.]*

MEN of Harlech, march to glory,  
Victory is hov’ring o’er ye,  
Bright-eyed freedom stands before ye,  
Hear ye not her call?  
At your sloth she seems to wonder,  
Rend the sluggish bonds asunder,  
Let the war-cry’s deafening thunder  
Ev’ry foe appall.

Echoes loudly waking,  
Hill and valley shaking;  
Till the sound spreads wide around,  
The Saxon’s courage breaking;



## WALES

Your foes on ev'ry side assailing,  
Forward press with heart unfailing,  
Till invaders learn with quailing,  
Cambria ne'er can yield.

Thou who noble Cambria wrongest,  
Know that freedom's cause is strongest,  
Freedom's courage lasts the longest.

Ending but with death!  
Freedom countless hosts can scatter,  
Freedom stoutest mail can shatter,  
Freedom thickest walls can batter,  
Fate is in her breath.

See they now are flying!  
Dead are heap'd with dying!  
Over might hath triumphed right,  
Our land to foes denying;  
Upon their soil we never sought them,  
Love of conquest hither brought them,  
But this lesson we have taught them,  
"Cambria ne'er can yield."



# HOW A WELSHMAN BECAME KING OF ENGLAND

[1485]

BY OWEN RHOSCOMYL

[TOWARD the end of the fifteenth century Richard III succeeded in usurping the throne of England. His tyranny and the crimes by which he had accomplished his object so aroused the English people that they invited Henry Tudor, a descendant of John of Gaunt and also of Owen Tudor, a Welsh gentleman who had married the widow of Henry V, to become their sovereign. He landed at Milford in 1485, and was soon engaged in a fierce battle with Richard at Bosworth. Henry was successful and was crowned on the battlefield as Henry VII.

*The Editor.]*

CLOUDILY dawned the morning of that Monday, August 22, 1485, when Henry Tudor drew out the host of his gallant countrymen for the battle that was to close a thousand years of struggle. It was to close more; it was to close the mediæval period of British history, and to open the modern day, the day of our own empire.

Richard III, king that morning, drew out his host from its tents at Sutton, and saw, two miles to his left front, the host of Henry, king that night. To his right front, on Hanging Hill at Nether Coton, he saw the host of Sir William Stanley, the men of Northeast Cymru. On his immediate right lay Lord Stanley's men.

## WALES

He sent to order Lord Stanley to join him, but Lord Stanley would not come.

Then Richard measured what he had to do. His army was nearly equal in numbers to all the other three combined. It was far better equipped and armored. Moreover, it was composed for the most part of veteran troops; there were no sweepings of jails and hospitals with him, like the men that Henry had brought from France.

The ground, too, was all in Richard's favor. In front of him ran out the long tongue of Anbian Hill. Round it, on the north and west, lay a long, winding marsh, between him and the other armies. That marsh could only be crossed at Sandeford, where the ancient trackway, which he had followed from Stapleton, ran on down from Anbian Hill to Shenton and Henry's camp. Therefore he would take up a position on the end of the ridge of Anbian Hill, overlooking Sandeford crossing, and there wait Henry's coming. Richard was one of the best generals of his day.

But if he were to march straight off to do it, then Lord Stanley, yonder on his right, might swing round the head of the marsh, and attack him from behind, just when the others attacked him in front. That would mean certain defeat. Therefore he commanded the Earl of Northumberland, whose men were as many as Lord Stanley's, to stand fast where he was, and keep Lord Stanley off. Then, with his eight thousand and more of veterans, he set forward along the ridge of Anbian Hill.

Henry Tudor, as he drew out his men from the camp at Whitemoor, could look across the marsh and see the

## A WELSHMAN KING OF ENGLAND

plain of Redmoor beyond it, swelling up into the crest of Anbian Hill. On that crest he could see the front of Richard's army, one wide wave of glittering steel, ranging into position. He saw what Richard intended. He knew that he himself must cross the marsh and attack Anbian Hill.

Every disadvantage was with Henry. His own men, including the worthless foreigners, were not nearly so many as Richard's. He had sent for Lord Stanley, and Lord Stanley had refused to come to him. But he still trusted Sir William Stanley, for Sir William's men were Cymry.

He knew that the marsh could only be crossed at Sandeford. The ancient trackway from his camp led to that crossing, and onward to Richard's position. The track would lead him the right way then; the marsh would protect his right flank while he marched to Sandeford, and there, when he turned the head of the column to the right to cross the little stream, the troops of Sir William Stanley would be but a mile or so away, behind him on Hanging Hill. Then Sir William could follow him on over the crossing and join him in the attack. It was the only plan, now, — and he marched to carry it out.

When he came to Sandeford, he led the way across the marsh to array his men on Redmoor beyond. Still no Stanley came. But it was ten o'clock, and the battle must be fought, Stanley or no Stanley. Above him rose the steel-crowned crest of Anbian, and the harvest sun shone dazingly into the eyes of his archers as they faced the slope. Behind them was the wide marsh to cut them off from retreat or flight if they were beaten.

## WALES

They were few and the foes were many. They were on the low ground, and the foe with his cannon was on the high ground. To attack now would be boldness, indeed. But they were bold hearts; they attacked.

When the order was given to prepare — “Lord!” says the old chronicler, “how hastily the soldiers buckled on their helms; how quickly the archers bent their bows and flushed the feathers of their arrows; how readily the billmen shook their bills and proved their staves, ready to approach and join, when the terrible trumpet should sound the blast to victory or death.”

The chronicler used the right word there. It was a case of victory or death to the leaders. For Henry was striking for the crown that meant life and safety to him. The exiles were striking for the home that was the only place in the world for them. The Cymry were striking, in the fire of a pride that nothing could kill. Well might Richard feel haunted.

He looked at all the Cymric banners ranged against him, and he called for a bowl of Burgundy, and turned to his squire, Rhys Vychan.

“Here, Vychan,” he cried, “I drink to thee; the truest Welshman that ever I found in Wales.” And with the words he drank the wine, threw the bowl behind him, and gave the word for the onset.

His van was stretched from the marsh on the right to the marsh on the left — “a very terrible company to them that should see them afar off,” says the chronicler. In the center were the archers, and on either hand of them two wings of men-at-arms, covered with steel from top to toe. Behind them on the hill were Richard and his main body with the cannon.

## A WELSHMAN KING OF ENGLAND

Henry's van was thin, because his men were fewer. But they were enough. The trumpet blew, the soldiers shouted. the king's archers let fly their arrows. But Henry's bowmen stood not still, they paid them back again. Then, the terrible shot once over, the armies came to handstrokes, and the matter was dealt with blades.

Henry's tactics were all boldness. He still felt that Sir William Stanley's men must come in, for they were Cymry, too, unlike Lord Stanley's. Therefore he pressed the fight on Richard's left till his van had outflanked it. By this movement he could face the slope now with the sun at his back, while it shone in the faces of Richard's men, dazzling their eyes in turn. By this movement, too, he had got Richard's army between him and Sir William Stanley, so that it would be taken in front and rear when Stanley charged — a thing that would mean complete disaster for Richard.

Richard saw that, and with his cavalry swung round to come on Henry's right flank and rear. But there was another green spread of marsh (where now wave Anbian Woods) and it was too soft. His good white horse stuck fast. Shouting for another horse he mounted again, and led the thundering charge straight at Henry's flank. But Earl Jasper was watching. He had the main body of Henry's men under him, the men of old Deheubarth, and while the gallant Earl of Oxford continued the fight in the van, against the Duke of Norfolk, Jasper faced his men to meet the desperate Richard, and beat back his furious onset. Thus, "in array triangle," the fight raged on.

Keenly Henry watched the fight. Now or never was

## WALES

the moment. Where was Will Stanley with his Cymry? In his anxiety he rode back, attended only by his bodyguard and standard-bearer, towards Sandeford, to where he could see if Will Stanley were coming. And as he drew rein to look, one of Richard's men saw him and sped away with the news to his master.

Richard was pausing for a drink from the spring, which is to this day called "King Richard's Well," when the word was brought to him. He saw at once that he had still one last desperate chance. If he could reach and kill Henry, then the victory would be his, seeing that there would be no one left for Henry's men to fight for. He seized the chance. "Let all true knights follow me," he shouted, and spurred away over the hill to where he should find Henry.

Fast poured the flower of Richard's knights after him while Henry's bodyguard saw the onset coming and closed its ranks to defend him. Richard marked the great standard that Sir William Brandon bore, and he charged upon it like a demon. He unhorsed huge Sir John Cheyney who tried to bar his way. He slew the standard-bearer, and laid a hand upon the standard itself. But giant Rhys ap Meredydd, of Nant Conwy, seized it from him and drove him back a breadth, while Henry himself met him with a fury that astonished friend and foe.

Richard raged like a madman, but it was all too late now. Sir William's men were here at last, Richard ap Howel, of Mostyn, with the rest and best. King Richard was borne back, fighting like ten men, yet still borne back. His horse fell; his lords and knights were dead or dying fast around him. Still he raged on. Then came



## A WELSHMAN KING OF ENGLAND

Dark Rhys ap Thomas, seeking the king who had once threatened him, and tradition still tells how the blade of Dark Rhys ended the life of the last Norman king, Richard III.

The fall of Richard was the end of the battle, too, for all his men fled at that. Northumberland laid down his arms — there was no more to fight for. Lord Stanley whose troops had never struck a blow, hurried over to Henry, whose men were following the flight of the vanquished.

But all was not done yet. The long, fierce dream of the stubborn Cymry was to be fulfilled to the very letter. They had come into England to win the crown of Britain back for one of the old blood of its founder. They did it in very deed. For when the chase was ended, the crown of dead King Richard was found in a hawthorn bush, and Lord Stanley lifted it and placed it on the head of Henry.

Thus was the long dream fulfilled. The crown of Britain was come back to the descendant of its founder at last. And the wild shout of triumph with which the victors hailed their countryman king is remembered to this day in the name of the field in which they stood and watched him crowned. Its name means "The Field of the Shout."

You may still see the stone whereon that crowning took place. It is in Stoke Golding, and the spot is still called "Crown Hill," in memory of the only time that ever a King of England was crowned on the field of battle.

Lost in battle, that crown had come back in battle. Did the bones of all the slain generations of the Cymry

## WALES

who had struggled for this day stir in their red graves at that shout? Surely their spirits knew when the work was done at last. Surely a sound like the moving of a mighty wind must have swept over Cymru, for the ghosts of all the heroes, slain in the battles of the thousand years of struggle, could leave their graves at last and go to God — the long work done, the victory won; the “Nunc Dimittis” chanted o’er the mountains as they passed.



III  
SCENES OF WELSH LIFE

## HISTORICAL NOTE

THE devotion of the Welsh to their country and its customs and to literature and music brought about the establishment of the Eisteddfod, a musical festival which is attended by many thousand persons. The word "Eisteddfod" means a session or sitting, and originated, perhaps long before the Christian era, in the Gorsedd, which was in great degree a political assembly. Although the Gorsedd lost its political power, it retained a strong hold upon the people of Wales as a means of encouraging the love of music and poetry and of preserving the national customs. "Chairs" were established, or conventions where musicians were trained. Four of these now exist in Wales. It was probably at some time during the sixth century that Eisteddfodau began to be held, and for many years they took place triennially. Every means was employed to improve the music and encourage the musicians. Rewards were given, a silver harp to the chief musician, and a silver chair to the chief bard. During the last fifty years many local Eisteddfodau have been held, and a provincial one almost every year. The latter must be proclaimed by a bard who is a graduate of one of the "Chairs" a year and a day before the time set. When the day arrives, there is first of all a Gorsedd meeting, announced by the blast of trumpets. Here, deserving candidates receive the degree of bard. At the close of the celebration, comes "Chair Day," or the time of rewarding the prize-winners.

## THE EISTEDDFOD

BY JEANNETTE MARKS

IT was the first morning of my first Welsh National Eisteddfod, and I sat by the window working, and glancing away from my work to a hillside up which led narrow steps to the summits above, among which were hidden away some half a dozen tiny villages. Colwyn Bay, where the Eisteddfod was to be held, was — as the crow does *not* fly — about forty miles distant. It was a glorious morning of sunshine in which gleamed the river, glossy beeches and pines, and little whitewashed Welsh cottages. As I looked, there began to emerge from the steps a stream of people; down and down they flowed, bright in their pretty dresses or shining in their black Sunday-best broadcloth. All those mountain hamlets up above, reached by roads passable only for mountain ponies, were sending their men, women, and children to the Welsh festival of song and poetry.

Talking and excited about who would be chaired as bard, who would be crowned, what female choir would win in the choral contests, what male choir, and discussing a thousand little competitions, even to a set of insertions for sheets, shams, and towels, we were borne on the train from Bettws-y-Coed swiftly through the Vale of Conway, beside the river, past Cacrhûn, the once ancient city of Canovium, past Conway Castle, with its harp-shaped walls still encircling the town, and so to Colwyn Bay.

## WALES

Then all these enthusiastic people who had climbed down a hill to take the train, climbed up another to see the first Gorsedd ceremony. As we passed, from one of the cottages was heard the voice of a woman screaming in great excitement, "Mrs. Jones. Mrs. Jones, come to the front door quickly. There's some people going by; they're dressed in blue and white. Dear me, Mrs. Jones, they're MEN!" The procession, fully aware that Mrs. Jones, and all the little Joneses and all the big and middling Joneses, too, had come, went on gravely up, up, up the hill to "Y Fanerig" (the Flagstaff), where stood the "Maen Llog of the Gorsedd" and its encircling stones. The paths were steep, and even bards and druids are subject to *embonpoint*. Old Eos Dar, who can sing penillion with never a pause for breath, lost his "wind," and the "Bearer of the Great Sword of the Gorsedd" was no more to be found. A boy scout, perhaps thinking of Scott's minstrel, who said, —

"The way was long, the wind was cold,  
The minstrel was infirm and old,"

was dispatched downhill after him, and found him and the sword, arm in arm, lagging comfortably behind. Druidical deportment is astonishingly human at times. But the hill top achieved and wind recovered, the bards soberly made their way into the druidical circle of stones that surround the great Gorsedd stone. Nowhere, as the archdruid remarked, had the Bardic Brotherhood been brought nearer heaven.

From the summit, north, east, south, west, the soft valleys, the towering mountains, the secluded villages, the shining rivers, and the great sea were visible. And there on this hilltop the bards, druids, and ovates dressed

## THE EISTEDDFOD

in blue and white and green robes, celebrated rites only less old than the Eye of Light itself. After the sounding of the trumpet ("Corn Gwlad"), the Gorsedd prayer was recited in Welsh, —

"Grant, O God, Thy Protection;  
And in Protection, Strength;  
And in Strength, Understanding;  
And in Understanding, Knowledge;  
And in Knowledge, the Knowledge of Justice;  
And in the Knowledge of Justice, the Love of it;  
And in that Love, the Love of all Existence;  
And in the Love of all Existence, the Love of God.  
God and all Goodness."

Then the archdruid, Dyfed, standing upon the Gorsedd stone and facing the east, unsheathed the great sword, crying out thrice, "Aoes Heddwch?" (Is it peace?) and the bards and ovates replied "Heddwch!" (Peace.)

There are some scholars who question the "identity of the Bardic Gorsedd with the druidic system." The Welsh Gorsedd, this side of the controversial point, is forty centuries old, and in all conscience that is old enough. Diodorus, the Sicilian, wrote, "There are, among the Gauls, makers of verses, whom they name bards. There are also certain philosophers and theologians, exceedingly esteemed, whom they call Druids." Strabo, the geographer, says, "Amongst the whole of the Gauls three classes are especially held in distinguished honor — the bards, the prophets, and the druids. The bards are singers and poets, the prophets are sacrificers and philosophers, but the druids, besides physiology, practiced ethical philosophy." As far back as we can look in the life of the Cymry, poetry, song, and theology have been inextricably woven together. The

## WALES

Gorsedd was then, formally, for the Welsh people what it still is informally: a popular university, a law court, a parliament. The modern Gorsedd, with its twelve stones, is supposed to represent the signs of the zodiac through which the sun passes, with a central stone, called the "Maen Llog," in the position of the sacrificial fire in the druidical temple. A close reverence for nature, a certain pantheism in the cult of the druids, shows itself in various ways, — in the belief that the oak tree was the home of the god of lightning, that mistletoe, which usually grows upon the oak, was a mark of divine favor. The most prominent symbol of the Gorsedd is the "Broad Arrow" or "mystic mark," supposed to represent the rays of light which the druids worshiped. Even the colors of the robes of the druids, ovates, and bards are full of characteristic worship of nature; the druids in white symbolical of the purity of truth and light, the ovates in green like the life and growth of nature, the bards in blue, the hue of the sky and in token of the loftiness of their calling.

Up there on the hill top, with its vast panorama of hill and valley, sea and sky, time became as nothing. The Gorsedd became again the democratic Witenagemot of the Welsh, and there still were represented the mountain shepherd, the pale collier, the lusty townsman, the gentle knight, the expounder of law, the teacher and the priest. But if upon the hill time was as nothing, down below in the gigantic Eisteddfod pavilion some ten thousand people were waiting. "Gallant little Wales," which has certainly awakened from its long sleep, was past the period of rubbing its eyes. It was shouting and calling for the Eisteddfod ceremonies to begin, perhaps

## THE EISTEDDFOD

as the folk in Caerwys had called impatiently in the days of the twelfth century, or again in that old town in the days of Elizabeth, the last that memorable Eisteddfod when a commission was appointed by Elizabeth herself to check the bad habits of a crowd of lazy illiterate bards who went about the country begging.

That great Eisteddfodic pavilion, where the people were waiting good-naturedly but impatiently, is primarily a place of music. Even as in the world, so in Wales, music comes first in the hearts of mankind and poetry second. And it may be, since music is more social and democratic, that the popular preference is as it should be. The human element in all that happens at a Welsh Eisteddfod is robust and teeming with enthusiasm. It is true that prize-taking socks, shawls, pillow shams, and such homely articles no longer hang in festoons above the platform as they did some twenty or thirty years ago. Now the walls are gayly decorated with banners bearing thousands of spiteful-looking dragons, and pennants inscribed with the names of scores of famous Welshmen, and with such mottoes as "Y Gwir yn Erbyn y Byd" (the truth against the world), "Gwlad y Mabinogion" (the land of the Mabinogion), "Calon wrth Galon" (heart with heart), and others.

After the procession of dignitaries was seated upon the platform, a worried-looking bard began to call out prizes for every conceivably useful thing under the sun, among them a clock tower which he seemed to be in need of himself as a rostrum for his throat-splitting yells. During these announcements the choirs were filing in, a pretty child with a 'cello much larger than herself was taking off her hat and coat, a stiff, self-conscious young



## WALES

man was bustling about with an air of importance, and in the front, just below the platform, sat newspaper reporters, from all over the United Kingdom, busy at their work. Among them were the gray, the young, the weary, the dusty, the smart, the shabby, and one who wore a wig, but made up in roses in his buttonhole for what he lacked in hair. There were occasional cheers as some local prima donna entered the choir seats, and many jokes from the anxious-looking master of ceremonies.

At last the first choir was assembled, and a little lady, somebody's good mother, mounted upon a chair. The choir began to sing, —

“Come, sisters, come,  
Where light and shadows mingle,  
And elves and fairies dance and sing,  
Upon the meadow land.”

The little lady never worked harder, her baton, her hands, her head, her lips, her eyes were all busy. Was it the Celtic spirit that made those elves and fairies *seem* to dance upon the meadows or did they really dance? The next choir was composed of younger women, among them many a beauty-loving face, alas! too pale and telling of the hard life of the hills or of the harder life of some mining-town. Of the third choir the leader was a merry little man, scarcely as high as the leader's stand, with a wild look in his twinkling eyes as he waved a baton and the choir began, —

“Far beneath the stars we lie,  
Far from gaze of mortal eye,  
Far beneath the ocean swell,  
Here we merry mermaids dwell.”



## THE EISTEDDFOD

He believed not only in his choir, but also in those mermaidens, and so did the little lad, not much bigger than Hofmann when he first began to tour, who played the accompaniment. When that choir went out, a fourth came in, still inviting the sisters to come. At last the sisters not only came, but also decided to stay, and another choir lured the sailor successfully to his doom, and all was over, for even in choir tragedies there must be an end to the song. The gallant little mother had won the first prize. It takes the mothers to win prizes, and the audience thought so, too. The crowd yelled and stamped with delight.

When one asks one's self whether Surrey, for example, or such a State as Massachusetts in America, could be brought to send its people from every farm, every valley, every hill-top, to a festival thousands strong, day after day for a whole week, one realizes how tremendous a thing this Welsh national enthusiasm is. Educationally nothing could be a greater movement for Wales. To the Welsh the beauty of worship, of music, of poetry are inseparable. Only so can this passion for beauty, which brings multitudes together to take part in all that is noblest and best in Welsh life, be explained. Only so can you understand why some young collier, pale and work-worn, sings with his whole soul and shakes with the song within him even as a bird shakes with the notes that are too great for its body. These Welsh sing as if music were all the world to them, and in it they forget the world. Behind the passion of their song lies a devout religious conviction, and their song sweeps up in praise and petition to an Almighty God, who listens to Shelley's "Ode to the West Wind" as well as to some great hymn.

## WALES

To hear ten thousand Welsh people singing "Land of my Fathers," each taking naturally one of the four parts and all singing in perfect harmony, is to have one of the great experiences of life. To hear Shelley's "Ode" set to Elgar's music and sung by several choirs, to hear that wild, far-traveling wind sweep along in a tumult of harmonies, to know that every heart there was as a lyre even to the least breath of that wind, to hear that last cry, —

"Oh, wind,

If winter comes, can spring be far behind?" —

to listen again to those choirs late in the evening on the station platform with the sea dim and vast and muting the song to its own greater music, is to have felt in the Welsh spirit what no tongue can describe, — it is to understand the meaning of the word "hwyl," that untranslatable word of a passionate emotionalism.

All that went on behind the scenes the audience could not know. They saw only those considered by the adjudicators fit to survive. They did not see the six blind people, for even the blind have their place in this great festival, who entered the little schoolroom off Abergele Road to take the preliminary tests, the girl who played "The Harmonious Blacksmith," and, shaking from excitement and holding on to her guide, was led away unsuccessful. They did not see the lad who played "Men of Harlech" crudely, his anxious, aging, work-worn mother sitting beside him, holding his stick and nodding her head in approval. All they heard were a selected two who were considered by the judges fit to play, a man both blind and deaf who performed a *scherzo* of Brahms and a Carnarvon sea-captain, now

## THE EISTEDDFOD

blind, who played on the violin. The quiet of the one-time sea-captain's face laid against the violin, the peace and pleasure in the lines about the sightless eyes, would have repaid the whole audience — even if the violinist had not been an exceptionally good player — for listening.

One of the inspiring and amusing events of the week was the discovery of a marvelous contralto. A young girl, shabbily dressed and ill at ease, came out to sing. Everything was being pressed forward toward the crowning of the bard, one of the great events of the Eisteddfod. People were impatient, and somewhat noisy. But as the girl began to sing they quieted down, then they listened with wonder, and in a minute you could have heard a pin drop in that throng of ten thousand. Before she had finished singing, "Jesu, Lover of my Soul," the audience knew that it had listened to one of the great singers of the world. When she had finished her song and unclasped her hands, she became again nothing more than an awkward, silly, giggling child whom Llew Tegid had to hold by the arm.

The audience shouted, "What's her name?"

"Maggie Jones," he replied; "that begins well."

"Where does she come from?" demanded the crowd.

"Police station," answered Llew Tegid lugubriously.

The audience roared with laughter and demanded the name of the town. Maggie Jones is the daughter of Police Superintendent Jones of Pwllheli. Perhaps in the years to come the world will hear her name again.

There are children at these Eisteddfodau whose little feet can scarce reach the pedals of a harp. Even the robins singing up in the high pavilion roof who had

## WALES

joined in the music from time to time, trilling joyously to Handel's "Oh, had I Jubal's Lyre," twittered with surprise that anything so small could play anything so large. But no one of the thousands there, even the children, grew tired for an instant, unless it was these same robins, who were weary at times because of the cheerless character of some of the sacred music sung in competition and themselves started up singing blithely and gladly as God meant that birds and men should sing. The robins twittered madly when some sturdy little Welshman stepped into the penillion singing, accompanied by the harp, no more to be daunted than a child stepping into rope skipping. When the grown-ups had finished, two little children came forward and sang their songs, North Wales style.

The afternoon was growing later and later; it was high time for the name of the bard of the crown poem to be announced. At last, with due pomp, the name of the young bard was announced. Every one looked to see where he might be sitting. He was found sitting modestly in the rear of the big pavilion, and there were shouts of "Dyma fo!" (here he is!). Two bards came down and escorted him to the platform, where all the druids, ovates, and bards were awaiting him. The band, the trumpeter, the harp, and the sword now all performed their service, the sun slanting down through the western windows on to this bardic pageant. The sparrows flew in and out of the sunlight, unafraid of the dragons that waved about them and the bands that played beneath them, and the great sword held sheathed over the young bard's head. The sword was bared three times and sheathed again as all shouted "Heddwch!"

## THE EISTEDDFOD

The bard was crowned and the whole audience rose to the Welsh national song.

What is the meaning of this unique festival of poetry and song? Mr. Lloyd George, who had escaped from the din of battle outside, and the jeers of the Goths and Vandals who could n't or would n't understand the Fourth Form, said, amidst laughter, that there was no budget to raise taxes for the upkeep of the Eisteddfod. Then he continued, "The bards are not compelled by law to fill up forms. There is no conscription to raise an army from the ranks of the people to defend the Eisteddfod's empire in the heart of the nation. And yet, after the lapse of generations, the Eisteddfod is more alive than ever. Well, of what good is she? I will tell you one thing — she demonstrates what the democracy of Wales can do at its best. The democracy has kept her alive; the democracy has filled her chairs; the sons of the democracy compete for her honors. I shall never forget my visit to the Llangollen Eisteddfod two years ago. When crossing the hills between Flintshire and the valley of the Dee, I saw their slopes darkened with the streams of shepherds and cottagers and their families going toward the town. What did they go to see? To see a man of their nation honored for a piece of poetry. . . . And the people were as quick to appreciate the points as any expert of the Gorsedd, and wonderfully responsive to every lofty thought." Yes, unlike any other gathering in the world, the Eisteddfod is all that. Long ago in the latter half of the eighteenth century Iolo Morganwg stated the objects of Welsh bardism, — "to reform the morals and customs; to secure peace; to praise (or encourage) all that is good or excel-

## WALES

lent." This national festival is the popular university of the people, it is the center of Welsh nationalism, the feast of Welsh brotherhood. Only listened to in this spirit can one understand what it means when an Eisteddfodic throng, after the crowning of the bard, rises to sing "Hen Wlad fy Nhadau," —

"Old land that our fathers before us held dear."

END OF VOLUME X



**The Riverside Press**  
**CAMBRIDGE . MASSACHUSETTS**  
**U . S . A**















T2-BNI-753